

















*Richard Stewart*

---

**A VISIT  
TO  
THE SOUTH SEAS.**

BY

C. S. STEWART, M.A.



**THE KPO.**

A Chief Warrior of the Telle in battle dress with an accurate delineation of the tattooing on his person.

*Page 108*

London:  
**WHEAT, SON & JACKSON, NEWCASTLE STREET,**  
1837



**A VISIT**  
**TO**  
**THE SOUTH SEAS,**  
**IN THE U. S. SHIP VINCENNES,**  
**DURING THE YEARS 1829 AND 1880;**  
**WITH NOTICES OF**  
**BRAZIL, PERU, MANILLA,**  
**THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE, AND ST. HELENA**

**BY C. S. STEWART, M.A.,**  
Chaplain in the United States' Navy, and Author of "A Residence  
in the Sandwich Islands in 1823 and 1825."

**EDITED AND ABRIDGED**  
**BY WILLIAM ELLIS.**

**LONDON:**  
**FISHER, SON, & JACKSON, NEWGATE STREET.**



## INTRODUCTION

### THE ENGLISH EDITION.

THE author of the following pages is not unknown to the British public, either as an exemplary teacher of the Christian religion, or an agreeable and instructive writer. A former production of his pen, a *Journal of a Residence in the Sandwich Islands*, published in America and England in the year 1828; the third edition of which is now circulating in this country, has been extensively read, it is believed, with pleasure and advantage. Since the first appearance of the work above mentioned, circumstances have prevented Mr. Stewart from resuming his efficient exertions among the Sandwich Islanders, and have opened before him another walk of usefulness scarcely less interesting and important. But though no longer directly employed in promoting the extension of Christianity among the heathen, he has still



a missionary heart, and is evidently alive to every thing connected with the delusion and wretchedness of paganism, as well as the best means of effecting the instruction and deliverance of its votaries. The cause of this change in his pursuits, he has himself set forth in the unassuming and appropriate Introduction to his Visit to the South Seas : and the present volume, though not so decidedly missionary in its character as his former publication, contains evidence, in the highest degree satisfactory, of the advantages the religion of the Bible has conferred on those communities in the Pacific, by whom it has been received, with much that is interesting and important, as well as entirely new, respecting that portion of the Marquesas which he visited.

His profession and station, together with the influence of high personal regard from distinguished individuals of his own country, secured facilities for observation in Brazil and in Peru, which Mr. Stewart has turned to a good account : and the graphic and characteristic notices he has given of Rio de Janeiro, and of Lima, as well as those of Canton, Manilla, and St. Helena, will add much to the variety and interest of his work.

To those who take an interest in the moral and religious improvement of the inhabitants of the

South Sea Islands, the present volume will be peculiarly acceptable, as furnishing much additional and satisfactory evidence, that the reports which have been recently circulated of the injurious consequences of missionary exertions among the islanders, from the crude fictions of Kotzebue, to the insinuations and inferences of the anonymous writer of the account of the *Bounty*, are altogether untrue. The geographical knowledge of the latter writer appears to be much upon a par with that of the former; the name and position seems to be all he knows about Tahiti; though he quotes Captain Waldegrave as his authority, when he states, that the depopulation of the island has been so great, that, according to a census taken by the missionaries, Tahiti only contains 5000 persons. Did the writer, when he made this statement, for the purpose of insinuating that the change effected by the missionaries had occasioned or accelerated the depopulation of the island, not know that Tahiti consists of two peninsulas, joined by an isthmus; and that, in the census of the missionaries, which Captain Waldegrave saw, the population of only one of these peninsulas was 5000? If he did not know this, ought he not first to have ascertained that he was correct, before he thus recklessly published his criminating charge? And if he did know it, I leave my readers to determine the degree of credit to which he is entitled.

In reference to the improvement among the Sandwich Islands, the information in Mr. Stewart's volume is ample and decisive; and though less distinct, in regard to the South Sea Islands, to the character and beneficial exertions of the missionaries, it is equally satisfactory. The evidence of this does not, however, rest on the testimony of Mr. Stewart. On this subject, others, whose testimony in favour of missions their calumniators will not attempt to impugn, have given the most unequivocal declaration of their entire approval, in addition to the evidence which I have recently presented before the public,\* I am happy to insert another, which appears in the *Missionary Chronicle*, and is equally honourable to the integrity and candour of the writer, and the character of the missionaries.

When His Majesty's ship *Comet* reached Tahiti, in the month of April last, differences of a political nature existed between the queen and the governors of the island, which threatened an open rupture between the parties. The commander of the *Comet* very laudably used his endeavours to effect a reconciliation, in which he was readily assisted by the missionaries, and ultimately succeeded. The following reply, which he sent to a communication from the missionaries, announcing the restoration of tranquil-

\* See *Vindication of South Sea Missions*.

lity, will convey the most satisfactory refutation of the anonymous charges which have been circulated against them.

“ H. M. Sloop Comet, Papeete Bay,  
April 4, 1831.

“ GENTLEMEN,

“ I HAVE the honour to acknowledge the receipt of your esteemed letter of the 2d inst. I very sincerely congratulate you upon the amicable arrangements which have been so openly declared between Queen Pomare and the chiefs of this island; and that thereby the evils and horrors of a civil war have been prevented.

“ Gentlemen, I return you my most cordial expression of thanks, for the promptitude with which you were pleased to make known my sentiments to the queen and her chiefs, upon the existing differences in which I had the happiness to concur with you all: and if they were received with respect, I must sincerely ascribe it much more to the intelligence and ability displayed by you at so momentous and interesting a time, than to any intrinsic merit that my proposals possessed: and it is a circumstance affording me the highest satisfaction, to observe the great esteem you are all held in by the queen and her chiefs, which could not have been obtained but by a faithful discharge of your duties, as ministers of Christ and teachers of our holy religion: and it will be peculiarly gratifying to me, to make known these circumstances most fully to those authorities, whom it is my duty to inform of this transaction.

“ Gentlemen, I am joined by my officers, and Captain Walpole, of H. M. 39th regiment, in offering to you every expression of our respect and esteem.

“ Gentlemen, I have the honour to remain,

“ Your obedient, faithful, and humble servant,  
(Signed)

“ ALEX. A. SANDILAND, Captl.”

Besides the confirmation which Mr. Stewart's visit will add to the above testimony, the Map which accompanies the volume—the Portrait—and the Embellishments, from original drawings taken by the author on the spot, and transmitted from America—together with the reasonable price of the present edition—cannot fail to secure its extensive circulation and general acceptance.

It may be needful to add, that the present publication has been slightly abridged; but it is presumed, that the more convenient size and portable form, in which it now appears, will counterbalance the omission of some of the minute details in the descriptive, and other parts, of the original work.

W. ELLIS.

London, Dec. 1831.

## INTRODUCTION

### TO THE AMERICAN EDITION.

THE circumstances which compelled me, to bid a reluctant farewell to the Sandwich Islands, in the year 1825, are known to the public. A partial restoration of the health of Mrs. Stewart was effected by the residence of a year in the United States ; but all medical advisers interdicted a return to a tropical climate, and any future exposure to the privations of a missionary life. It became desirable, therefore, that I should select some sphere for the exercise of the duties of my profession, other than the field of my first choice.

Familiarity with the sea ; long intercourse with seamen ; close observation of their character ; and strong attachment to individuals of their number, had implanted a lively interest in my heart for them, as a class of my fellows ; and led me, in connexion with circumstances which it is unnecessary to explain, to direct my attention to the UNITED STATES NAVAL SERVICE. As early as the spring of 1827, I communicated my views on this subject to the gentlemen then at the head of that department of our government, with an application for a chaplainship, when the relation existing between myself and the American Board of Foreign Missions should cease.

It was subsequently arranged, that my connexion with that body should not be dissolved till November, 1828. A few weeks previous to this period, I was incidentally apprised by the Secretary of the Navy, of an opportunity of communicating with any friends at the Sandwich Islands, through a government vessel—the United States' ships *Guerriere* and *St. Louis* having been ordered to relieve the public squadron in the Pacific ocean ; one vessel from which, the corvette *Vincennes*, would visit the islands, and return to America by the Cape of Good Hope.

The idea at once suggested itself, of commencing the duties of my proposed new station, by making the voyage. It was with deep regret that I had relinquished the hope of returning to reside permanently at the Islands ; and I felt, that the visit of a few weeks to them, while discharging the

duties of the office I had selected, would soften the necessity of a permanent separation from my former associates, and from the enterprise in which they are engaged. Others, in whose judgment I confided, strongly urged the measure; and, ascertaining that the commission of a chaplain could be secured, with the privilege of a transfer from the *Guerriere* to the *Vincennes*, I determined to perform the voyage.

The resolution necessarily involved a painful sacrifice to myself and to those most deeply interested in me, in the separation requisite to its accomplishment; a sacrifice, which might be mitigated to those left behind, in some degree, by the minuteness of the detail I should furnish, of the incidents and scenes through which I might pass. To insure this, as far as practicable, the manuscript from which the letters contained in these volumes\* are drawn, was filled up, and transmitted to the person to whom they are addressed.

A thought of making the contents public was never entertained by me, till the cruise in the South Seas was in part accomplished; and the whole voyage was nearly at its close, before I became satisfied of the propriety of hazarding a second appearance in print. It was not my intention, when this point was determined, to present the matter in its original, familiar, and confidential form. But circumstances awaiting my arrival in the United States, and an event of sorrow that has since occurred, made the review of the manuscript too unwelcome a task to admit of any material alteration either in its arrangement or style; and, with the exception of erasures, the whole remains, almost word for word, as originally penned at the common mess-table of a gun-room, amidst the various conversation of my fellow-officers, liable to momentary interruptions from busy attendants, and within hearing of all the bustle and din of a man-of-war.

The last letter from Rio de Janeiro, on the character of the late honourable William Tudor, has been amplified as a biographical sketch, since I have been called, with his family and country, to lament his death. Incidents accompanying his illness and burial, and the various public notices in the United States, in Europe, and in South America, of his decease, have proved that the estimate then made of his character and public standing at the court of Brazil, was far from being overrated. A state coach of the emperor, escorted by a detachment of the imperial guard, bore his body to the grave; while the pall was supported by a chief minister of the cabinet, and by the most distinguished ambassadors of the diplomatic corps.

At the Georgian Islands, I had the pleasure of meeting the Rev. William Pascoe Crook, one of the missionaries at Tahiti. This gentleman had spent nearly two years, 1797 and 1798, at the Marquesan and Washington Islands; and kindly submitted to my inspection a manuscript journal of the period, the contents of which so fully corroborate my own observations and statements, in reference to the inhabitants of that section of Polynesia, that I present them with greater confidence than I otherwise might have felt. To Mr. Crook I am principally indebted for the contents of the letter referring to the religious classes, ceremonies, &c., of these islanders; and also, for facts of a similar nature, occasionally interspersed, which are not stated as passing under my own immediate observation.

The minuteness of the details, in regard to dress, furniture, and comparatively trifling incident, given at the Sandwich Islands, may be thought, by some of my readers, unworthy the space they occupy. My object in retaining them has not been their intrinsic worth, but their importance as data, by which to estimate the true state of that nation. The impression conveyed by the assertions, that great success has attended the missionary efforts; that important changes have occurred; and that the people are in a very improved condition, is vague and indefinite: but these details, first recorded for the gratification of one to whom, from other considerations, they could not fail to be highly interesting, show, in a degree at least, in what that success consists; what the magnitude of the change taken place is; and what the extent of improvement, when compared with the state in which the whole population was found by the missionaries in 1820.

Should others, into whose hands these volumes may fall, be disposed to imagine, that the partiality which I confess myself to feel for the Islanders, proved a deceptive medium of observation in the views taken of their condition and prospects, I can only say, that gentlemen of our company, whose prejudices, previous to the visit of the Vincennes, were as adverse to a happy impression as any indulged by myself could be propitious to one that was favourable, have pronounced my statements, as seen by them both in manuscript and print, beneath the reality they are designed to portray.

An interesting and valuable series of official reports of the cruise in the South Seas, has been furnished to the navy department by the commander of the Vincennes; and I am happy in the authority of asserting, that they fully substantiate the leading facts, incidents, and impressions, contained in the present work.



The latter part of letter LVIII. at the Sandwich Islands, in which an allusion is made to M. Von Kotzebue's "New Voyage round the World," it is proper to state, has been appended, from considerations that will be manifest in the perusal, to the facts preceding it, since the date of the original communication.

I feel it incumbent on me to apologize for the very meagre accounts given of places of interest visited on our homeward voyage. It has not arisen from any want of matter, or from a discontinuance of the minuteness of detail in the original document, but from a conviction that the work has been already extended beyond a desirable limit.

In surrendering these volumes to the public, I would only add, that, should they on the one hand be thought to possess any degree of interest, or to have the least valuable tendency upon the minds and hearts of those arrived to years of maturity, I shall be fully compensated for the labour of the publication; and on the other, should they be adjudged worthy of a place only on the humble shelves of a sabbath-school library, my expectation of their merit will not be altogether disappointed; nor even then, I trust, will the chief motive leading to their appearance—the presentation of correct views, and the excitement of just feelings, towards "THE ISLES OF THE SEA"—be altogether defeated.

New York, June 8th, 1831.

# CONTENTS.

---

LETTER.	PAGE
Introduction to the English Edition . . . .	3
Introduction to the American Edition . . . .	9

## VOYAGE TO BRAZIL.

I. Commodore Thompson and the <i>Guerriere</i> . .	1
II. Departure from the Chesapeake . . . .	5
III. Occupation and amusements on shipboard . .	9
IV. Moral aspect of the crew, and burial at sea .	13

## RIO DE JANEIRO.

V. Description of the bay of Rio de Janeiro . .	20
VI. Opening of the Imperial Cortes . . . .	24
VII. Description of the residence of Mr. Tudor . .	32
VIII. Levee at the palace on the birth-day of the Queen of Portugal . . . . .	37
IX. Public institutions of the city . . . . .	43
X. Botafogo, San Cristavao, and the Episcopal Palace . . . . .	48
XI. Prisons, judiciary, and slave trade . . . .	54
XII. Character of the Hon. William Tudor . . .	60

## PASSAGE ROUND CAPE HORN.

XIII. Departure from Rio de Janeiro . . . . .	65
XIV. The doubling of the Cape . . . . .	70

LETTER		PAGE
XV.	Description of Valparaiso . . . . .	73
XVI.	Arrival at Callao . . . . .	78

## LIMA.

XVII.	Sketch of Callao, and ride to Lima . .	85
XVIII.	Audience with General La Fuente . .	93
XIX.	Festival of the Amancaese . . . . .	99
XX.	National Museum, Inquisitorial Court, and private mansions in the city . . .	105
XXI.	Visit to the Padre Arrieta, and state of the churches and priesthood. . . . .	111
XXII.	Return to Callao, and farewell visit on shore	119

## WASHINGTON ISLANDS.

XXIII.	Departure from Peru . . . . .	124
XXIV.	Voyage to the Washington Islands . . .	127
XXV.	Arrival at Nukuhiva . . . . .	132
XXVI.	Valley of Taiohae . . . . .	143
XXVII.	Dance in the valley of the Hapaas . .	155
XXVIII.	Form of government, and civil and religious distinctions . . . . .	168
XXIX.	A day in the glen of Taioa . . . . .	180
XXX.	Cruelty and injustice of foreign visitors .	194
XXXI.	Removal of the Vincennes to the territories of the Taipiis . . . . .	204
XXXII.	Trip to the valley of Hakahaa . . . . .	216
XXXIII.	Hakahaa, or the valley of the neutral ground . . . . .	228
XXXIV.	Departure from Nukuhiva . . . . .	238

## THE GEORGIAN AND SOCIETY ISLANDS.

XXXV.	Arrival at Tahiti . . . . .	243
XXXVI.	Harbour of Papeete . . . . .	246
XXXVII.	A Tahitian sabbath . . . . .	250
XXXVIII.	Visit to Eimeo, and arrival at the Society Islands . . . . .	253
XXXIX.	Interview with king Tamatoa, and a sabbath at Raiatea . . . . .	257
XL.	Audience with the Queen of Tahiti, and visit of the chiefs on board ship . .	261
XLI.	Letter of Queen Pomare I. to the president . . . . .	266
XLII.	Departure for the Sandwich Islands . .	269

# CONTENTS.

xv

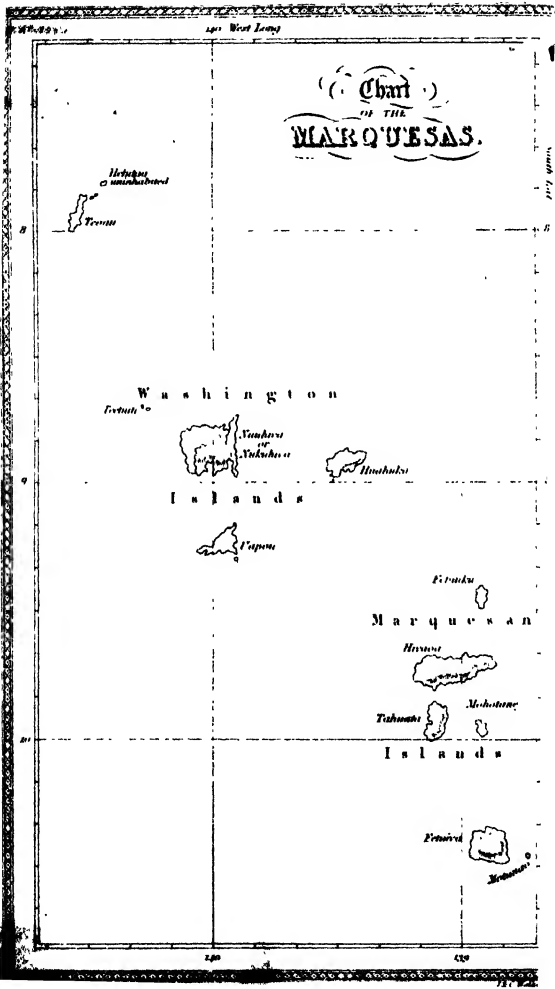
LETTER	SANDWICH ISLANDS.	PAGE
XLIII.	Arrival at the island of Hawaii . . .	273
XLIV.	Visit on shore, and description of the scenery . . .	274
XLV.	A worshipping assembly at Hido . . .	277
XLVI.	Journey to the volcano of Kirauea, and account of its present state . . .	283
XLVII.	Cascade of the Rainbow . . .	297
XLVIII.	The hereditary and last priestess of Pele . . .	300
XLIX.	First interview with the missionaries at Oahu . . .	303
L.	Reception of Captain Finch and party by the king and regent . . .	307
LI.	A morning visit to the principal chiefs . . .	317
LII.	Evening drive, and visit to the valley of Manoa . . .	322
LIII.	Edict of the king in answer to a memorial of the British residents . . .	323
LIV.	Visit to Lahaina in Maui . . .	331
LV.	Visit of Captain Finch to the princess, and entertainment of the chiefs on board ship . . .	335
LVI.	General examination of the schools of Oahu . . .	338
LVII.	An evening, religious meeting, and sab- bath scenes . . .	345
LVIII.	Detraction and calumny of foreign resi- dents . . .	350
LIX.	Government debt, and state of commerce . . .	363
LX.	A ride to the cottage of Governor Boki, and evening entertainment by the king . . .	369
LXI.	Second visit to Lahaina . . .	375
LXII.	Three days at Kearakekua bay . . .	377
LXIII.	Private letter of Captain Finch to the king . . .	384
LXIV.	Departure from Oahu, and letter of the king to the president of the United States . . .	388
LXV.	Retrospective view of the visit at the Sand- wich Islands, by Captain Finch . . .	390
LXVI.	Visit at Macaoa and Canton . . .	399
LXVII.	Description of the bay and city of Manilla . . .	402
LXVIII.	Evening scenes at a Catholic festival, and call upon a native family . . .	405
LXIX.	Excursion to the village and lake of Pasig . . .	409

LETTER	CAPE OF GOOD HOPE, AND ST. HELENA.	PAGE
<b>LXX.</b>	Description of Cape Town . . . . .	413
<b>LXXI.</b>	Ride to Constantia, and an evening at Protea, the cottage of Sir Lowry Cole .	416
<b>LXXII.</b>	Arrival at St. Helena, and interview with the governor, the Honourable Brigadier General Dallas . . . . .	421
<b>LXXIII.</b>	The tomb of Napoleon, Longwood, and Plantation House . . . . .	426

**Engravings.**

Portrait of the Rev. C. S. Stewart . . .	to face Vignette Title
Te Ipu, a chief warrior of the Teiis . . . . .	Vignette
Chart of the Marquesas . . . . .	to face page 1
A War Canoe of the Washington Islands . . .	154
Human Sacrifices . . . . .	221





(Chart)  
OF THE  
MARQUESAS.

Hawaii  
uninhabited  
Tonga

Washington  
Fiji

Vankor  
or  
Vankor  
Hankok

Ilands

Iapou

Futaka  
Marquesan

Havon

Tahiti  
Mochotone

Ilands

Futuro  
Yamou

180

180

## **Voyage to Brazil.**

---

### **LETTER I.**

**TO MRS. C. S. STEWART.**

**U. S. Ship Guerriers, Hampton Roads, Va.  
Feb. 10th, 1869.**

LETTERS from Washington will have apprised you, dear H——, of my departure from that city on the 25th ult. I arrived at Norfolk, by the way of Baltimore, on the 29th, and joined this ship on the 30th. Commodore Thompson having received sailing orders by me from the navy department, left his quarters on shore the same morning, and, under a salute of thirteen guns, hoisted his broad pennant on board the Guerriere.

On reporting myself for duty, I was received by Commodore Thompson with the same urbanity and openness of heart that marked his deportment as a travelling companion, on a first introduction, a month ago; and the decided and strong impressions then made in his favour, have been more than confirmed by the intercourse which has taken place in the relation we now hold to each other. To personal advantages of a superior order, he unites a dignity



and polish of manners rarely surpassed ; and to an accomplished mind, adds the still higher attraction of warm and elevated piety.

The usual accommodations of a chaplain are in the ward-room, adjoining those of his fellow " non-combatants," the purser and surgeon ; but the *Guerriere*, besides her complement of officers, has several on board as passengers, destined to other vessels in the Brazilian and Pacific squadrons, and a state-room in the cabin has been kindly assigned me. The greater advantages of light and air, and the facilities for study, which will thus be afforded, can scarce be appreciated by one ignorant of the darkness by day, and greater or less noise and various inconvenience at all times, of a crowded gun-room. In every other respect, however, I am associated with the gentlemen of my own grade, precisely as I should be, were my apartment on the same deck with theirs.

The *Guerriere* is a frigate of the first class, and, having yourself been a passenger on board a man-of-war of the same force, a particular description of her is unnecessary. Her size, model, and whole external appearance, as she sits proudly on the water, are so much those of H. B. M. ship *Blonde*, that, were you rowing alongside, her dark hull and heavy batteries below, and lofty masts with light spars tapering gracefully to the sky above, would appear the same. On crossing the side, too, the spar-deck would present little difference ; and it would not be till you had descended to the cabin, that you would perceive yourself to be on board another vessel. Here the arrangements in the *Guerriere* are more tasteful and pleasant. The after-cabin, handsomely fitted as a library and cabinet, has apartments on either side for the accommodation of Commodore Thompson and Captain Smith ; immediately forward of which, and opposite to each other, are two others,

—one appropriated to Andrew Armstrong, Esq., U. S. naval agent at Peru, a passenger; and the other to myself.

Appropriately and elegantly furnished, and supplied at this season of the year with a warm carpet and hangings of moreen, there is (as we encircle the centre table of the forward-cabin, for reading or conversation, or when the winter's storm whistles boisterously through the masts and rigging, draw more near the cheerful fire of a bright stove) an air of parlour-like and home comfort thrown round us, I have never before known on board ship; and which would be delightful, but for associations induced by it, too fond for the indulgence of those about to be hurried to the farthest possible distance from all they love best.

My man-of-war life is now actually begun: how far I shall be pleased, and how far useful in it, I know not. It is very distinct from every other life; but I see no reason yet to fear, that as the novelty which now interests and amuses me, ceases to be such, I shall be less satisfied than I at present am. It has one advantage, at least, over many others, that of unvarying regularity in all its arrangements—an essential in the economy of happiness with me. And it allows a degree of retirement, too, but only to one who can abstract himself from the seeming confusion of a very Babel. Besides the hum and varied din of the talk and occupation of five hundred men thickly crowded together, with the first tap of the révielle at the dawning of the morning, a succession of noisy signals commences in the various trilling of the boatswain's whistle, and the hoarse calls of his mates, ceasing only when the blasts of the bugle and firing of musketry, on setting the watch at night, proclaim a respite, except in the half-hourly striking of the time, accompanied by the watchful sentry's cry, "All's well!" Still, I

trust I shall be enabled, at least in a degree, to abstract my mind from them, and, besides attempting to be useful to others, shall, by reading and study, make the voyage profitable to myself.

It is long since I learned to love the character of the sailor—not the vulgarity and low vice too often found under the name, but the nobler traits which belong more distinctively to him than to any other order of men : I mean the warm heart and generous soul ; the clan-like tie which leads him to hail every round-jacket and tarpaulin hat, as if they were the features of a brother ; the recklessness of danger, and disregard of self ; the humour, gay spirit, and credulity, tinged with superstition, which are characteristically his own.

They have long been a neglected race, and most unjustly so ; for there are none to whom the world stands more indebted, none to whom every class of society are under stronger obligations of good will. Though too generally the victims of vice, they are far from being invariably such. Among them I have met individuals of as correct principles, pure habits, and refined feelings, as any I have known elsewhere ; and, more than once, have myself proved such worthy of receiving, and capable of appreciating, the best affections of our nature. To true piety of heart, they are not altogether strangers ; and here and there, at least, one may be found, who fears God and keeps his commandments.

I have already ascertained, that two or three of our crew are professedly and decidedly religious. In this I greatly rejoice ; not only in view of the blessing to themselves, but of its probable happy influence upon others. One bright and living example of piety, in the midst of those wandering from God, is worth a thousand speculative illustrations of the benefit and happiness of religion. May this happily prove true in the present case ; and may many here

speedily be added to the little number who have already chosen "that good part which shall never be taken from them."

Let your prayers, dear H——, be with me in this behalf; and let all who love me, pray not only for my own safety and prosperity, but for the rich gift of the Spirit of grace upon those with whom I sail.

---

## LETTER II.

### DEPARTURE FROM THE CHESAPEAKE.

U. S. Ship *Guerriere*, off the Capes of Virginia,  
Feb. 14, 1820.

YESTERDAY, while Captain Smith and myself were dining with General North and family at Fortress Monroe, the wind suddenly became fair, and signals for sailing were made from the *Guerriere*. A boat was at the same time despatched for us, and we were obliged to take a hasty leave of our friends and their hospitality. When we gained the frigate, she was already under way; and, followed by the *St. Louis*, dropped down to Lynn-Haven for the night. At daybreak this morning we again weighed anchor, and had scarcely time to scribble a note, to send on shore by the pilot, before our topsails were aback, and a cutter lowering, to set him on board his little craft, tossing gaily on the billows under our lee.

Delays in the time of sailing had been so frequent, that, though the light-house on Cape Henry was already behind us, and we on the open sea, I then first began to feel that we were actually off. The hurried manner in which many, from the commodore to the roughest of the crew, pressed round the honest man to thrust into his letter-bag "last lines" to many a loved one, made us sensible that the hour had indeed come, when we must bid adieu to our country and our homes, till the circuit of the globe should be measured by our keel.

I have, more than once, known what it is to see a friend of the heart hurried away upon the ocean to distant and uncertain scenes ; but now, for the first time, felt what it was to be myself the wanderer, launching forth, comparatively alone, while all most dear were far behind. I recollect, in one of the former instances, to have watched the receding sail till reduced to a wavering and almost invisible speck on the horizon ; in another, I lost sight of her, while yet a tall spire on the water, in the haze of approaching night ; and in a third, beheld her, still seemingly within hail, suddenly cut from the view by the scud and blackness of a driving storm : and in each case, as the eager eye failed in again securing its object, and I was compelled to exclaim, " She is gone ! " I found relief from the oppression within, only by fervent prayer to that Being, who not only " commands the winds and the waves, and they obey," but who guards and sanctifies, by his grace, all who put their trust in him. The rapid and involuntary ejaculation has been, " Almighty and most merciful God, let thy Spirit be with him ! preserve him from the power of the tempest, and from the destruction of the deep ! Keep him, O keep him, from the evil there is in the world, and in the world to come crown him with life everlasting ! " while " God bless him ! " " God bless him ! " were the long echoings of the heart. And now, as I stood, gazing still on the west, while nothing but the undulating line of a watery horizon was marked against its clear blue sky, I insensibly looked, at thoughts of those I love best, to the same consolatory and sure refuge ; and in prayer and in tears, left for them a memorial before God.

As imagination, with rapid pencil, sketches, in vivid colours, all I have left behind, throwing the charm of a double fascination around every object from which I am torn, I keenly feel the reality of my departure, and am almost ready to wonder that

I could voluntarily have undertaken, at such a sacrifice, a voyage attended with much uncertainty, and necessarily involving many a hazard. But in my better judgment I cannot, and do not, regret it. The duty has been pointed out too plainly by the dispensations of Him who directs the destinies alike of angels and of men, not to be followed with unshaken confidence and good cheer.

You are aware of my firm belief in a particular providence, in that governance of the world which regulates, not only the larger affairs of men and of nations, but which extends to the minutest concerns of the creatures of God, till, "without him not even a sparrow falleth to the ground." Next to those truths which assure us of the remission of sin through the shedding of blood, and which bring the life and immortality of the gospel to light, the Bible unfolds no one, in my view, more precious or more consolatory than this. I delight to believe, not only that a particular guidance, by providential dispensations, is granted to all who sincerely wish to do the will of their Maker, but that special paths of duty are often made so plain, that there can scarce be a mistake in entering upon and pursuing them.

This belief, with the persuasion, from a chain of circumstances well known to you, that my present situation is one of unquestioned duty, keeps my mind in perfect peace, and even emboldens me to appropriate to myself the assurance, "Behold I am with thee, and will keep thee in all places whither thou goest, and will bring thee again to this land, for I will not leave thee nor forsake thee."

An additional cause of quietude springs from another truth of inspiration, to which I yield the most implicit credence—the declaration that "the fervent effectual prayer of the righteous man availeth much." Sensible of the responsibility of the station I hold, and aware how much is needful for a right discharge

of its duties, I sought and received a pledge of constant remembrance before a throne of grace, from many whom I know to be no strangers there; and now, as my thoughts hasten through the numerous circles of my best and most loved friends, a vision of light and blessedness—a vision which, I am persuaded, is no “fancy’s sketch,”—rises sweetly on the sight. Instead of the clouds and sadness of an uncheered separation, light and peace encircle every brow, while supplications for all needed grace to myself, and to those with whom I sail, like accepted offerings, ascend gloriously unto God. Presented on the altar of a living faith, they cannot—they will not, ascend in vain. And as we are hurried away on the very wings of the wind, the persuasion steals cheerfully upon my soul, that high and holy influences, like the dews of Hermon, are already returning and resting upon us.

O! my dear H——, what a glorious religion is that which the Christian possesses! how unsearchable are its riches of wisdom and of grace!—a religion rescuing us not only from the guilt and condemnation of sin—cheering us with hope, and fitting us for immortality—but guiding and guarding us also in all our ways, and yielding consolation and joy in every circumstance in which we can be placed. If the religion of the cross be a cunning fable, as some would persuade us to believe, O how wise the intellect that devised it, and how happy the heart that is deceived! If all its promises and its hopes, its fears and its joys, its impressions and its prayers, are but a dream,—it is a dream from which I would most devoutly plead never to be awakened; and of which, to all who sleep, I would most importunately say, “Sleep—O, sleep on!”

## LETTER III.

## OCCUPATION AND AMUSEMENTS.

U. S. ship *Guerriere*, at Sea,  
March 16th, 1829.

THE North Atlantic proved rude and boisterous as usual in the wintry season, and for more than a fortnight we suffered much from the coldness of the temperature, the wetness of every part of the ship, and an unceasingly rough sea. With wind constantly fair, we were so heavily rocked by it without a moment's respite, from morning to night, and from night to morning, that our heads seemed ready to drop from our shoulders in keeping the weary motion; while the ship, almost deluged with water, laboured excessively, and every timber creaked and groaned beneath the weight of her metal, till our sympathy and patience were alike nearly exhausted. The smooth waters, mild sky, and balmy air of the tropics, however, to which we were rapidly transported, with open ports, dry decks, and every thing bright and comfortable, caused us soon to forget, in the enjoyment of the present, all the discomfort and weariness of the past.

To a lover of nature, there was one redeeming circumstance in the varying beauty of the stormy sea. The weather was such, at most times, as to keep the frigate under close-reefed fore and main topsails and foresail. The *St. Louis*, an admirably modeled ship, and a noble sailer, under canvass still more reduced, was often within a quarter of a mile under our lee; and, rolling and pitching at times so deeply as almost to show her keel, presented an object of constant interest. You know my passion for the ocean, and will not be surprised to hear that I could scarce resist the temptation of spending half my time on deck.



Since entering the north-east trades, our passage, as regards every thing external, has been more than ordinarily devoid of interest. Even the monsters of the deep have so studiously secreted themselves from observation, that I have seen neither whale, shark, nor dolphin, and scarce a porpoise or bonetta. From all former experience, I should have thought it almost impossible to have been so long a time at sea, without more sights of interest and beauty: and every present appearance indicates that we are still likely to be without a gale, or waterspout, an exhibition of phosphorescence, or any thing except plain sailing, with smooth water, and a prosperous breeze.

We were partially becalmed for a day, two or three degrees north of the equator, and during that period boarded the first vessel we have spoken—a Spanish ship, the *Preciosa*, one hundred and twenty days from Manilla, bound to Cadiz. Shortly afterward, the south-east trade-wind reached us, and we are now sailing charmingly onward, with an atmosphere and sky like June. You recollect the beauty of the sea within the limits of this trade—the only true Pacific, in my opinion, in any part of the world—it is delightful as ever; and, with the additional advantage of a splendid moon, we hope, in ten days, to be safe at anchor in the bay of Rio de Janeiro.

For the first fortnight out, it was impossible to write, and most of my time was occupied in reading. There is a large and good collection of books on board. Besides several private libraries, a public one, of many hundred well-chosen volumes, purchased by a subscription of the ship's company, is arranged in the dining cabin, under the direction of a librarian: a provision for the recreation and improvement of the crew, of which no public ship, bound on a long cruise, should be destitute. Irving's *Life of Columbus*, Scott's *Napoleon*, the *Lady of the*

Manor, Erskine's Freeness of the Gospel, Weddell's Voyages, Payson's Sermons, and Martyn's Life, are the volumes which have thus far principally occupied my attention. The last has long been a kind of text-book with me; and I have now finished it for the fourth time since its publication, in the devoutest prayer that my life might partake some little of the character of his, and my death be blest with the spirit which dictated the last paragraph he ever penned.

The situation of my apartment is such as to afford almost the retirement of a study at home, and, with the exception of an hour or two on deck for air and exercise, in the morning, and a visit to the sick in the afternoon, most of the day is devoted by me to studies and writing immediately connected with my profession, and official duties on board. During the same period, the whole crew are variously but busily employed; and the ship, in every part, presents the industrious activity of a village of mechanics on shore. With the approach of evening, however, this ceases to be the case: and the two or three hours preceding the setting of the night-watch, at 8 o'clock, is a time of general relaxation and amusement. During it, the thrumming of the guitar, with the low voice of the song, may be heard in the cabin; while the gayer notes of the flute and violin enliven the ward-room and steerage, and the band on the fore-castle sends its full-toned strains far and wide upon the deep. Along the decks, every where is to be heard the hum of busy converse, intermingled with the tread of the dance among the more youthful and light-hearted of the crew.

As the night gathers round us, I generally take possession of one of the gangways at the side of the ship, the better to gaze on the expanse of water around, and the heavenly hosts above; and in their sublimity to trace the power and majesty of their

Maker. Notwithstanding the various and confused sounds on every side, the meditations stealing over the mind, at this period, are not unfrequently, in a degree, such as I could wish; and in the multitude of my thoughts, my spirit is often refreshed within me. If such glory is discernible in the revelation which the Almighty makes of himself in his works, O! what will be the power of that, in which all the moral, as well as natural perfections of the Godhead, shall be exhibited to us face to face!

In one respect, however, I have proved the spot chosen to be most unfortunate: the gangway is the place of punishment; and twice, within the last two evenings, the keenest emotions I have known on board, the *Guerriere*, have come suddenly upon me in the sound of the lash, and the cry of some wretch suffering at my side. This mode of punishment is deemed by many indispensable on board a man-of-war; and it may be so—but as yet I am far from being reconciled, in feeling, to the necessity. To me there is an indignity and degradation in it, which seem inconsistent with the high-toned principles and spirit of Americanism; and, independent of all other considerations, I never witness it without being tempted to ask Paul's question to the centurion, "Is it lawful for you to scourge a man that is a Roman?"

But though there was sorrow in the case, and I felt every stroke almost as if across my own shoulders, it was not altogether without profit. Only the moment before, I had been gazing on the mild splendour of the southern Cross, absorbed in associations inseparable from it, in the life and death of Him who hung upon the accursed tree; and the mind at once reverted powerfully to that scourging "endured for us," and to those "stripes by which we are healed."

The reality and extent of the ignominy suffered by Him, who "thought it not robbery to be equal with God," never before forced themselves upon me

in such fulness and such freshness; and my soul melted within me in thought of the love which caused Him to "humble himself and become man," and to submit uncomplainingly, not only to the power of death and the grave, but thus also to scourges and to shame.

## LETTER IV.

### MORAL ASPECT OF THE CREW.

U. S. ship *Guerriere*, at sea,  
March 20th, 1829.

BELIEVING, with Pope, that "the proper study of mankind is man," I have ever delighted in opportunities of observing my fellows in new lights and relations; and find daily amusement, with an admixture of other emotions, in the development of character among those around me. A man-of-war is a world in miniature, in which every kind of temper and disposition is to be found.

The moral field in which I am to labour is confessedly a hard one; but I am far from being discouraged in attempts to recover, and eventually draw from it, both fruitfulness and beauty. A right use of the means of grace will ever produce, in a greater or less degree, both in ourselves and others, their destined results; and in the persuasion of this efficacy, I found all my confidence and my hopes.

A more interesting and attentive audience than that formed by the five hundred of our crew at worship on the Sabbath, I have seldom addressed; and every look, and the whole appearance of the men, after the first sermon I preached, as I passed among them while at dinner, to distribute a set of tracts, plainly told they were far from being indifferent to the services of my office, and regard me personally with feelings of kindness and good will.

Commodore Thompson informed me at an early period, that it was the desire, both of himself and Captain Smith, to have public prayers daily on board the *Guerriere*, according to a prescribed, though hitherto disregarded, rule of the naval service. The hour of sunset was fixed on, as the most convenient and most appropriate for the duty; and the first day the weather permitted, it was commenced. A more desirable and salutary observance could scarce be devised; nor one more pleasing and more impressive. It was well remarked in reference to it, by a principal officer, though not professedly a religious man, that, wanderers as we are upon the deep, separated widely from all the rest of the world, there should be, at least once in every twenty-four hours, a common and appointed time for all to pause in the daily round of occupation, and, as intelligent and immortal beings, to reflect for a moment what we are, and for what created; what we are about, and whither we are going; unitedly to join in the worship of our God, and anew commend us to his grace and mercy. It is no common spectacle thus presented by our ship, when, as the curtains of the night begin to drop around us, the busy and varied occupation of so large a company is seen to cease, and, at the appointed signal, all, from the highest to the lowest, quietly gather to the altar we have here erected, to offer to heaven an evening sacrifice of thanksgiving and prayer. It is a noble sight to behold men, thus situated, openly acknowledging to their Maker and to themselves, the high source and destiny of their existence; and thus, tacitly at least, encouraging one another to lay hold of the joyous hopes of the gospel.

To believe it an unwelcome and irksome duty to the crew, is a mistake. There may be individuals who regard it as such, but they are few indeed in comparison with the many, who give the most evident proofs of the interest and satisfaction with which they

engage in it. Ten minutes is the utmost limit of the time thus occupied : the reading of a hymn, or a few verses in the bible, or the making of half a dozen remarks to prepare the thoughts and feelings for the more hallowed exercise of a short prayer, constitutes the whole. All give the most serious and respectful attention ; while a youthful company of some fifty or sixty, the flower of our crew, usually press closely to me with more than ordinary interest. Among them are several professedly religious, and others anxious on the subject ; and not unfrequently, the satisfaction they take in the service is expressed by a smile of pleasure, as, with the closing "amen," they replace their hats, and join their fellows, under the influence of a chastened, if not a devotional, feeling.

From the observations already made on the effect of this regulation, I am fully persuaded that a more powerful auxiliary in the discipline of a ship, could not be adopted ; and that this single service, properly performed, would soon be found to do more in promoting the good order of a crew, than all the harshness of the rope's end, backed by the terrors of the cat-o'-nine-tails. This is far from being my own solitary opinion ; it is that of many of the officers on board. Prayers had scarce been established a week, before one of the most skilful and popular, but at the same time one of the most gay and thoughtless, of their number, in expressing his sentiments on this subject, closed with the following remark : "Whatever may be said to the contrary, Mr. Stewart, there is nothing like a service of religion in elevating the character of a crew ; it makes different men of them, and it is the only thing that will do it : " an opinion in which I fully concur ; and were the experiment once rightly made, by every commander in our service, I am fully persuaded the same sentiment would universally prevail.

No class of men are more open to convictions of truth than seamen, and none more susceptible of religious impressions, except where the demon of intemperance incases the soul with adamant, and

"Hardens a' within."

I find no difficulty in gaining access to their confidence ; and, in several instances, have met with interested and deep feeling. On a sabbath evening, not long since, while walking the main deck, I perceived an open-hearted young fellow, with whom I had formed some acquaintance, leaning against a gun ; and going up to him, said, "Well J——, how has the day gone with you ?" "One of the happiest I ever knew, sir," was his reply ; "and I have heard many of the crew say the same. I never expected such a sabbath at sea ; earth can scarce know a better." Adding, on further conversation, "When I had been on board the *Guerriere* several weeks, before you, sir, joined us, without any public worship, I began to fear I had made a bad choice in coming to this ship : but I was mistaken ; this will be a happy voyage to me ; and I believe the time will yet come, when the ship herself will be called *the happy Guerriere* !" His face beamed with pleasure as he spoke, and I rejoiced to meet one so warm-hearted and seemingly pious.

I almost daily meet with those more or less interested in the subject. Only a short time ago, while visiting the sick, I observed a middle-aged man following me from cot to cot, but said nothing to him, supposing him an attendant engaged in some duty. At length he spoke, saying, "There is no comfort for these poor fellows, sir, but in the few words you may drop them," adding, while the tears started in his eyes, and his lips faltered as he placed his hand upon his heart, "they are poor sinners, sir ! and I, too, am a poor sinner ; guilty, miserable sinner, sir ! and God in mercy has sent you to preach the gospel

to us. I know well what it is to be weary and heavy laden with sin," &c. On conversing more fully with him, I had reason to believe that he was sincerely disposed to learn of Him who "is meek and lowly in heart, and whose yoke is easy, and his burden light."

In an adjoining hammock lay a young man slightly ill, to whom I had the day before given two or three tracts. On asking him how he did, he hid his face in the pillow, and it was some moments before he recovered sufficient composure to say, "For once, at least, in my life, sir, my hard heart has been touched: one of the tracts you gave me, that of Charles Grafton, melted my very soul! My parents, too, tried to bring me up in the right way; but I have neglected and forgotten all their advice. It is now six years since I have been near them, and they know nothing of me, nor where I am." In a long conversation, I endeavoured to convince him of his ingratitude to God his heavenly Father, as well as towards his earthly parents; and left him with the resolution of the prodigal on his lips, if not in his heart.

The more impressive and melancholy dispensations of Providence have not been wanting to add their influence to that of the means of grace, in inclining our minds to thoughts of piety. Within the last two days, I have been called twice to perform the saddest office incident to my station, by committing to the deep that which shall be retained in its dark caverns till "the sea shall give up its dead."

A funeral is a melancholy and impressive service any where, but particularly so at sea, and on board a man-of-war. There is something more deeply thrilling in the call of the boatswain, "All hands, to bury the dead, ahoy!" as it passes through the ship, echoed from deck to deck by his mates, than even in the admonitory sounds of the bell of death on shore. And as, for the first time, in obedience to it, I ascended the companion-ladder, and passed through



the opening crowd to the side of the ship, where, in the sad preparations of the grave, lay the form of one who at that hour the day previous had little thought of being then in eternity; I could scarce command my voice, in giving utterance to the sublime declaration of the burial service, "I am the resurrection and the life, saith the Lord." The pause, too, preceding the words, "We commit his body to the deep," and then the plunge and plash of the lifeless body, as it is lanced to its watery tomb, speak in a voice more deeply touching than that sent back by the clod of the valley from the narrow house, when "dust returns to dust, and ashes to ashes!" in the seemingly more natural cemetery within the churchyard limits.

The person buried was a young man of the marines. He had been ill for a fortnight, but was at no time thought dangerous, and for the last few days was considered convalescent. I first conversed with him upon the subject of religion ten days ago. In reply to the question, whether he had ever thought seriously of the destiny of the soul, his only answer, and one which he seemed to think abundantly sufficient, as his black eyes filled with tears, was, "I had a pious mother!" I have seen him daily since, and, though confessedly far from God, he appeared persuaded to cast himself in penitence upon his mercy, and hereafter to lead a virtuous life. Poor fellow! he little thought his end was so nigh. On attempting to sit up, after having been in a quiet sleep, the rupture of an internal abscess took place, and, springing in a convulsion from his cot, he fell dead in the arms of his attendant.

His was the first funeral; but we had too sad evidence before us, that it was not to be the last. A petty officer was lying at the time in the very jaws of death, and expired the same day: noble in figure, and of an uncommonly hardy constitution

he died at the early age of thirty, a sacrifice to drunkenness.

Before he was thought in particular danger, a fortnight ago, I spoke to him, in one of my visits, of the importance of being at all times prepared for sickness and death; to which he replied, that he was too weak, both in body and mind, to think on such subjects. Then he was comparatively strong, and perfectly himself; but soon afterward, the "delirium tremens," with all its accompanying tokens of a horrid end, took from him every power of reflection, and he perished a miserable and degraded soul. As I stood by his cot, gazing at his convulsed and agonized frame, just before he expired—after having lain six hours speechless, and utterly incapable of articulating a syllable distinctly—in an effort of anger at a shipmate attending him, he broke out in the most dreadful oaths and curses, sounding horribly in my ears.

To commend his immortal spirit by prayer to the mercy of an eternal Judge, was all in my power to do; and I turned away with the heartfelt aspiration—"Let me die the death of the righteous, and let my last end be like his!"

## Rio de Janeiro.

---

### LETTER V.

#### DESCRIPTION OF THE BAY OF RIO DE JANEIRO.

U. S. ship *Guerriere*, Rio de Janeiro,  
March 30th, 1829.

EARLY on the morning of Friday, the 27th instant, at a distance of 30 miles, we made Cape Frio, a lofty promontory, one degree due east of Rio de Janeiro. The morning was delightful, and, with a breeze fresh and fair, we hoped at the time to gain the harbour by nightfall; but after doubling the Cape, we lost the regular trade-wind, and, coming within the alternate influence of a land and a sea breeze, made such slow advances, as on Saturday evening to be still outside of the bay, twenty miles from the city. Here we were obliged to drop anchor for the night, and wait for the breeze of the morning, to carry us into port.

I was somewhat surprised, and, you will believe me, dear H——, much delighted, to find a most striking resemblance in some of the characteristic features of this celebrated empire, and those of the islands of the Pacific, once our residence. Had I been taken blindfold to the anchorage of the *Guerriere*, on Saturday evening, without knowing in what part of the world I was, I should fully have thought myself, on beholding it, in some group of Polynesia. There are the same fantastic headlands of bare sand, washed and furrowed by watercourses till seemingly the production of artificial workman-

ship—the same loftiness and wildness of outline in the mountains—the same dark luxuriant forests hanging among precipices and projecting cliffs about their summits—and the same smooth swelling hills of light green encircling their bases.

Before dark, two or three vessels, outward bound, passed us; one a transport ship from Valparaiso, having on board part of the crew of the British frigate Doris, lately condemned there. Lieutenant Griffith, of the royal navy, the officer in charge of them, paid a short visit to the *Guerriere* in his boat, and gave us some news from the capital.

Early on Sunday morning we again weighed anchor. and by noon, as the sea-breeze strengthened, began to open the bay. Two or three pretty little islets, with rocky bases enveloped by thick shrubbery and brushwood, lie at the entrance of the channel.

Among the first objects that demanded notice and admiration, were the magnificent pyramid of the Sugar-loaf, immediately on our left, and the fortress of Santa Cruz, with its floating banner, on a gently swelling hill on our right. From these points, on either side, the shores of the bay, lined at the water's edge with the cottages and hamlets of the fishermen, sweep widely round; while behind, hills in the richest cultivation, sprinkled with farm-houses and villas, and crowned with churches and monasteries, all in purest white, rise abruptly on every side, till, two or three miles inland, they terminate in ranges of mountains, of the boldest and most varied beauty.

At a distance of three miles from the entrance, the castellated island of Villagagnon rises from the water, over which a tower here and there, with a forest of shipping adjoining, designated the location of the city. A little to the right again, a succession of low green islets studding the smooth waters of the bay, showed the direction in which it penetrates far into the interior, till, at a distance of forty or fifty

miles, the lofty and fantastic peaks of the Organ Mountains closed the view.

The Sugar-loaf is a strikingly unique and imposing object—a gigantic rock, a thousand feet high, singularly of the form its name indicates, but inclining over its base southward, at an angle equal to that of the falling tower at Pisa. It is entirely naked, except a little tufting of moss and bushes in some of the crevices indenting its sides, and on its top. To look at it, it seems utterly inaccessible on every part; but it is said, that some time since, a British officer succeeded in gaining the top, and hoisting the flag of his nation:—the story adds, that he perished in the descent, or met his fate by the dagger of an assassin, employed to intercept him on his return, and thus reward his presumption in planting the standard of Britain over the capital of Brazil. A party of Austrian officers, who accompanied the Archduchess Leopoldina to Rio, on her marriage with the emperor, accomplished a similar feat; and an American is also said to have left the stripes and stars waving from its summit—a report probably as well founded as either of the former, for our countrymen, in whatever part of the world they are found, to say the least, are not behind any they meet, where boldness and intrepidity are in requisition.

The distance, in a direct line, from the Sugar-loaf to the city, is about five miles; but the shores, on either side, sweep from the channel into several bays, making the route by them much more circuitous. Botafogo, the largest and deepest of these inlets, first meets the eye. The entrance to it is very narrow, and almost entirely shut from the sight. Encircled by wild and lofty mountains, it exhibits, at almost every point of view, the characteristic features of a fine lake. In a momentary glance as we passed, it seemed, though so near the imperial capital, to be reposing in all the quiet of a sequestered loch in the

Scottish highlands. The vapours of the morning still hung on the sides of the mountains, and, but for a cottage here and there, with the boat of a fisherman along the shore, it might have been thought still a haunt only for the numerous sea-fowl seen hovering around its waters, or soaring among the inaccessible crags above.

Next to Botafogo, and forming a kind of outer bay to it, comes the widely curving Praya do Flamengo, or beach of the Flamingos, lined with a range of fine houses. Immediately adjoining is the Gloria Hill, a place of great beauty, and one of the most conspicuous points in the panorama of the whole bay. Upon its brow stands the first public building, attracting particular notice in approaching the anchorage—the church, “*Nossa Senhora de Gloria*,” of our Lady of Glory. The building is a small octagon, with lofty towers of neat and well-proportioned architecture, the whole beautifully white, ornamented with pilasters, cornices, and casements of brown freestone. It is delightfully situated, and surrounded and overhung by trees and shrubbery of splendid growth.

Around the Gloria is another indenture, over which is seen a long stone causeway, lined with houses on the inner side; and above and beyond, a section of a lofty and massive aqueduct, running from the mountains to the city. Then comes another hill, surmounted by a monastery, a gloomy pile, and in poor repair; immediately beneath which, on a low piece of level ground, lies the city, with its numerous steeples and towers, the most conspicuous being those of the imperial chapel and cathedral.

The imperial residence fronts the water, and, with the public square adjoining, is in full view from the anchorage; while the episcopal palace stands on a hill some two hundred feet high, in the centre of the city. This is an extensive building, and more finely situated than that of the emperor, but of heavy and

monkish architecture. Near it, on the west, is another hill and convent ; and, closely adjoining, the imperial navy yard ; from which a small rocky and fortified island runs into the harbour, and completes the outline of the sketch on this side of the bay.

At the city, the bay is three miles wide. The opposite shore on the north is called Praya Granda. It is less wild and lofty in its general features ; but equally rich in the varied beauty.

In much less time than I have taken to give you this outline, we ran up the bay into all the hurry and bustle of a busy port, amidst boats of every size and description ; and dropt anchor inside the British and French squadrons, in a range with the U. S. ship *Vandalia*, the only American man-of-war at present here. As we passed her, she gave us the customary salute to a flag-ship, which we returned, as we rounded to, with the appointed number of guns.

It was now too late for the morning service, and we had no worship till evening prayers. Most of the afternoon was spent by the officers of the *Guerriere* and *Vandalia* in an interchange of visits. The only indulgence I allowed myself, was that of gazing occasionally on the magnificent panorama around me. There may be scenery in the world that equals, but there scarce can be any that surpasses it. As a whole, it is sublime, while every distinct section would in itself make a picture ; and, whether viewed in mass or in detail, exceeds in beauty and variety every thing I have before seen.

## LETTER VI.

### OPENING OF THE IMPERIAL CORTES.

U. S. Ship *Guerriere*. Rio de Janeiro,  
April 2, 1822.

AFTER scribbling the preceding letter on Monday, I prepared to visit the shore. The day was lowering,

and threatened rain ; and Mr. Wilson, our purser, and myself, had scarce proceeded half way to the city, before it began to pour in torrents. The landing is on an inclined plane of massive granite, leading to the water from a fine mole of the same material ; and affords a convenient footing, in stepping from the boat, at any state of the tide.

The mole, with a principal fountain of the city in the centre, forms the front of a large unenclosed square ; and, from the view of the bay and shipping it presents, is a favourite promenade and evening lounge of the citizens. The palace lines two of the remaining sides of the square, and a row of private dwellings, shops, and cafés, constitutes the fourth.

We walked to the American consulate, in a narrow street leading from the farther side. The chief object with me, was to place in the hands of Mr. Tudor, our diplomatist at the court of Brazil, several packets which had been committed to my keeping. Learning that his residence was at the Praya do Flamengo, three miles distant, I proceeded thither in a boat.

The boat, such as ply in great numbers about the harbour and across the ferry to Praya Grande, was furnished with a wooden canopy over the stern, and oiled curtains to keep off the rain. Beneath this, the owner, a fine-looking Brazilian, with bare neck, chest, and feet, and a high-crowned grass hat, sat beside me smoking his cigar ; while four stout, muscular negroes, clad in loose drawers only, pulled the oars. The manner of rowing is different from any I have seen. After every stroke, which is long and slow, the rowers rise entirely from their seats, and throw themselves forward, as they lift the oar from the water ; and then, in a measured and uniform motion, accompanied with a monotonous cry, drop again into their seats ; and, as they pull, brace themselves at full length against a foot-board at the bottom. The manner seems both indolent and laborious ;



but the motion produced is as rapid, apparently, as that by our method of using the oar.

Mr. Tudor met me with the warmth of a brother. Though personally unknown, through the kindness of our friend Mrs. Stewart, a sister to whom he is devotedly attached, we have long, both by name and character, been mutually acquainted; and, coming to him as I now did, a kind of open letter from the bosom of his family, our first salutations were those of well-known friends, and we were at once seated beside each other, in all the confidence of intimate companions. An hour was gone before I could attempt leaving him; and on rising then for the purpose, he would not permit me to move, though a seal on any of his letters had not yet been broken, till I had accepted the hospitality of his house during our stay at Rio, and had been shown to apartments in readiness to receive me.

Yesterday, Commodore Thompson and a small party were at dinner there. Before leaving, Mr. Tudor informed me that the cortes, or imperial legislature, was to be opened by the emperor in person to-day; and that a card for a seat in the diplomatic tribune had been furnished me by the marquis of Lisboa, from the department of state. Grateful for the opportunity of witnessing the ceremony, I readily made an appointment to meet him at the American consulate, at twelve o'clock this morning.

I landed at an early hour; and perceiving the imperial chapel open, crossed the square to it. Grand mass was performing; and the archbishop of Bahia, the bishop of Rio de Janeiro, and other dignitaries of the church, cardinals, canons, and abbots, were present. Many of the députies to the cortes, in rich court dresses, were also there, scattered among the priesthood and other worshippers.

The chapel is small, but rich in gilding, and ornamental architecture. The paintings in general

are inferior; and one of the images, at least, objectionable on other grounds than those found in the second commandment. The building was erected, I am told, in performance of a vow of the late empress. There being no heir after eighteen months' marriage, a promise was made to the Virgin, that, if ~~one~~ <sup>she</sup> were granted, a chapel to her honour should be immediately founded; and on the birth of the present young queen of Portugal, late princess royal of Brazil, she was called Donna Maria de Gloria, the Lady of Glory, after the Virgin; and this chapel built. The first image at the entrance on your right, bears an unhappy allusion to the circumstances of the case.

The music, by a full orchestra, embracing the most distinguished performers of the opera, was admirable, the singing fine, and the instrumental accompaniment delightful. The most conspicuous performers, however, were of a class to dash the whole to me with no little of disgust. I remained till the service was over; and, from the steps at the entrance, had a full view of the lords temporal and lords spiritual, as, robed and mitred, and superbly arrayed in velvet and gold, with stars and various orders, they took their departure in chariots drawn up in front to receive them.

The senate house is on the farther side of an extensive open square, near the suburbs of the city, towards the mountains, formerly called the Campo de Santa Anna, but now Campo or Praca d'Acclamação. We drove to it in a clumsy kind of chariot, or post-chaise, here called calesa, drawn by two mules, with a postilion and footman, and arrived at half-past twelve o'clock. The entrance, at which equipages of various descriptions, and every degree of splendour, were setting down their masters, was flanked on either side by troops in rich uniform, and a company of the imperial guard on foot.

The building is oblong, two stories high, of neat and simple architecture in stone, stuccoed and painted yellow. We ascended a broad staircase from the basement to a suit of lofty apartments, furnished with carpets and silk hangings, and forming ante-rooms to the senate-hall, and those appropriated to the use of the emperor in putting on and laying aside his robes.

The hall itself is a spacious and lofty apartment; the walls, painted in imitation of a delicately veined yellowish marble, are ornamented with white pilasters and cornices; and the ceiling is in stucco, of a plain and chaste pattern. On the north end is the throne, with a tribune for the imperial family and foreign ministers on either side, both hung in green and gold. The east side is filled with large windows in draperies of the same; on the south is a small gallery for spectators; and in a recess on the west, another, hung in damask, for the nobility. The floor is covered with green cloth; and the seats of the members, chairs of rose-wood and cane, are in three ranges, on a slightly elevated platform on each side of the hall, leaving a wide passage in the middle from the south end to the throne. All the entrances, in place of doors of wood, are hung with screens of green cloth, with rich borders of yellow, and the imperial arms in the centre.

A corridor from one of the ante-rooms leads by a short flight of steps to the diplomatic tribune. On entering it, there were already assembled, the Baron de Mareschal, the Austrian ambassador; M. Westien, the Swedish chargé d'affaires; Admiral Sir Robert Otway, and Captain Inglefield of H. B. M. ship the *Ganges*, 74; Dr. Walsh, chaplain to Lord Strangford, British minister extraordinary, and several of the British legation: but neither Lord Strangford, nor Lord Ponsonby, the resident ambassador, had arrived.

Both houses of the cortes had convened, and the members were answering to the call of their names. The whole—ecclesiastics in full canonicals, and laymen in court dress, with the cabinet ministers in chairs of state—made a varied and splendid show.

Happily for us simple republicans, a throne, that gorgeous seat for which men, it is to be feared, have sacrificed their all—eternal, as well as temporal—needs in our country (and may it ever need!) to be described. That of Brazil is a richly carved arm chair, supported by miniature lions with their heads and manes in front, the whole in the richest gilding. The point of the high back is surmounted by an imperial crown, also gilt, and the cushions are of white satin embroidered with gold. The ascent to the square platform of green velvet, on which it stands, is by three steps, covered with the same material. The canopy of green silk velvet, with a gilt crown on the cornice in front, is as lofty as the ceiling; and from it, heavy hangings of velvet, richly embroidered with gold, and lined with white damask, figured with the same, descend to the platform and floor of the chamber.

Precisely at one, the hour appointed, Don Pedro, preceded by two officers, and followed by the cabinet and the whole cortes in procession, entered the farther end of the hall. Having to walk the whole length of it towards us, before reaching the throne, we had time for a deliberate survey of him. He was in full coronation attire, wearing the crown, and bearing the sceptre. The crown is lofty, of a beautiful antique shape, and one of the richest in the world. Except the cap of green silk velvet, and the band or rim of gold, it seemed one mass of diamonds. Around the neck was a Spanish ruff of lace, and beneath it, in place of the ermine in other regal attire, a deep cape of the bright yellow feathers of the toucan, a splendid Brazilian bird. This

cape was a part of the dress of the ancient caciques of the country, and was, with great propriety, retained in the coronation paraphernalia, on the establishment of the empire. It is very like the feather capes of our Sandwich Island chieftains. Beneath was the robe of green velvet, lined with white satin, the whole gorgeously embroidered with gold. A recollection of some of the dresses in David's "Coronation of Josephine," will give you the best idea of this, as it swept far behind him. It was supported, at a distance of ten or twelve feet, by a couple of pages, who, as the emperor became seated, cast it on one side, leaving it widely spread over the steps of the throne. His under dress was of white satin embroidered with gold, high military boots, gold spurs, and a diamond-hilted sword.

The loftiness of the crown, and general effect of the dress, made him appear tall, though his person is only of middle height, but stout and finely formed. His step was long, firm, and deliberate, and more artificial, I should think, than essential to true dignity; while the expression of his countenance, and whole air, were decidedly haughty. This was probably attributable to an ill mood, arising from circumstances connected with the special session of the legislature about to be opened.

As soon as he was seated, a private secretary, kneeling on a step of the throne, presented a rich portfolio, containing a single sheet of letter-paper on the first page of which was the imperial speech. He read it in a distinct, emphatic, and dignified manner; and in less than five minutes, descended from the throne, bowed again to the ambassadors, and left the chamber in the same manner he had entered.

The address was in Portuguese; and its principal point, the presentation, for a fourth time, of the absolute necessity of measures to replenish a trea-

sury completely exhausted by the late impolitic war with Buenos Ayres. There is much opposition to the administration in the legislature, and considerable anarchy throughout the empire. But the fault is not particularly that of the emperor; he is a man of energy and talent, and, though said to be defective in early education, is of enlightened and liberal sentiments, and desirous of pursuing a policy that will best promote the interest of the empire, and the highest good of his subjects. All who know any thing of the people, their general ignorance and corruption, think it happy for them that they have an emperor. Without a perpetual executive, the country would soon, there is reason to fear, be deluged with blood.

On descending from the tribune, we found the ante-rooms filled with the deputies and officers of state; and groups for conversation were formed, till the emperor, having laid aside his robes, made his appearance from the private apartments; and, with relaxed and benignant countenance, bowed his way through the lines formed for his passage to the staircase. I stood very near, and was much more pleased with the expression accompanying a bow, than in the senate hall.

A window in front commanded a view of his equipage. It was a high chariot, covered with gilding, drawn by six mules in gilt harness. The front wheels were so low as to move under the body of the carriage, admitting it to be turned on the spot, like a gig; and the moment the footman closed the door, it was wheeled short round, and hurried off at a rapid rate, with three or four cadets on the full canter before, and a whole troop of body guards, in a uniform of white and gold, behind. The livery of the charioteer and footmen was also white, stiffly laced with gold.

Mr. Tudor, being on terms of great cordiality with the leading individuals of the court remained in con-

versation some time after the departure of his majesty. With the Marquis de Aracaty, the minister for foreign affairs, I was particularly pleased. He is said to be the most highly educated and intelligent nobleman in the empire; perfectly accessible in his manners, and free in conversation.

## LETTER VII.

### RESIDENCE OF MR. TUDOR.

Praya do Flamengo, at Rio de Janeiro,  
April 3d, 1829.

BEFORE entering on a further detail of my visit at Rio, dear H——, I must domiciliate you with me in the Brazilian habitation of Mr. Tudor, by a short description of its localities and architecture.

Praya is the Portuguese word for "beach," or "shore," and the Praya do Flamengo is a beach, stretching in a long curve of a mile or more, from the Gloria Hill near the city, towards the entrance of the bay of Botafogo, next the sea; so called from having once been a favourite resort of the gorgeous and stately flamingo. It is lined in its whole length by a row of handsome houses fronting the bay; and so near the water as to leave room only for a flagged side-walk and a carriage-drive between the entrances and a low parapet of stone washed by the surf. The houses near the Gloria Hill, of which Mr. Tudor's is one, stand in a single block, under a continued roof, as in a city.

His residence is of stone, two stories high, stuccoed and whitewashed, with a low, square roof, covered with red tile; an article in universal use for this purpose in Rio and its environs. The building is about forty feet in front, by seventy or eighty in depth; and is entered by one large, central, and barn-like door, opening into a spacious hall, roughly plastered and whitewashed, furnished only with a wooden bench

for servants on one side like a garden-seat ; and having a pavement of round stones for a floor. It is, in fact, the carriage-house in a Brazilian establishment ; through the equipages of which you invariably make your way to more dignified apartments. On the farther side, at one corner, is a large door, leading into a passage by which the horses and mules, with their provender, &c., are conducted to the stables in the yard behind ; and at the other, one similar, opening to the servants' hall, kitchen, and offices, occupying the remaining part of the ground-floor. Between these doors, a staircase of stone, with an iron balustrade, conducts to the second story. On the landing, a door at the right opens into a corridor, and another on the left, into the drawing room. This is a spacious apartment, nearly forty feet square, the ceiling following the inclination of the roof to a point in the centre.

The houses are not furnished with bells or a knocker, as with us, for the purpose of announcing a visiter ; and when a porter or servant is not found in the entrance-hall, the attention is attracted by clapping the hands three times sharply together, followed by the exclamation, " Et chew !" such as is used in driving a fowl. When a visiter takes leave, the master of the house always accompanies him to the landing of the stairs, where, returning a second bow of departure, he waits till his guest, with hat in hand, has descended to the last point in mutual view, when final bows are exchanged. They are exceedingly polite in their manners, and very punctilious in the observance of established points of etiquette : to put your hat on in the presence of your host, or not to bow to him from the bottom of the staircase, would be thought highly rude and ill bred. In their hours the Brazilians are early, never dining later than two o'clock ; after which, the whole population indulge themselves in a siesta. Among the diplomatic corps,



the distribution of, the day is much the same as among the higher classes in America and England ; breakfast being served from nine to ten, and dinner from four to six o'clock.

This variance in the habits of the native citizens and foreign residents gives rise, however, to no inconvenience ; for there is no interchange of hospitality on the part of the former. Their private entertainments are exclusively among themselves. Invitations are never extended, it seems, to strangers, under any circumstances ; and though Mr. Tudor is on terms of intimacy with many of the ministry, especially with the Marquis Aracaty, he has never visited their families. The Marquis de Gabriac, the late French ambassador, was accompanied to Rio by the marchioness, and lived in great splendour and hospitality. Fête after fête of every kind was given by them, at which the whole court appeared in all the magnificence of their dress and diamonds ; but neither himself nor lady ever received an entertainment in return. This studied and extreme inhospitality has been exhibited, however, only within the few years past, and is said to have arisen from the disclosures of private life, made in the publications of travellers who had been introduced to domestic and social circles of the city. \* Another reason assigned is, the great deficiency in education and intelligence among the females, even of the highest rank.

Under these circumstances, I shall have no opportunity of judging, from personal observation, of the state of society among the Portuguese and Brazilians. They are generally a fine-looking people ; and from an occasional glance from a chariot in passing, or peep from an upper window, I should say some of the ladies, at least, are handsome. Females of the higher classes are seldom seen walking in the streets ; in the evening a few, at times, may be met, but in the morning never. Whenever seen, whether it be

walking, or taking a drive, they are in evening dress, with uncovered head and neck. The costume, as thus exhibited, does not differ materially from that of ladies in our own country, and often displays much taste and elegance.

I had written thus far, this morning, before going off to the *Guerriere* to accompany Commodore Thompson to a dinner, from which I have just returned, given by Admiral Otway, on board his flag-ship, the *Ganges*, 74. The *Ganges* is a noble vessel, built at Calcutta, and first lunched upon the waters of the proud stream whose name she bears. Every thing on board of her appeared in fine order; and we were received most politely, under the honours due to the commodore, by the admiral, and his captains, Inglefield and Redoubt. The company, besides ourselves, consisted of Captain Bingham and Captain Wilson, of H. B. M. ships *Thetis* and *Tribune*; Captain Gallagher, of U. S. ship *Vandalia*; Mr. Aston, secretary of legation to the British embassy; M. de Silva, private secretary and confidential friend of the emperor; M. Chaves, another distinguished Portuguese; and Lieutenant Ramsey, of the *Ganges*.

The entertainment was handsome and profuse, consisting of many courses served in plate. I met with a luxury indeed; but it was not, dear H—, in the choice viands of a princely table, but in that communion of spirit in which all true Christians delight; and which, while it forms a strong evidence of the divine origin of our religion, is, to those who have tasted it, one of the sweet pledges of coheirship in the joys of eternal life. In ——— I found a most warm-hearted and tender follower of Him who is meek and lowly; and, both before and after being at table, had delightful conversations on topics with which “a stranger intermeddleth not.”

He is an uncommonly fine-looking man, with

noble and benignant expression of countenance, and of high honour in the service. You will know what constitutes one of the surest passports to my heart—tears of manly feeling—especially when springing from the sensibility of a pious bosom : and a dozen times, while we were taking that “sweet counsel” together, which even a royal poet delighted to sing, I saw tears start, and sparkle like diamonds in his eyes. I do not know when I have been more charmed, either with friend or stranger. I feel the tie of brotherhood for ever established between us : and should we never exchange another word, and never meet again, I doubt not that we shall remember each other with interest to the end of our lives.

True piety is lovely, wherever seen ; it irresistibly throws interest and dignity around the most humble and most obscure ; and when it beams brightly in the noble and the brave, it imparts a double lustre to all their honours and their fame. O that it were an ornament more frequently found in the navies both of America and England ; and that there were more, in the services of both, whose high ambition it should be, to add to every other attainment, the spirit which alone can enable them to triumph over ‘the last enemy,’ and, when every earthly laurel will fade, to exclaim, “I have fought a good fight, I have kept the faith ; henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, shall give me in that day !”

The whole party were very agreeable and intelligent. Sir Robert himself treated me with great kindness and attention ; he is most amiable and unassuming, and I was happy to have an opportunity of correcting—evidently to his satisfaction—some misstatements he had received, from authority of some reputation, concerning the mission at the Sandwich Islands, and its influence upon the government and people there.

We remained on board till near 10 o'clock, enjoying the cool of the evening on a delightful stern-gallery. From the time the cloth was removed, we were entertained by a full and noble band of music, whose swelling and harmonious strains nightly float far over the waters of the harbour. But for the lateness of the hour, I would describe to you the serenity and beauty of the bay at night—the gleaming of lights, like extensive illuminations, in every direction along its shore—the sparkling of fire-flies against the darkness of the mountains around, and the brilliancy of the sky above: but for the present, must bid you adieu.

---

## LETTER VIII.

### LEVEE AT THE PALACE.

Praya do Flamengo, Rio de Janeiro,  
April 6th, 1829.

SATURDAY, the 4th inst., was the birth-day of the young queen of Portugal, the eldest child of the emperor, at present in England. Besides a royal salute from all the fortresses and ships of war in the harbour, it was celebrated by a levee at the palace, at one o'clock, and an illumination in the evening.

Mr. Tudor proposed and urged my presentation to the emperor. Commodore Thompson also desired it; and, ascertaining that my gown and scarf, with suitable under-dress, would constitute the usual costume of my profession at court, I determined to attend; and went on board the *Guerriere* in the morning, to dress, and to join the commodore. At 12 o'clock, accompanied by Mr. Armstrong and myself, he left the ship in his gig; Captain Sloat of the *St. Louis*, and Captain Gallagher and Lieutenant Sands of the *Vandalia*, following in another boat.

The palace, as I have already mentioned, forms two sides of the public square fronting the mole.

The rooms of state, and apartments for the private accommodation of the imperial family, form a range of two or three hundred feet, running from the water to the farther side of the square. This part of the pile appears to be more modern, is of a different style of architecture, and in better repair, than that on the other side of the quadrangle, to which it is attached by a covered gallery crossing a street upon arches. It is two and a half stories high, with a narrow section in the middle, both in front on the water, and on the side towards the square, of three stories, surmounted by a pediment—the whole stuccoed, and painted yellow. The windows are large and numerous, and furnished with balconies of iron gilt; and the roof flat. The grand entrance is at the end towards the bay.

As we entered, stood a company of halberdiers, in party-coloured and fantastic livery, with cocked hats and halberds. Many splendid equipages were already arriving; and a large mob had gathered round. A file of soldiers lined the passage, from the central arch—where etiquette required us to be uncovered—to the grand staircase, leading to the apartments above. The staircase itself—at the foot of which the emperor's private band was stationed—we found also closely lined with attendants of the household in full livery, till we reached a vestibule on the landing, and entered a guard-room bristling with spears and battle-axes.

A long suite of rooms, overlooking the square, extends from this apartment the whole length of the building. One of these is styled the diplomatic saloon; being that in which the ambassadors and their attachés, with foreigners to be presented, wait the pleasure of the emperor to receive them: the whole range, however, is open for inspection and promenade.

The splendour of the interior is greater than I

anticipated, from the appearance of the edifice without; the whole exhibiting much of the richness becoming an imperial residence.

Mr. Tudor was in readiness to receive us on our entrance, and most of the ambassadors had arrived. Admiral Otway, and the Baron de Roussin, admiral of the French fleet, with their suites, were already there; and my friend —, with stars and orders like the rest. Lord Strangford (wearing, in addition to various other insignia, one of the richest collars in his sovereign's gift) came in great splendour. His coach was drawn by four superb grays, preceded by two outriders, on spirited animals of the same colour. The Rev. Dr. Walsh, whose journey from Constantinople to England, recently published, has been read with such general interest and pleasure, was with him. He is chaplain to the embassy, and in his lordship's family. We were introduced at the opening of the cortes, exchanged visits early afterwards, and now formed an additional acquaintance.

The intercourse, however, on such occasions, is generally too constrained and formal to be particularly interesting; much like that which takes place while a party is assembling in the drawing-room, before dinner is announced. After an introduction to most of the leading individuals assembled, and an examination of the paintings, I began to be weary of splendid rooms and court dresses, with the full blaze of a torrid sun pouring into the apartments—when the roar of a hundred cannon from the fortresses, and all the men-of-war in the port, the peals of unnumbered bells, and a general buzz on the square, proclaimed the approach of the emperor, and drew us near the balconies, to witness his arrival in state, from San Cristovao, a palace out of town, at which chiefly he resides.

In a few moments a company of cadets, in white uniform, richly faced with scarlet and gold, came

dashing round the corner of the Rua Ouvidor, at the farther end of the square, followed by Pedro I. in a coach heavily gilt, and drawn by eight small but beautiful black horses, in caparisons of gold, with plumes of ostrich feathers on their heads. The prince imperial, the only son of the emperor, a child three years of age, was in the same carriage; while the princesses, one seven and the other five years old, followed in another, drawn by eight horses.

Had there been nothing within my own breast to have saved me from an undue excitement at such a scene, an interlude—which immediately followed the thunder of cannon, the chiming of bells, and the first triumphal air of the band—would most effectually have done it; it was the clanking of the chains of a gang of miserable galley slaves, bearing across the square, in sweat and blood, burdens, besides their galling fetters, fit only for a brute. In the silence of the moment, the gilded ceiling of every magnificent room echoed the “clank—clank—clank” of their chains, in the measured and laborious tread of a hurried march; and made me shudder, as I gazed on them from a balcony, at the contrast they presented to the imperial pageant which, but the moment before, had been whirled so proudly over the same ground.

Mr. Tudor kindly interrupted my musings on this point, by conducting me to Lord Ponsonby, the English resident minister; with whom I had just entered into conversation, when the chamberlain of the empire announced his majesty on the throne, and summoned his lordship to lead the British embassy into the presence chamber. The order of procession is arranged by seniority of residence; and the Baron de Mareschal, the Austrian minister, and his attachés, led the way; followed by the British, Swedish, American, and French representations.

After repassing the guard-room, through a double file of guards, armed with battle-axes and spears, we entered a large apartment, thronged with Brazilian nobles and gentry. These were waiting to follow us to the throne-room, according to their respective rights of precedence; and exhibited in strong contrast every variety of dress, from that of marquesses, and condes, and vizcondes, in the costumes of their ancestors, centuries ago—and of archbishops and bishops, in full canonicals, and clergy of every order in appropriate garb—to the insignificant finery of the humblest gentry, and the hair shirts and sack-cloth of monks with shaven heads and bare feet.

In due time, by the Indian file we had commenced, I reached the door at which my first bow to royalty was to be made; (I beg pardon of their majesties of the Sandwich and Society Islands, if I detract from their prerogatives by the assertion,) and, in accomplishing the reverence, was not so much awed as not to perceive—for no time was to be lost—that the floor was covered with a Turkey carpet of plain crimson, with a medallion in the centre, and a border round the room. On elevating my head, to advance two or three yards farther, I saw that the emperor stood on the upper step of the throne, with the prince next on his left, and the princesses beside their brother. Here, on making a second reverence, each one received the full imperial bow—Mr. Tudor having repeated the usual form, “I have the honour of presenting to your imperial majesty,” &c. &c., in connexion with the name of the individual.

In retiring, I observed that officers of state lined the walls at regular intervals, bearing maces and other ensigns of authority.

Finding it to be no infringement of etiquette to stand near the door and witness the obeisance of the courtiers, I remained for a moment for this purpose. They approached the throne in single procession, as



we had done; and kneeling, kissed the extended hand of the emperor, and each of the children. Five hundred hurried rapidly, in this manner, through the room. There being no empress, ladies at present do not attend court; but two or three of high rank, in the service of the princesses, were seen in a side room, in full dress, with a profusion of diamonds and ostrich plumes in their hair.

I have been much interested in the character of the late empress; pleasing in her person and manners, of superior mental endowments, and amiable and domestic in her habits, she was a universal favourite, and greatly beloved by the people. To other attractive qualities, she added those of great benevolence, and seeming piety of heart; abounding in deeds of private charity, and other good works. Her youth and early fate—being only twenty-eight years of age at her death, two years since—added to rumours of a wounded spirit, from the infidelity and unkindness of her husband, have thrown a touching interest round her memory; and I never pass a convent, situated between Flamengo and the city, in which her remains are deposited, without musing on some affecting incidents in her history which have come to my knowledge. A principal defect in her appears to have been in a negligence of dress—a source of much matrimonial unhappiness in more humble spheres, and often the origin of much of the wretchedness known in that relation. The emperor is young, but now just thirty; and however justly chargeable with a want of tenderness as a husband, is said to be a most affectionate and devoted father. He spends much of his time with his children, and in person daily superintends their education. These interested me more than any thing I saw: they seemed healthy, innocent, and happy; and I almost pitied their probable destiny. The dresses of all three were elegant; but neat

and simple. The boy wore a spencer of blue silk, with white under-clothing, and a cape of broad lace on the neck and shoulders; and the girls were in white muslin, embroidered with gold, without jewels or other ornament; and their hair, of light brown, smoothly combed, and parted in the middle of the forehead. The early loss of their mother—the reputed licentiousness of the father—the errors of their religion, and confessed corruptions of the court—made me look with feelings of sorrow upon them, in their present innocence, and unconsciousness of the moral danger and degradation to which they are exposed. May their fate in this respect be more propitious than has heretofore too often attended an imperial birth!

---

## LETTER IX.

### PUBLIC INSTITUTIONS OF THE CITY.

Praya do Flamengo, Rio de Janeiro.  
April 8th, 1829.

YESTERDAY, after a call at the British ambassador's, Mr. Tudor and myself drove into the city, for the purpose of visiting some of its public institutions; and spent the morning at the chamber of deputies, the public library, the academy of arts, and the national museum.

The deputies, composing the upper house of the imperial legislature, were in session in the vicinity of the palace. The chamber is a spacious and lofty room, of Grecian architecture, in a building appropriated to the purpose; furnished with a throne on the east end, and galleries for spectators under arched colonnades on either side. The seats of the members are in two semicircular rows in front of the throne; the curtains of which were dropt, in the absence of the emperor. The archbishop of Bahia is the president of the chamber, and was seated in

a chair of state, in front of the throne, in the purple robes of his ecclesiastical office. I had been introduced to him on Saturday, at the palace, as one of the most intellectual men of the empire, and of distinguished influence both in church and state. The galleries were crowded with well-dressed citizens, who were listening, as we entered, with great interest, to an animated speech from one of the deputies. The speaker closed his address almost immediately, however; and the chamber adjourned.

The public library is situated in a suite of rooms in the palace. It was brought from Lisbon by John VI. of Portugal, on the flight of the royal family to Brazil, in 1808; and contains upwards of seventy thousand volumes, many of them valuable and ancient works. The books are arranged according to their subjects, in a convenient and handsome manner, in a succession of halls, on two floors; one of which is furnished with a table, reading-desks, and seats for the accommodation of any person, citizen or stranger, who may wish to consult authors in the collection. A canon of the church has the superintendence of the institution, and very politely conducted us through the rooms.

A copy of the first printed edition of the Bible attracted our particular attention—it is on vellum, and in excellent order. On the title-page, the then novelty of the execution is proclaimed, by a declaration, in Latin, that this volume is not written with a pen, but impressed, according to the marvellous invention of John Faustus.\* The most splendid work exhibited to us, was a folio edition of the travels of Prince Maximilian of Germany, in Brazil. The whole typography is in the finest style of the art. It is richly embellished with coloured engravings, possessing all the delicacy and high finish of painting, and presenting admirable illustrations of Brazilian scenery, character, and costume. To one

who has never witnessed the splendid tints of sky and landscape, as exhibited here, and in some other parts of the world, the colouring would be thought too highly wrought, and gorgeous—bordering on that which would be called gaudy and unnatural—but it is strictly true to nature.

We found Dr. Walsh in one of the apartments; and, after a general survey of the collection, passed some time in agreeable and instructive conversation with him, and the gentleman acting as our conductor.

The academy of arts is situated in a narrow street near the centre of the city. The exterior of the building is neat and classical; but, on alighting, we found the whole interior undergoing a thorough repair, and the exhibition of paintings and statuary for the present closed. In one room only there were a few pupils, receiving lessons from masters, and copying various studies.

A large painting was standing upside-down against one of the walls, which, on a closer view, we perceived to represent the coronation of the emperor. Its chief merit, like David's Coronation of Josephine, consists in the number of portraits from life which it contains. Every head on the canvass, it is said, possesses this interest. We could form no opinion of its pretensions as a painting, from its position, and a serious injury it has recently sustained by a fall. By many, this disaster is not attributed to accident. It was the intention of the emperor to have it placed in the imperial chapel; and it is believed that some republican spirit, opposed to the exhibition of the pageant to the public gaze, sought an opportunity of secretly cutting the cord by which it was suspended in the academy.

As we were joining our carriage again, a large Lancasterian school in the vicinity attracted my attention; and we entered it for a few moments.

"Hope for Brazil," seemed in my eye to be inscribed on its walls and portal ; and I fancied that a different expression was to be seen on the bright faces of the hundred boys composing it, from any I had before observed among the children. Several schools of the kind are established within the precincts of the city ; and the monotonous tones of one, in the direction of Flamengo, had several times before fallen on my ear as I passed, with the charm of music, amidst the din of less grateful sounds.

The national museum is in a large building facing the *Praca d'Acclamacao*. It contains many valuable specimens in natural history, and the various departments of science—with some tolerable paintings, numerous articles of curiosity, &c., arranged in an extensive suite of rooms. The whole establishment is creditable to the government ; and I regretted to learn that many of the most valuable articles are about to be removed to the private cabinet of the emperor. Here, too, the building is undergoing repairs ; and we were admitted only in courtesy to the American minister. The president and officers are all ecclesiastics : a young secretary, in a richly embroidered gown of black satin, with ruffles of lace at the wrist, received and politely attended us through the several rooms. A canon of the church, officially connected with the establishment, also joined us ; and with much civility extended a general invitation to me, to visit the institution at my pleasure, as long as I should remain in Rio.

The mineralogical department is uncommonly rich ; not more so, however, than might be anticipated in this empire of precious stones and diamonds. In the cabinet of birds, also, there is a magnificent display of plumage ; presenting, in some of the native specimens, brilliancy of hues, in a beauty of contrast beyond the art of man to rival ; and of which, as of the flowers of the field, it may truly be said, that

“Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.” Among them is a fine collection of the Toucan, *Ramphastos Tucanus*, a Brazilian bird.

The relics of former native splendour, pointed out to us as the dresses, ornaments, &c. of the aboriginal chieftains, particularly attracted my attention. Several coronets of feathers, and other decorations for the head, are truly superb, and would not be thought deficient, either in taste or richness, on the brow of Don Pedro himself. They exhibit a neatness and elegance surpassing every thing of the kind I have seen in the South Seas; and bear testimony to the advanced state of civilization and refinement, in which the original possessors of the South American continent were found.

I could not gaze on these primitive insignia of the regal state of the first monarchs of the soil, without sighing at a recollection of their fate. Too much reason indeed had they to desecrate the creed of the christian, and to curse the white man's name; for to them they too early became associated only with unrivalled exhibitions of avarice, licentiousness, and cruelty. Not all the pages of fiction and tragedy present any thing so affecting to my mind, as the history of the treatment and extermination of the natives of the West Indies, and continental seaboard. Had the first visitors to these distant shores brought with them the purity, spirituality, and exalted benevolence of the religion they professed; and, by the mildness and meekness of its spirit won the confidence and secured the affections of the people to the word of God; O how different would have been the record of those days! and how glorious the scene which might now have been witnessed, in the civilization, piety, and high attainment of populous kingdoms, where yet are savage wilds!

But they came not with the spirit that breathes “peace on earth and good will to man,” but with

## RIO DE JANEIRO

that of the god of this world, which seeketh only the things that are its own; and, in place of salvation and joy, desolation and death marked their way. Their standard, instead of the dove with the olive branch from Heaven, should have been the fearful boa of the regions they despoiled, in a full display of his gigantic folds, sending forth pestilence with every breath, and gathering destruction around all within reach of his terrific power!

## LETTER \*X.

BOTAFOGO, ST. CRISTOVAO, AND THE EPISCOPAL  
PALACE OF RIO.

Praya do Flamengo, at Rio de Janeiro,  
April 13th, 1829.

AFTER the visits described in the preceding letter, I went for an hour or two on board the *Guerriere*. It was dark when I left again for Mr. Tudor's, and I had an opportunity of observing the city at night. The only spectacle of interest I met was a splendid funeral in the Rua do Ouvidor. Attendants, bearing large flambeaux, preceded and flanked a long procession of ecclesiastics followed by a train of carriages. The corpse was carried in an open landau, covered with black, and drawn by four horses in caparisons of the same, with black ostrich plumes on their heads. I followed the procession to a chapel on the palace square, brilliantly illuminated, where mass for the dead was performed.

The coffin, which was a straight box with a triangular lid, covered with black velvet, and ornamented with gold lace, on being removed from the carriage to an elevated platform in the centre of the chancel, was laid entirely open; disclosing the body in full court dress, with chapeau, and sword, and several stars and decorations of rank. The individual was of high distinction; as I perceived many of the

#### DEATH OF INFANTS.

officers of state and principal noblemen of the empire present, besides numbers of persons in rich naval and military uniforms. There appeared to be little solemnity on the minds of a majority; much whispering and smiling, with nods of recognition; and the whole service seemed to be viewed more as a matter of parade than a devotional rite.

When children under seven years of age die, their bodies, in full dress, are exposed in procession through the streets; the cheeks being painted, the head crowned with artificial flowers, and the whole figure sometimes dressed in imitation of an angel, with expanded wings of tinsel and gauze. In the happy persuasion that,

"With souls enlarged to angels' size."

such are only translated to the blessedness of heaven, their death is not regarded as a just cause of sorrowing, but of joy.

Thursday was a fine day, and Commodore Thompson sent his gig for Mr. Tador, to visit the Guerriere, where he was received under a salute of seventeen guns. On leaving for the shore again, we went on board the Ganges; and afterwards called on the admiral of the French fleet, the Baron de Roussin, of the Duquesne seventy-four; a fine-looking and polished man, of superior talent, and much literary and scientific attainment. He was recently a member of the ministry at home; and, in his visit to Rio, is clothed, for a special object in relation to the French claims, with the double powers of diplomatist and naval commander.

The cabins of the Duquesne are admirably fitted up: a splendid portrait of the baroness and one of her children, screened by a light curtain of silk, forms a conspicuous ornament in that furnished as a cabinet, presenting a silent testimony of conjugal affection, which I always delight to notice.

The next morning, after a call on the gentlemen



of the French legation in our neighbourhood, we extended our walk as far as Lord Ponsonby's, at Botafogo. This beautiful bay seemed more than ever to possess the features of a noble lake embosomed in magnificent scenery. A stranger, in gazing upon it from almost any point of view along its widely-curving shores, would think it entirely land-locked, as much so as if a hundred miles from the sea. It is a favourite residence with foreigners; and many fine mansions skirt its borders, interspersed with showy portals, leading to others more retired, in a lovely little valley sweeping inland from it.

The emperor has a cottage close by the water, on the western side, a neat but unpretending building; with a delightful garden and shrubbery, gay in the luxuriance of its bloom and beauty. Indeed, nothing can surpass the richness and variety of growth seen on every hand; and wherever the eye wanders, after leaving the precincts of the city, it falls on a world of splendours, in the productions and colouring of the vegetable kingdom.

I was particularly impressed with this characteristic of the scenery about Rio, in a stroll over the Gloria Hill the same evening. This is an enchanting spot, nearly surrounded by the sea, the fretting of whose waters is ever heard around its base; and while it commands at almost every point magnificent views of the city, bay, and mountains, is itself covered with a thousand beauties in tree and flower: splendid liburnums and acacias, cashews and palms, orange, citron, and lime trees, with bananas and coffee, &c. &c., enclosed in hedges of myrtle and mimosa, interspersed with jessamine and roses, and festooned with creepers and various parasitical plants.

Perceiving a gateway open, as I descended the hill, leading through some delightful grounds, separated from a mansion by a hedge of roses and a light railing, I ventured in; leaving it for some servants

near the offices to apprise me of the intrusion, if it should be deemed such. Bows and looks of civility put me at ease, under the privilege of entrée thus assumed; and I rambled by a gravel walk a half mile through a young paradise of fragrance and beauty, to a temple on the edge of a hill, overlooking a beautiful vale with a rapid stream in the centre; while the section of an aqueduct, the city, and the bay, were in the distance.

The grounds and mansion, I believe, are those of the Baronessa de Campos, a distinguished noblesse, with a fortune of some forty millions of dollars. And in the enjoyment of the prospect around, from the delightful resting-place in which I was seated, I could not but recur in thought—however unworthy of a pretension to the character drawn—to Cowper's lines on "The freeman whom the truth makes free:"

He looks abroad into the varied field  
Of nature, and though poor perhaps, compared  
With those whose mansions glitter in his sight,  
Calls the delightful scenery all his own  
His are the mountains, and the valleys his,  
And the resplendent rivers. His to enjoy  
With a propriety that none can feel,  
But who, with filial confidence inspired,  
Can lift to heaven an unpresumptuous eye,  
And smiling say, "My Father made them all!"

There is a public garden in the city, open on the eastern side to the bay, and in full view of the Gloria Hill. It contains several avenues of stately trees, with broad walks of gravel beneath; and has considerable beauty of more lowly growth, in a variety of plants and flowers indigenous to the tropics. It is also ornamented with a fountain, and a couple of obelisks. The fountain, however, appears to have been long inactive, and the whole garden seems rather in a neglected state, and not much frequented by the inhabitants of the city.

On Saturday, Mr. Tudor took me a drive to the palace of St. Cristovão, a principal residence of the emperor, three miles west of the city. The road to it is broad and fine, well lighted with lamps at night, and thickly lined with habitations. St. Cristovão was formerly the country-house of a wealthy merchant; and is an inferior-looking building, of two stories, in Moorish style, painted yellow, with white pilasters and cornices; and having a square tower at one corner, surmounted by a kind of clumsy dome. It would not compare, in architectural beauty, with the country residences of many gentlemen in the United States. A large court-yard extends down a gentle declivity in front, separated from the lawn by a gateway, with a colonnade and lodge on either side, of Portland stone, after the model of the duke of Northumberland's, at Zion House on the Thames. Though light and handsome, it is entirely out of keeping with the general style of the mansion; and, the portals being shut, and no drive leading through them, the entrance being by a plain gate not far distant, the whole has an incongruous and awkward effect.

The site of the mansion itself, however, is delightful, commanding one or two fine stretches of the bay, with extensive views of a beautiful and highly cultivated country, spotted with cottages and country seats, the whole encircled by wild and fantastic mountains, at a distance to give the finest effect to their forms and colouring. A new and lofty addition to the palace, in Grecian architecture, is making on one wing; and I think it not improbable that it is the design of the emperor, after it shall be finished, to tear down the old structure, and rebuild the whole in a style corresponding to that now finishing; in which case, the edifice will be noble, and worthy of the scenery by which it is surrounded.

The emperor having gone into the city, we did not

enter the palace; in which, I am told, there is nothing more worthy of notice than in the residences of most persons of wealth and rank.

It was our intention, on our return, to have visited the Protestant burial ground, situated on the bay between St. Cristovaõ and the city; but, designing also to call on the bishop of Rio, we were fearful of making the hour too late, should we prolong our ride; and were under the necessity of passing by. It is a spot necessarily of interest to every Protestant foreigner, and is said to surpass in loveliness almost every other locality on the shores of these charming waters.

The episcopal palace is situated on the summit of an abrupt and elevated hill, in the midst of the city, enjoying fine air, and a variety of splendid views. The ascent to it is by a winding paved way, too steep for comfort in a carriage, either in going up or coming down, and we alighted at the foot and walked. The building is an old monastic quadrangle of stone, plastered and whitewashed. On ascending to the second story, we were shown into a large square hall, containing one or two heavy old tables, and two settees, covered with embossed leather, of an antiquity that might entitle them to a place in a museum.

The bishop received us in his study, from which a country curé, an humble and serious looking man, passed out, and took a seat near the door, as we were introduced by a secretary. The dignitary is a mild and agreeable-looking old gentleman, of pleasing and cordial manners, and unostentatious in his whole appearance. The room in which we were, and an adjoining one open to our observation, were almost without furniture; a shabby writing table or two, with a few old armed-chairs, constituting the whole; while bare walls and uncovered floors threw a comfortless air around. Instead of the luxury

which I had anticipated, at least in a degree, in the residence of the first metropolitan of the empire, every thing in the establishment was marked with the most primitive and self-denied simplicity.

He is a liberal-minded and upright man, and, from the purity and benevolence of his character, very popular and highly venerated in the city, and throughout the diocese. His face is set against vice in all its forms, and wherever seen. The licentiousness of the court is openly reproved by him; and he visits the palace, I am told, only when commanded by the emperor. He offered to dismiss our carriage, and send us home in the evening in his own, if we would remain to a lenten dinner with him; but we declined the civility.

In the course of conversation, he made many inquiries about the Sandwich Islands, their language, former habits, improvements, and present state; professed his interest in the general extension of christianity, his respect for the character of the Moravian and other missionaries, with an assurance of his love for all defenders of the Cross—saying, that his library contained the works of many distinguished Protestants; those of Lardner, Butler, Warburton, &c. At the end of half an hour, we took our leave, gratified with this specimen of the clergy of Brazil.

## LETTER XI.

### PRISONS, JUDICIARY, AND SLAVE TRADE.

Praya do Flamengo, at Rio de Janeiro,  
April 14th, 1829.

In leaving the episcopal palace on Saturday, we walked near one of the city prisons, the grated windows of which allow a full view of the interior of two of the apartments. The spectacle presented was truly

affecting: criminals of every age, from beardless boys to gray-headed men; of every colour, from the jet of Congo to the fair skin of Germany; and probably of every crime—were seen crowded together in haggard filth and rags. Many of them appeared to be hardened villains, scowling upon us in satanic impudence, in return to the look of compassion given to their misery; and I drew back in horror from the sight of such a den, no less the receptacle, than it must necessarily be the school, of vice.

It presents a fair sample, I am told, of the prison discipline, not only of the empire, but of the whole southern continent; and shows how wide a field there is, in its fermenting kingdoms, for the philanthropic exertions of one breathing the spirit, and clothed in the mantle, of a Howard.

The whole judiciary of the empire is in a state worthy of the darkest ages of Portugal; and to effect a reform, to the praise of the emperor, has been a leading feature in his late addresses to the cortes. At present, there is no process of form in an arrest, no habeas corpus, and no notice of the witnesses to appear against the accused. The time of trial is left entirely to the accuser; while the subject of the arrest, whether innocent or guilty, is in oppressive confinement, without an allowance of food, or any means of bringing his innocence to a legal test.

But for the charities of the monastic establishments, from which a daily pittance of food to prisoners is served, many doubtless would constantly thus perish; and under the persecution only, it might be, of an unprincipled enemy.

A glimpse at a still more abhorrent and tremendous evil was caught, in the same vicinity, while crossing the end of a street appropriated to newly arrived and unsold slaves. \* It is here the emaciated and half-starved cargoes are deposited from the stifling holds of the slave-ships, and daily exposed

to bruta. examination, till a purchaser is found. The sight is such, to an unaccustomed eye, as unavoidably to sicken the heart, and unnerve the soul; and hitherto, at the strong solicitation of others, I have avoided it.

The number of slaves brought into this port has, for the last ten years, amounted to more than twenty thousand annually; and this year it is probable there will be three times that number, for no less than thirteen thousand have already been entered since the first of January. Ships are daily arriving, crowded with them; and almost at any time, gangs just landed, and nearly naked, may be seen, with their drivers, in one part or another of the city.

The streets of Rio are in general narrow, and regular, notwithstanding the hills jutting in at the sides, and rising from its centre. These, indeed, are highly ornamental; and having their abrupt acclivities in most places covered thickly with the verdure of trees, creepers, and rich parasitical plants, they rise upon the eye, from various points of view, both in the streets and habitations, in near and refreshing beauty.

The city contains a population of 200,000, and is an active and business-like place, resounding with the hum of varied mechanical industry; while in its numerous shops are exposed all the luxuries produced by foreign arts and manufacture. Still, to one accustomed to the general elegance, neatness, and purity of such cities as Boston and New York, Philadelphia and Baltimore, and a hundred others in our own happy land, and to the intelligence and respectability exhibited by the various classes seen in their streets, Rio, with all the magnificence of its scenery, the superior advantages of its location, the beauty of much of its architecture, and the wealth of many of its inhabitants, is a most

disgusting place; more so, in most of its streets, than even the lowest haunts of poverty and vice in New York or Philadelphia.

Nothing contributes more to the offensiveness of a first impression, than the large proportion which the half-naked negroes and mongrels, of every tint and degree of blood, make of the persons seen in the streets. The slaves in general, though often tugging at burdens on cars and low trucks, in sweat and dust, till every muscle is strained to the utmost, are said to be more kindly treated than in most slave-holding countries. \* The Catholic religion affords them the relief of great numbers of holidays, besides Sunday. Those engaged in light employments, such as vending various articles of merchandise and trade, which they bear along the streets in trays and baskets upon their heads, and those keeping the stalls in the market-places, are often seen in groups, singing and dancing for the amusement of the crowds around. Still, in view of the nature of their condition, their number to the eye of the stranger is fearfully great; and were I an inhabitant of the city, there would be times at least at which I should tremble, in the fear of witnessing the development of a tragedy like that of St. Domingo.

A safeguard to such a catastrophe exists, in a degree perhaps, in the extensive amalgamation, by marriage and blood, of the white and coloured population; and in an equality allowed in many respects to the free blacks. Numbers of the soldiers are of this class, and I have met individuals of high office in the army, and others ordained to the services of the priesthood, of as jet a skin, and as pure African blood, as any in the country. Still, there is ample room for apprehension on the point, and to dread eventually some fearful retribution at the hands of the afflicted and oppressed.



Even if spared the horrors of an insurrection of the slaves, not only the city, but the whole empire is far from being in safety against another, which may be ranked next to it in bloodshed and ruin—revolt and civil war among an ignorant and heterogeneous people. The foundations of the empire, from all I can learn, are far from being sure. It is morally and politically corrupt, and filled with ignorance and superstition; and the leaven of republicanism is scattered so extensively through the dominion, that it is not improbable that Brazil, in her order, will be the theatre of that turning and overturning, which for twenty years has kept the neighbouring states in agitation and distress.

This no philanthropist or enlightened politician, acquainted with the elements of the population, could wish to see; for it would only be to impoverish the empire, and to deluge the land with its best blood, without meliorating the state of the people in general, or securing to them any immunities, worth the sacrifice, which they do not now enjoy.

Every native-born citizen in the United States knows and feels, as well as believes, the republican form of government to be the best and most noble, for a people prepared, in morals and education, for its high privileges and mild dominion; yet I have met none, who, after a personal observation of the countries in South America, are not decidedly of the opinion, that a perpetual executive, with more than republican powers, is best suited to their present condition. And this must continue to be the case till knowledge is much more generally diffused than it now is; and till pure morals, and an enlightened piety, take place of the vice and superstition which too extensively reign.

Two objects of particular interest, in the vicinity of Rio, remained yet unvisited—the peak of the Corcovado, commanding a sublime prospect of both

land and sea; and the botanic gardens, founded by the late king, John VI. of Portugal, during his residence in Brazil. The ascent of the Corcovado is tedious, and the weather, at the summit, from the clouds which gather round it, uncertain; which circumstances, added to the danger of the way, except to an armed party, from negroes who have fled from bondage to the fastnesses of the mountain, and are driven for subsistence to theft and robbery, have led me to relinquish the expectation of making it. Impediments of the kind do not exist in a ride to the gardens, five miles distant, in the direction of Botafogo; and this morning, Commodore Thompson, Lieut. Hull, Dr. Osborne, and Mr. Armstrong, from the *Guerriere*, and Lieut. Downing, late of the *Vandalia*, came on shore for the purpose of making the excursion. Dr. Walsh, of the British embassy, and myself, made up the whole number of our party.

Carriages and horses were at the door by eleven o'clock, and the company arranged according to the choice of each one in the mode of riding. Dr. Walsh, after ascertaining that I was accustomed to pedestrian excursions, proposed that we should walk; to which I readily agreed, and we followed at our leisure the cavalcade in advance.

The heat of the sun was great, however; and before we had reached Botafogo, Dr. Walsh became quite indisposed—so much so, that we thought it best to seek a carriage. As there was none to be hired in the vicinity, we called on the English clergyman of Rio, whose residence was near. He was exceedingly kind, and willing to assist us in our dilemma as far as in his power; but he had no carriage, and but one horse. This we thankfully accepted, agreeing, with a laugh, "to ride and tie" for the remaining distance; my friend taking the pony for the first stage, and I keeping pace by his

side. He is a learned and scientific man, and an amiable and pleasing companion; and notwithstanding the discomfiture of the onset, we had an interesting, and, to myself, delightful morning.

It was so late before I arrived at the garden, that our party had returned; and, fearful of keeping the dinner of the whole in waiting, I took but a hasty and imperfect survey of it.

The whole is laid out in extensive squares planted with trees, now grown beautiful and lofty. It was not designed for indigenous plants, but for the most valuable of Oriental growth—especially for the tea, which the king obtained from China, with a number of families skilled in its cultivation. The plants have thrived well, but most of the Chinese are dispersed; and little tea has yet, I believe, been cured. The cinnamon, nutmeg, clove, allspice, camphor, &c. are growing luxuriantly, as if in their native soil. A fine stream, passing through a lovely valley above, waters the gardens. The attendants were polite and obliging, readily furnishing me with specimens in flower and seed of the choicest plants, and offering refreshments of nuts and fruit; and I had to regret that a day, instead of a half hour, was not at my command, for a more satisfactory view of the whole.

## LETTER XII.

### CHARACTER OF THE HON. WILLIAM TUDOR.

*U. S. Ship Guerriere, Rio de Janeiro,  
April 16th, 1829.*

THE whole party visiting the botanic gardens yesterday, dined at Flamengo on their return; and as the *Guerriere* was expected to sail early this morning, I was under the necessity, in the evening, of bidding farewell with them to Mr. Tudor, and of rejoining the ship.

This I did, with a degree of regret that might surprise you, considering the short personal intercourse we have enjoyed, were you uninformed of his exalted worth, and the many charms of heart and mind which nature and education have unitedly thrown around him. He is one of the most able, extensively informed, and truly amiable men, I have ever met. Received by him with the cordiality of a brother, and admitted at once to the confidence of his bosom, I discovered, during the fortnight of our companionship, traits so noble and so fascinating, as to excite an admiration I have seldom known for one not decidedly spiritual in his character; and to win an attachment I can never forget.

With his literary reputation, you are well acquainted. The high respectability of his family, and the political and literary distinction of his father, afforded every facility for the development and cultivation of his powers; and, after completing a general course of classical and scientific studies at the university of Harvard, in his native state, he enjoyed the additional advantage of travelling for several years in Europe, and of intimate access to many of the most learned and polished circles of the period.

Possessed of a pure and high-toned patriotism, the benefits of his education and residence abroad were, on his return to the United States, made to bear directly upon the letters and literature of our country, by the establishment and able support of the *North American Review*; a publication which has accomplished more, perhaps, in the formation of a correct public taste at home, and in the elevation of our literary character abroad, than any other.

By his "*Letters on the Eastern States*," he became the pioneer in a field of observation on nature, men, and manners, in a great degree original; and

in the cultivation of which he has been followed by others of our countrymen, greatly to the advancement of our national reputation. And while the "Life of Otis" may be referred to, not only as an evidence of his talent and industry, but as embodying for posterity an interesting and valuable portion of American history; the stranger and the citizen may for ages point to the granite shaft on Bunker's Hill, as a monument of honour and glory, having its origin in the classic taste and patriotic conceptions of his active genius.

After having appeared successfully in public life, as a member of the legislature of Massachusetts, he commenced his diplomatic career in 1823, as consul general for the United States in Peru; to which office was afterwards united that of political agent of our government in that country. During a residence of five years in Lima, in a most distracted and fluctuating state of public affairs, he did high honour to the American name and character.

His departure from Peru, on receiving the appointment of charge d'affaire at the court of Brazil, was deeply regretted, not only by his countrymen and other foreign residents, but by every class of the native society; and especially by the authorities in power, who had learned so to appreciate his merits as to have solicited from his government the continuance of his diplomatic relation to them.

The negotiations in which he was called to enter on his arrival at Rio de Janeiro, were, from peculiarity of circumstances, exceedingly delicate and arduous; and required, in their successful management, a high degree of diplomatic address. Individuals most deeply interested in the result, had little expectation of the early adjustment of the difficulties existing: but by the amenity and open-heartedness which so peculiarly characterize him, added to a determined firmness and energy of pur-

pose, he, in a very short time, not only secured indemnity for the spoliations committed on the property of American citizens during the late war between Buenos Ayres and Brazil, but also negotiated a treaty of commerce, on principles very desirable, and greatly to the advancement of our future trade with the empire.

But it is not the distinction he has attained either as a scholar or a diplomatist, that has won the attachment I feel. These might lead me to respect and honour him, but, in themselves, are insufficient to secure my love. This has been gained by qualities of heart and mind, which the world has few opportunities of observing; and which always shine the brightest, when farthest removed from the public gaze.

To a simplicity of heart that exhibits itself in his whole manner, he adds a modesty that throws fresh charms around the virtues with which it is associated; and which, while it shrinks from every thing like adulation, is the last to appropriate to itself an unexpected honour, or even to claim a just meed of praise.

Familiarity with the details of historical and biographical learning, and the whole circle of polite literature, an intimate acquaintance with many eminent men of different countries, at the present day; the mastery of the most polished languages of Europe; and a fund of original anecdote, enriched by brilliancy of wit—render him a most instructive and delightful companion.

With the immediate prospect of visiting Peru, that republic often became the subject of conversation. During his residence there, he has made himself master of a fund of knowledge respecting its history, statistics, physiology, &c., which, I am happy to learn, he intends, as early as possible, to place before the public.

But that which, above every thing else, fixes the seal of endearment on the attachment of those who

have the happiness of his friendship, is the breathing of a heart filled with the kindest feelings, and warm with every generous affection. The friendship of an honoured and beloved mother, long intimacy with Mrs. Stewart, and a recent visit to the lady of R. H. Gardiner, Esq., of Gardiner, in Maine, a sister to whom he is no less strongly attached, seemed in our intercourse to bring these objects of affection within the limits both of sight and conversation : and his happiest moments were those in which they were thus in imagination before him.

With the fondness of an admiring brother, he tells me, that all in Peru, who became acquainted with Mrs. Stewart (when Commodore Stewart, in the Franklin 74, commanded the U. S. squadron there,) regarded her with great affection and admiration. Her warm benevolence, he remarks, and a credulous simplicity, which took alike for reality the blandness of their climate and the soft courteousness of their address, conduced to this effect.

You will not wonder that I regret to bid adieu to the society and hospitality of such a friend. There seems nothing wanting in him to a perfection of character rarely to be met with, but a living and spiritual piety. To the possession of this, while he pays every respect to the services and precepts of our religion, he makes no special pretension. Our conversation often embraced the faith and the hope of the gospel : and my prayer is that he may speedily add to every other virtue, that grace which would crown the whole ; and which, while it imparts fresh honour to every attainment of the passing time, casts the light of immortal glory on all that is to come.

His attentions have followed me to the ship, in a packet of letters to his most distinguished friends in Peru ; accompanied by a note filled with salutations of interest and affection.

## Passage round Cape Horn.

### LETTER XIII.

#### DEPARTURE FROM RIO DE JANEIRO.

U. S. ship *Guarriere*, at Sea,  
April 20th, 1829.

OUR expectation of getting to sea on the 15th inst., the day first proposed, was disappointed; and we did not weigh anchor till four o'clock on the following morning of the 16th. I left my cot when it was scarce light, for the enjoyment of a farewell view of the city and bay. Every thing on land and water appeared freshness and brilliancy.

A mingled tint from the clouds fell widely and richly on all below, till the sunbeams, bursting from behind the mountains, gilded the whole scene, and illumined as with fire the turrets, and domes, and windows of the churches, convents, and villas crowning the hills, and widely scattered over the country. New effect was at the same moment given by the chiming of a thousand bells, in cathedral, chapel, and monastery, proclaiming widely, by a merry peal, the arrival of a principal festival in the church of Rome.

With the rising sun, a land breeze began gently to fill our topsails; while the song in the heaving of the lead, and the plash of oars, and echoings of oar-locks, from a long line of barges, sent by the French admiral to assist our own boats in towing the *Guerriere* into the channel, told that we were moving.

A delightful breeze springing up, we soon passed the Sugar-Loaf, and in an hour or two gained a fine offing. At sunset we were fifty miles distant, but the



coast in the immediate vicinity of the metropolis, still in sight, and even traces of its singular wildness and sublimity discernible.

Notwithstanding the high interest of my visit at Rio, I felt myself happy in being once more amidst my charge on board ship; and no sounds I had for many days heard, came more cheeringly and welcome to my heart, than those of the boatswain's pipe, calling all hands to prayers, the first evening we were at sea. The retirement and quiet of my little room, with opportunities for reading and reflection, afford a grateful change, after the excitement of the varied scenes witnessed on shore; and I rejoice to say, too, that the ship's company seem equally pleased. In port I saw little of the crew except on the sabbath, and am cheered by the satisfaction they manifest in the renewal of a daily intercourse.

With the six or eight members of the church, and others who are decidedly religious, I have frequent conversations, to encourage them by the apostolic exhortation, "Whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, if there be any praise, think on these things;" and to incite them to prayer for the ungodly companions by whom they are surrounded.

Besides these, there are others on board who are deeply serious; so much so as to be filled with penitential sorrow, and eagerly to seek my instruction and advice. The careless eye, it is true, might not discover them in the crowd of profane, in which they dwell; but our heavenly Father in mercy makes them known, for encouragement to be instant in season and out of season, in persuading men, "in Christ's stead, to be reconciled unto God."

On the first day at sea, two young men, with whom I had never conversed on religion, requested that I would meet them on deck for that purpose,

after the setting of the night-watch; and on the succeeding evening I had a long interview, for the first time, with a warm-hearted young christian of the main-top. He has been pious for two or three years, but diffidence kept him from making himself known at an earlier period.

In a young Hercules of the crew, a favourite of the officers and whole ship's company, there is one too, not only "almost," but "altogether persuaded to be a christian." For some weeks past he has shown himself to be personally interested, often hanging about the guns and other places, near which I have been in conversation with his shipmates.

A short time ago he ventured to say, in an under tone, "It is my first watch on deck to-night, sir; and I should be happy if you would be kind enough to meet me for a short time before you go below;" a blush of embarrassment accompanying the request, showed the effort with which it had been made, and told it was no trifling subject on which he desired to consult me.

On keeping the appointment, I found him to be so earnest in religion, that it might already be said of him, "Behold he prayeth!" and while his eager inquiry was, "Sir, what must I do to be saved?" I learned that he had fully resolved henceforth "to die unto sin, and to live unto righteousness," if haply he might by any means be saved.

I have conversed with him several times since, and only last night we had a long interview: He is now in the enjoyment of what I trust will prove "a good hope through grace;" and at last be "an anchor of the soul both sure and stedfast, which shall enter into that within the veil." In the belief that he is born of the Spirit of God, and a new creature in Christ Jesus, his whole face beams with peace and joy, while every look exhibits the meekness and gentleness of a child.

He is an uneducated young man, but of good sense and stable character; and seems already to possess clear conceptions of the faith of mind, and affections of heart, essential to genuine piety: so truly has the christian poet said of the word of life:

"When once it enters to the mind,  
It sheds such light abroad,  
The meanest souls instruction find,  
And raise their thoughts to God."

In this case I have taken great satisfaction. It has been unmingled with extravagance either of sentiment or feeling. His convictions of sin have not been particularly deep, though sufficiently so to make him perfectly sensible of the necessity in which he stands, from guilt, of a Redeemer for the and to have filled him with penitence and humility view of the follies and vices of his life. And in that "he knows in whom he has believe," and rejoices in the hopes of the gospel, there is the same temperance and soberness of affection; though his bosom is evidently filled with light and gladness.

Two others, at least, are in like manner turning from the error of their ways; and while my own heart humbles itself in grateful thanksgiving before God, I trust there has been joy in heaven over the repentance of sinners here.

There is said to be much less profaneness on board than formerly; the number who no longer drink their allowance of grog, is increasing; and many things indicate an improvement in the general state of morals among us. Commodore Thompson and Captain Smith both extend every aid to the full discharge of the duties of my station; and while it is manifest that I have won the confidence and attachment of the crew, all my fellow-officers, I am happy to say, appear to regard with favour the attempts, by the distribution of tracts and conversation, in addition to the services of the sabbath and even-

ing prayers, to enlist the feelings of the seamen in favour of virtue and piety.

The Commodore has very kindly expressed his wish, that any of the crew, who are desirous of visiting me in the state-room, may feel themselves at perfect liberty to do so, whenever the duties of their station, and the circumstances of the ship, will permit.

How thankful, dear H—, ought I to be for this various encouragement—encouragement beyond the most sanguine anticipations I had dared to indulge! In myself I am unworthy of the blessing; still was never more alive to the goodness and condescension of the Most High, in imparting not only a desire to be useful and “to do good unto all as I have opportunity,” but in affording also the means and a facility for putting that desire in exercise.

If, at any time, thoughts and affections, connected with a separation from those I love best, come upon me with a power that leads me to exclaim, “Can it be possible that it was my duty thus to tear myself from them?” I have only to look around me on these wanderers of the flock of Christ, the few who “hear his voice, and follow him,” and on the guilty hundreds still straying far from this good Shepherd, and remember, that I have “to care for their souls;” when, with humble and grateful acknowledgment, I am made to feel, that I am led by my Master, and that his Spirit, for good to the souls of others at least, is upon me.

Whatever my own true character in the sight of God may be, scenes, in which are found

“The hopes and fears, and joys and sympathies,”

of an heir of immortal glory, just bounding into being, have more attractions for my heart than all the splendours of a court, and the fascination of mind and manners thrown round its brightest circles; and, if I know myself, I had rather be a successful mes-

senger of "the tidings of great joy" to the most obscure sailor on board this ship, than,

"Bereft of these most high capacities,"

to appear an ambassador with full powers in the proudest empire of christendom.

I do not recollect ever to have felt more strongly the desire of securing to myself the blessing of him "who converteth a sinner from the error of his ways," than since I have been with this crew; and my daily prayer, as well as heart's desire, unto God is, that they may be saved.

May the grace of God be sufficient for me! and, in mercy to myself and to his creatures, may I be made the happy instrument of feeding, with the provision of the gospel, the few here, who are of that "flock which shall yet inherit the kingdom," of reclaiming the lost and wandering, and of binding up the broken-hearted!

#### LETTER XIV.

##### PASSAGE ROUND CAPE HORN.

U. S. Ship *Guerrick*, at Sea,  
May 23d, 1859.

The wintry weather of the southern hemisphere commenced early with us after leaving port. A few bright and balmy days, with fair weather and full-spread canvass, and a moon at night riding in brightness through a soft and tranquil sky, were followed, on the first sabbath morning, by a red and lurid horizon—a hard wind, with scud and squalls from the south—and a heavy, rolling sea, upon our bows.

For three weeks afterwards we were in a succession of strong gales directly against us, and reduced

almost every night, to close-reefed main, and fore-sails, with housed guns, and the deadlights all in, by way of preparation for "the whirlwind and the storm."

It was not till the 13th inst., nearly four weeks after leaving Rio, that we reached the latitude of the Falkland Islands, and, after two days' calm, ran past the group, but not in sight of land, with a strong wind, at the rate of ten and twelve miles the hour. Great numbers of albatros, with flocks of hawks, and a beautiful ice-pigeon, probably from New Shetland, which lighted on our capstan, hungry and exhausted, proclaimed an approach to the Cape; and on the morning of the 15th we made Staten Land, forty miles distant.

The time of day, and manner in which the island came in sight, the weather and temperature, the doubling of Cape St. John, and coasting of the southern shore, and the bearings and outline of the principal points, afterwards, were all so much the same as when on board the Thames, in 1823, that every thought was closely associated with the first sight of this distant and inhospitable region; and it seemed but a day since, hanging on my arm, you walked the deck with me, gazing with animation and pleasure on the novel and desolate scene.

The next evening we were in the longitude of Cape Horn, with the prospect of a speedy passage round, till a heavy western gale met us, and drove us entirely from our course. For a week afterwards the wind continued to blow fiercely, and at times with a violence equal to any thing I ever before witnessed. The *Guerriere*, however, "behaved well," as the sailors say; though the little canvass she could bear was reduced to a sieve, and she often seemed on her beam-ends. One night the wind blew a hurricane; and the labour of the ship in a tremendous sea was such, that the commodore, as

well as the captain and first lieutenant, was up till morning.

During the whole period, the ocean presented a succession of varied and sublime scenes, heightened by the appearance of the frigate struggling in majesty amid the tumultuous conflict of billow raging against billow, on every side. Even when her upper spars are sent down, which is generally the case in heavy weather, such a mass of rigging is still presented to the wind, that the rushing of the "impetuous storm," as it sweeps over us, sounds like the roaring of a tempest in the mountain forests, and would fill the mind unaccustomed to it, with apprehension and horror; when familiar, however, it only induces a musing mood.

A more sublime spectacle is seldom witnessed than that presented by a stately ship in a heavy gale at sea, or one more increasingly impressive, the oftener it is seen and the longer gazed on. A finely modeled and perfectly rigged vessel is, under any circumstances, a *chef d'œuvre* of the art of man; but when seen thus to brave the tempest and the whirlwind, and to ride gracefully and triumphantly through all the contortions of the storm, there is presented in it an evidence of the power of mind in devising the means, and perfecting the arrangements, for a dominion over the winds and waves themselves, scarcely to be found in any other work of his hands.

For the last three days we have had a fair wind, with fine weather, and moderate temperature; and in the longitude 81°, we consider ourselves entirely past the Cape, and within a fortnight's sail of Valparaiso. It is but ten days since we made Staten Land, and we feel ourselves fortunate in having gained an entrance into the Pacific in that period.

Weddell, after the observation of several years in this region, considers the month intervening betw

tween the 15th of May and the middle of June as one of the best periods in the year for accomplishing this passage, and our experience on this occasion corroborates the belief. We experienced some hail and snow, but less falling weather than in the Thames in midsummer, and the temperature has not been much colder. The mercury, on one occasion only, fell as low as  $29^{\circ}$ . The greater shortness of the day makes the most important difference; but with the benefit of a full moon, we have felt no particular inconvenience from nights of sixteen hours' duration.

There is reason for much thankfulness that we have thus escaped every extreme of danger, and a long delay in this region; and that we have been favoured with such weather, that, except during the continuance of the gale, we were permitted, at the very remotest point to which we were driven, to continue on the open deck our evening worship, and, at the very extremity of the globe, daily to offer our praises and our prayers to Him who is "the confidence alike of all the ends of the earth, and of them that are afar off upon the sea."

## LETTER XV.

### DESCRIPTION OF VALPARAISO.

U. S. ship *Guerriere*, off Valparaiso,  
June 10, 1822.

"*SAIL HO!*" from aloft, on the morning of the 5th inst., broke the monotony of the preceding fortnight. A vessel was on our lee-bow; and we bore away for her. It proved to be the brig *Fortune*, from Huacho, bound to Boston; and we gladly boarded her, with letters, to communicate to our friends the safe arrival of the *Guerriere* on this side the continent.

The still more animating and welcome sound of "*land ahead!*" echoed round our decks yesterday. The faintest outline of a mountainous coast could



at first, scarcely be traced in the east; but, long before night, we had noble views of the Cordilleras, standing like a wall of eternal snow against a sombre sky. They were still sixty or seventy miles distant; but the gleaming of a declining sun against their icy summits, presented them, in clear and strongly defined outlines, to our eager and admiring gaze.

This morning, while it was scarce-yet light, Mr. Babbitt, our first lieutenant, entered my state-room, to hasten me on deck for a sunrise view of the coast. We were yet twenty miles or more from land; and the cold gray of the dawn was just giving place over it to the warmer tints of the rising day. At first the whole seemed only a dark, gigantic wall rising from the sea; but irregular lines of light and shade soon became perceptible, disclosing the formation of the country intervening between the coast and the Andes; and throwing these last far in the distance inland.

As the day advanced, the landscape grew more and more distinct; and the colouring of the whole increased in richness, till just as the sun burst from behind the mountains, the scene became one of the finest I have witnessed: exhibiting first, along the water's edge, a brown, sterile, and iron-bound coast, with a headland here and there of wild, fantastic rock; then the nearer hills, tinged with green, and backed by loftier ranges, rising one above another in every variety of form, till piled against the sides of the Andes themselves, whose ragged and inaccessible peaks, glittering with perpetual ice and snow, towered over the whole, in such magnitude of dimension, and such loftiness of height, as irresistibly to fill the mind with emotions of sublimity and admiration.

Above these,

"The azure arch'd sky  
Look'd pure as the Spirit that made it."

With the appearance of the sun, the charm was dissolved; a blurring haze overspread the whole from

the Andes to the shore; and every hue was in a moment dashed with a general neutral tint.

Valparaiso was yet forty or fifty miles north of us; and we sailed five or six hours closely along a bold and seemingly uninhabited shore, before reaching the vicinity of the harbour. The bay is a small indenture in the coast, a few miles only in circumference, open, and entirely unsheltered on the north: and this being the season for heavy gales from that direction, in which great danger to the shipping is often experienced, Commodore Thompson determined not to bring the frigate to anchor, and to visit the shore only for an hour or two in boats.

Towards noon, a telegraph on a lofty wooded hill, intimated the vicinity of a port; and, on coming abreast of a high, rocky point, the farther side of the bay, called the Almendral, from the almond gardens covering it, appeared; followed rapidly, as we glided forward, by the town lying in one irregular street close by the water, under a naked precipice of red earth and rock.

The curvature of the bay, from the Almendral to the point, is about three miles; and the buildings of the town extend in a greater or less degree of compactness, the whole distance. They are generally of one story only, and, being of unburnt brick, with roofs of red tile, have, for the most part, a shabby and uninviting appearance. The principal landing is near the western end, in front of a quebrada, or narrow glen, dividing the precipice which overhangs the town. The mouth of this ravine affords space for a kind of open square, from which zigzag streets run up the sides of the hills. The houses along these, being whitened, and ornamented with flowers and shrubbery, have a cottage-like and pleasing aspect, and show to advantage, as seen from the bay. On the top of the precipice, on one side of the quebrada, is the British consulate, and the residences

of several English merchants. Being under one roof, and surrounded by a common veranda, the whole seems but a single establishment, and is the most conspicuous and ornamental object in the view. The opposite height across the ravine is occupied by the ruins of a castle, shattered down in one of the earthquakes, of such frequent occurrence here. Behind these, the land rises gradually for a mile or more; but, covered only with stunted grass, and shrubs of the cactus tribe, and deformed by the dry channels of watercourses and crevices of red clay torn in the surface by earthquakes, it increases rather than diminishes the general sterility and dreariness of the place. A less appropriate name than that of Valparaiso, "Vale of Paradise," could scarce have been chosen for such a spot; the sublime amphitheatre of mountains in the distance being the only redeeming feature in the scene.

A cutter was soon ordered to be lowered, and a party, including myself, hastened on shore. Mt. Hogan, the American consul-general, received us with great cordiality on the beach, and led the way to the consulate; an office only, his residence being at the Almendral, too far for a visit during the short time we could be from the ship.

A first thought, that forced itself on me in landing, will convey, at least to you, dear H——, in general description, a better idea of the aspect of Valparaiso as a whole, than any thing else, equally concise, I could say; and I will premise by it the few hasty and desultory observations I had it in my power to make. It is, that had I been asked, without knowing in what part of the world I was, how far on our voyage I thought myself, from the general appearance of things, to be; I should, without hesitation, have answered, "Two-thirds of the way to the Sandwich Islands."

On the other hand, there was much very unlike

every thing at the principal port of Hawaii. Streets, well paved with round stone, and lined with good houses, many of them two stories, stuccoed and white-washed, with glazed windows, and painted wood-work. Handsome, well-furnished shops, with a general appearance of neatness, enlivened by the activity of business. An abundance of fine horses and horsemen, carts, waggon, oxen, &c., all tending to a favourable impression of the thriftiness of the country, and improving state of the people. The Chilenos are also a much nobler-looking people than the islanders. I scarce know when I have seen finer forms, or more muscular and powerful-looking men; and these are fair specimens, I am told, of the whole population of the country.

I greatly regretted that time did not allow of a walk to the Almendral, which, with its groves of almond and olive trees, had so inviting an appearance from the water.—The market of Valparaiso is the best on the coast: and whatever else may be said of Chile, Mr. Hogan assures us, that she can boast as good eating and drinking as can be found in any part of the world. The climate is at all times fine; and in the winter season, which is now just commencing, not surpassed in any section of the globe.

This republic is said to be decidedly and greatly in advance of all the other South American states; and St. Jago, her capital, the most interesting and delightful city on the continent. Just at present, however, the country is politically in a disturbed state, from a strongly-contested election for the presidency. The excitement and violence at the public meetings have been such, as in several instances to terminate in bloodshed and death. Still the foundations of civil polity seem here more securely laid than elsewhere: elementary instruction, and means for the diffusion of knowledge, are in operation; and the policy of the government is better calculated than in

any other of the new republics, to promote improvement, both in its home and foreign departments.

The warm and cordial manners, and intelligent conversation, of the venerable consul-general, (embracing much interesting matter from personal observation, not only along the South American coast, but in Europe, Asia, and Africa, enlivened by anecdotes of all parts of the world, and particularly of the naval service of the United States and of England, in which last he was himself a fellow midshipman and messmate with the duke of Clarence, heir apparent to the British throne,) caused the time to pass rapidly, till we were obliged to take a hasty leave, that the ship might secure an offing before night.

A view of the beach, on which alone Mr. Hogan would consent to part with us, again reminded me of Honolulu. In addition to various objects, a sentry on one of the angles of the ruinous castle on the precipice, the ramparts of which appear still to be partially fortified, with two or three figures seated on their feet like the natives, wrapped in thick mantles, imparted a touch of the picturesque; the purity of the air being such as to exhibit them in clearly defined and bold relief against the sky, which alone was to be seen behind them; so immediately were they over our heads.

The evening was delightful; and while we rowed two or three miles to the frigate, lying off and on in stateliness and beauty, and long after filling away for Peru before a fresh breeze, we enjoyed magnificent views of the Andes.

## LETTER XVI.

### ARRIVAL AT CALLAO.

U. S. ship *Guerriere*, at Callao,  
June 22, 1820.

NOTHING of moment occurred on a passage of ten days, from Valparaiso to this port. The wind

being mostly fresh and fair, we had a short run ; but the weather generally was hazy and unpleasant. On the morning of the 18th inst. we expected to have made land in the vicinity of Callao before night, or early in the evening ; but, notwithstanding a fine moon, the atmosphere was so thick, that we were obliged to heave to at an early hour, and wait for the return of day.

In the morning the weather was still lowering, with a mist almost like rain ; and it was not till nine o'clock that the barren hills of St. Lorenzo, an island forming the protection of this harbour against the sea, began to break on the sight through the gloom. We were already north of it ; and, with the setting in of the ordinary sea-breeze, bore up in the direction of the anchorage : the main land, twelve or fifteen miles distant, being still entirely obscured.

At the same time, a large sail was descried some five or six miles to the leeward of us, heading also for the harbour ; which, as we neared each other, had the appearance of a man-of-war ; and shortly proved to be the St. Louis, Capt. Sloat. She had been despatched from Rio de Janeiro, by Commodore Thompson, ten days previous to our sailing ; but, after a most boisterous and distressing passage round Cape Horn, only reached Valparaiso a day or two previous to the *Guerriere* ; and had sailed again on her voyage to Peru, the same morning of our call at that port. And thus, after a separation of more than two months, we still entered Callao, as we had left the United States, in company with each other.

By two o'clock, the shipping at the bottom of the bay, with the broad pennant of Commodore Jones at the mast-head of the frigate *Brandywine*, was distinguished through the haze ; and while partaking of a hasty dinner, the call—"All hands to bring ship to anchor, ahoy !" echoed around our decks.

Every face was beaming with brightness at the

propitious termination of our long voyage; and in the punctilious silence rigidly exacted, in bringing a man-of-war to anchor, I was yielding myself to thoughts of grateful adoration, at the kind providence which had brought so large a company of us in health and safety over so wide a waste of sea, when the first order in lessening sail, "Furl the royals," was given by the commanding officer. It was scarce done, before the hitherto unheard and appalling cry, "A man overboard! a man overboard!" passed rapidly from the fore-castle to the quarter-deck; and as, the moment after, it was known that one of the crew had fallen from the fore-royal yard, a height of more than 150 feet, into the sea! a shudder of horror passed over every one, in the persuasion that he was utterly lost!

I was standing, at the moment, on the signal-deck at the stern, the ship moving at the rate of five knots, and had time only to turn round, before the poor fellow rose struggling to the surface in our wake. He was stunned and struggling, and incapable of lifting up his face from the water; but still appeared to understand the calls of the officers, cheering him to every effort, till assistance could be rendered. The life-buoys were already cut away, the ship ordered about, and two boats manned and lowering; but, in the haste and excitement, the tackles became entangled, the boats on touching the water were incapable of being unhooked, and the headway of the ship was still such, that, in an instant both were filled and swamped! thus, instead of one poor fellow struggling for life, fourteen of our number were in hazard of death!—three lieutenants, one midshipman, and ten of the crew. Knowing that, by remaining on deck, I should only be in the way of others, in every possible effort for the rescue of such as might escape, I hastened to my stateroom, to give vent to the feelings overpowering me,

in ardent supplication and tears unto the Hearer of prayer, that He would have mercy upon us, would spare us the judgments of His providence, and redeem from death the lives exposed to a watery grave.

As to the poor fellow who had fallen from aloft, I at once gave him up as lost; thinking it impossible, that, after the shock which he must have received in striking the water from such a height, he could keep himself afloat the additional time which would now be requisite to his rescue; but, happily, one of the life-buoys floated so near him, as to attract his bewildered observation; and seizing it, he was enabled to retain his grasp, and keep himself from drowning till picked up by a boat, lowered as soon as practicable with better success than the first two.

Most happily, instead of many being drowned, all escaped with life—some who could not swim, by clinging to the boats, three by getting upon the life-buoys, and three by swimming. A moment's longer delay, however, in the arrival of a boat, and one, if not two, of these last must have perished. One of the lieutenants, after struggling till entirely exhausted, and begging aid from a companion at his side (which to have given would only have been to involve both in the same fate,) exclaimed, "Then I must go!" and had twice sunk and risen again, and was already a third time under the water, probably to rise no more, when the boat approached so near, that one of the crew, seeing the extremity of the case, by throwing himself into the water, and seizing the drowning man by his hair, succeeded in drawing him into the cutter. He was entirely insensible, however, when brought on board; and after being resuscitated, endured great agony till thrown into a

This scene was a severe shock for the time, but the kind providence manifested in the issue of the casualty crowned the whole with conspicuous mercy.



On approaching the Brandywine, the *Guerriere* saluted the flag of Commodore Jones with thirteen guns; which were returned as we passed under her stern, and dropped anchor inside of her in a range with her consort the *Vincennes*. The *St. Louis*, at the same time, took a station, outside the *Vincennes* in a line with the Brandywine; the schooner *Dolphin* in stern of the whole, making up the number of the squadron. An English and a French sloop-of-war, with a fleet of merchantmen, lie inside of us; from which boats, according to naval etiquette, were quickly alongside the *Guerriere*, to pay a customary compliment to Commodore Thompson.

Night beginning to approach, I did not leave the ship till next morning, when I paid my respects to Captain Finch, of the *Vincennes*, and the officers of his ship, with whom I am soon to be associated. I was delighted with my visit. The captain received me with much politeness; and I am happy to hear him universally spoken of, not only as a highly intelligent and accomplished officer, but also as an amiable man and pleasing companion. Lieut. Stribling, the first officer, is professedly pious, and all the gentlemen of the ward-room, I am told, bear an excellent character. The *Vincennes*, a sloop of twenty-four guns, is said to be the most beautiful vessel of her class, and the fastest sailer in our navy. She appears in admirable order. The cabin is elegant; and the ward-room as neat and comfortable as a parlour at home.

Captain Finch had already received from Commodore Jones the orders transmitted to him from the navy department, directing his return to the United States, by the Islands and Chinese sea; and apprising him of the intended transfer of myself to his ship. He will not sail, however, for ten days or a fortnight: which I was pleased to learn, as it will allow me the benefit of a few days on shore, and

a peep at Lima, before being called to go to sea again.

While on board the Vincennes, I received an invitation from Commodore Jones to visit the Brandywine. Previous to the arrival of the Guerriere, that day had been appointed for the departure of this vessel for the United States, whether the relief squadron should reach Callao or not; and it was still determined that she should sail. Every thing on board was in the bustle of preparation: but the commodore kindly insisted on my remaining to dinner; and, besides himself, I had the pleasure of forming an acquaintance with Dr. Boyd and Mr. Cox, the surgeon and purser of the frigate, and of meeting Dr. M'Call, late of the Dolphin, a former friend and college companion.

At three o'clock orders were issued for weighing anchor; and as the frigate swung from her moorings, the Guerriere, Vincennes, and St. Louis, gave her three cheers, that made the welkin ring, and every American bosom thrill with excitement; to which an answer, filled with the enthusiasm of homeward affections, was given by the five hundred of the Brandywine's crew, hanging like so many birds in the shrouds; and immediately after, as we took a hasty leave, she bore away on her destination. The Vincennes, in compliment, followed her into the offing, and, after exchanging farewell salutes, stood in again, to take her station under Commodore Thompson's flag.

There is much etiquette in these movements: on Friday, as we came in, the moment the blue pennant of Commodore Jones could be distinguished with a glass, that of Commodore Thompson was hauled down, and one of red substituted; Commodore Jones, so long as he remained, being the commander of the station; and it was not till the Brandywine had left the bay, that the blue again floated from the mast-head of the Guerriere.

Expecting to be in Lima the next sabbath, (the only one that will intervene between the present time and the sailing of the Vincennes,) I yesterday preached a valedictory sermon to my charge here, and had full evidence of the interest and affection with which I am regarded by the ship's company. It was not till then generally known, except among the officers, that I was to be transferred to the Vincennes. The introduction of the subject at the close of my discourse, led many of the latter, during the afternoon, to speak in the most gratifying terms to one desirous supremely of securing their kind feeling to points of the highest moment to their future destiny.

I need not tell you, dear H——, that my own heart is deeply affected in view of the removal. I am sincerely and warmly attached to the whole ship's company, and "the redemption of their souls" has indeed been "precious in my sight." I cannot but hope that any efforts I have made, for their temporal and eternal good, have not been altogether in vain. Notwithstanding the great wickedness perceptible in much that is seen and heard on every hand, there is some appearance at least that the "fallow ground" in the hearts of many, is broken up, and prepared for the good seed of the word of God. Of that which has already been sown, much may have fallen by the wayside, and at once been picked up by the fowls of the air; much may lie buried among thorns, where it is choked; and much, which has sprung up with seeming gladness, may prove to be in stony ground only, and, having no root in itself, may wither away and perish. Still, I hope, that some may have fallen in the good ground of sincere and honest hearts, and will yet yield abundantly of the fruits of peace and righteousness, to the praise and glory of God, some thirty, some sixty, and some an hundred fold.

## Lima.

## LETTER XVII.

## SKETCH OF CALLAO, AND RIDE TO LIMA.

Lima, June 23d, 1829.

AFTER dinner I landed at Callao at 4 o'clock this afternoon, to visit Lima. It was the first time I had been on shore; and much as I had heard of the wretchedness of the port, I was disgusted with the poverty, filth, and whole aspect of the place.

The shipping between the anchorage of our squadron and the landing, had entirely screened the town from view, except the beautiful castle and fortress by which it is defended; and the strength and good keeping of these, greatly deceived me as to the size and importance of the place. The population amounts to about two thousand, crowded along a single street of half-a-mile, following the curvature of the bay, intersected by two or three others a few rods only in length, except that formed by the road to Lima.

The extent of ground covered is not equal to that at Honolulu; while scarce a habitation in the town has an appearance, externally, of greater civilization and comfort than that of Marini the Spaniard there; and every street presents all the offence to the senses found in the metropolis of the Sandwich Islands.

The houses generally are of one story only, on account of the frequency of earthquakes; and as it scarce ever rains, all the roofs are perfectly flat. The walls, terminating abruptly and irregularly

above them, without the ornament of a cornice or balustrade, give to the whole the appearance of so many ruins, from which the tops and chimneys have been shaken or blown; an impression not diminished by the shattered and peeled surface of the plaster with which they are covered.

The building of a new house near the coach-office gave an opportunity of observing the process in putting up a habitation of the common kind. It consists in first planting in the ground upright posts, a foot or more in circumference, and sixteen or eighteen feet high, at a distance of two or three yards from each other, along lines marking the dimensions of the building. To these, when firmly set, long sticks of bamboo, an inch or more in diameter, are lashed horizontally with thongs of undressed hide, commencing at the ground, with three bamboos close together, then a space of two or three feet, then three bamboos again, and so on to the top. Through these horizontal layers, sticks of the same, but more slender, are wattled perpendicularly, as closely as possible; forming a basis or lathing for the mud or mortar with which the walls are finished.

The roofs are of cane, wattled in a similar manner, with the addition, in some cases, of a ceiling of boards or plank. A pavement of large brick constitutes the floor; and the windows, in place of glass, are filled usually with bars or grates of wood or iron, with an outside shutter to be closed at night.

Two or three lines of coaches run twice a-day between Callao and Lima. After the peep I had taken of the town, I did not anticipate much from the carriages it might supply; and was agreeably disappointed in the equipages, as they drove, at the appointed hour, to the doors of different public houses in the principal street. One was a handsome English chariot, formerly the property of a British consul; and another, a low and neatly finished

barouche, drawn by four fine and well-harnessed horses.

The towers and domes of Lima, eight or nine miles inland, are distinctly seen from the bay, stretching, for a mile or more, along the upper line of a heath-like and desolate-looking country, with the Cordilleras in gigantic majesty behind. From the gradual rise of the land, the elevation of the city seems scarce above the site of Callao.; but from accurate measurement, by Humboldt and others, it is known to be seven hundred feet higher than the sea-level.

The road, which is wide and straight, strikes from the port across a marshy plain, and is, for the first three or four miles, excessively dreary.

A want of interest in the natural scenery was made up in a degree, however, by the variety and novel appearance of many of the persons and groups passing, in one direction or the other. Soon after leaving Callao, we overtook two Cabelleros in ponchos and high-crowned grass hats, the costume of the country, mounted on spirited animals, with English saddles, but using in place of a whip the long platted and knotted ends of the reins, the universal practice along the coast. They looked grave as deacons, and probably owed their sedateness to a large mixture of Spanish blood.

The poncho is an original Indian garment, about two yards in length, and one and a half in breadth, with a hole cut in the centre, through which the head is passed, while the ends and sides hang in loose drapery around the figure. It is made of every variety of material, and of course varies in expensiveness; being formed sometimes of common white or striped cotton only, with a coarse fringe or binding around the neck and edges; but often of the finest cloth, ornamented with rich embroidery.

Shortly afterwards, we passed a group still more novel and characteristic, having a strong dash of the

Indian in the whole. It was a riding party of two males and two females, in the seeming relation of parents and children. The elder male was in a round jacket and pantaloons of brown cloth, and a high conical hat of Guayaquil grass. The caparison of his horse was entirely in the Peruvian fashion. A clumsy saddle, rising high in the pommel in front and behind, and covered with thick rugs, was secured, not only by the usual girths and crupper, but also by a heavy harness of leather about the hams of the horse, with silver buckles and mountings, as in that of a carriage. The stirrups were blocks of dark wood carved, with plates of silver at the corners and sides, and having holes behind in which to thrust the feet, rude and awkward things, and designed originally, I believe, to protect the feet and ankles in riding through brushwood and bramble. The costume and entire equipment of the young gentleman, of sixteen or eighteen, were European; though himself and companions were all evidently of the mixed blood of the country.

The dress and attitude of the females, both being seated astride like men, the universal fashion here, were calculated to attract more particular attention. The mother, an uncommonly fine-looking woman of thirty-five, tall and straight, appeared to great advantage on a noble and spirited horse. Her head-dress was a man's hat of Manilla grass, with a narrow black ribbon for a band, and fastened under the chin by ties of the same; the rim being left unconfined. The upper part of her person was entirely concealed by a poncho of blue, falling to the saddle-cloth; and over which her long black hair, in two heavy braids, hung to the horse's back behind.

The daughter, a delicate and beautiful creature of fifteen, was mounted on a nice dun poney. Though dark, her complexion was sufficiently clear to exhibit the bloom of youth on her cheek, and in her lips;

while a good-humoured and playful black eye, with a pearly set of teeth, exposed occasionally in conversation or by a laugh, combined in testifying to the claims of the Peruvian ladies to beauty. Her dress was similar in style to that of her mother, but more neat and elegant; hat the same, and worn in the same manner; but her hair, in place of being braided, clustered in rich curls about her temples and ears, sparkling with jewels, and fell widely over the neck and shoulders, upon a poncho of white, broadly striped in a variegated pattern of gay colours.

We had scarce lost sight of these, as they cantered leisurely on in gay laugh and conversation, when we were ourselves overtaken by a couple at full speed—a gentleman in the dress of a Peruvian horseman, and a lady, seen at once to be a Briton, not only from the whiteness and bloom of her complexion, but from her attitude, dress, and whole manner.

Then came a party of English and American sea captains and supercargoes, more than half intoxicated; racing as for life, and urging their foaming beasts onward by plunging the rowels of their spurs deeply into their bleeding sides, as if madness had seized the hearts of the riders while dizziness was in their brain. Almost immediately after, as if to prove that vice and folly are unconfined to nation or name, two Peruvian officers rushed by, shouting like bacchanalians, and so tipsy as scarce to be able to retain their seats, as their horses plunged from side to side of the road, in the unequal guidance of the reins.

Such were some of the parties making their way with us towards the metropolis. Others, of a different character, were as constantly coming from the opposite direction: principally market men and women, carrying all manner of produce to supply the demand of the town and shipping on the coming morning, not in carts and wagons, as in the United States; but on mules and donkeys, with panniers, &c.



on either side, of more or less enormous magnitude. Such touches of the true grotesque, as were occasionally presented, I have seldom before seen. Fancy to yourself a hundred of these mean-looking animals in a single drove, as shaggy and unsymmetrical in their whole outline as the ugliest you ever saw, bundled up and encased by all manner of things to a bulk twice the bigness of themselves, and then surmounted by objects, in the human shape, old and young, male and female, black and white, Spaniards and Indians, in a variety of figure and garb, to which the pencil of a Cruickshank could scarcely do justice.

The load of one of these animals, not much more than three feet high, was not less than ten sheep, killed and dressed ready for the shambles. Six were tied two and two together by the hind legs, and then thrown across the back of the donkey from the shoulder-blade to the tail, one on either side, so as to balance each other, as their trunkless heads dangled almost on the ground: upon these the rest were lashed horizontally, on which various other smaller articles of poultry were fastened, while on the top of the whole, at a very honourable elevation on a dirty cushion, sat, à la Turquie, a most villanous looking old man, in a ragged poncho, with a slouched and greasy hat, and bare arms and legs. Beside him, on a similar rosinante, rode his carâ espousâ, an equally interesting object both in figure and garb, seated in the same attitude, on the top of pannier after pannier, and basket upon basket, of potatoes and beans, cabbage and onions, oranges, bananas, melons, and tomatoes, &c. &c. as if bearing to her customers specimens of the growth of a whole plantation.

Entire families, in two or three instances, were seen on a single beast, seated from the neck to the tail, according to their ages; the younger children and females forward, and the men on the extremity

of the back. In two instances, I counted five persons thus mounted; two of whom, in one case, seemed each as well able to carry the donkey, as he the weight of either of them.

The appearance of a drove of a hundred or more, carrying burdens of grass, was, at a distance, very singular. This article is very light and succulent, and was packed round and piled upon the beasts in such enormous bunches, that, even when near, nothing but their heads was to be seen in the midst. Crowding together as their habit is, and filling up the whole road for a considerable space, when first seen they had the appearance of a moving mass of vegetation; and, at a loss myself to conjecture what it might be, I could think only of the march of

" Birnam wood to Dunsinane."

Two miles from Callao, at a short distance on the right, are the remains of the town of Bella Vista; once a large and splendid place, but now a heap of ruins only, from the combined desolations of war and earthquakes. It was in possession of the patriots during the siege of Callao, in 1825; and received its finishing stroke from the artillery of Rodil, when entrenched at the citadel at the port.

It was not till we arrived within a mile of the city, that any change in the scenery, peculiarly interesting, took place: then we entered a fine and beautiful avenue, called the Almeda, imparting a new aspect to all around. On either hand is a double row of handsome trees, a species of the willow, beneath whose deep shade are foot-paths, separated from the carriage-way by a low parapet of brick plastered and whitened; while lively courses of water murmur along the inner side, communicating freshness and beauty to the groves, and serving to irrigate the gardens and plantations, whose high walls, both on the right and left, rise to the lower branches of the trees.

Long seats of brick, in the shape of sofas, plas-

tered and whitewashed, are arranged at regular intervals beneath the shade. They have the appearance, when not too closely inspected, of marble or Portland stone; and impart an air of taste and elegance, making a pleasing impression, and intimating an approach to the abodes of refinement and luxury.

Lima is said to be the most corrupt city on the continent; so much so, that along the whole coast, I am told, the name alone is a proverb of sin. The walks of the avenue, as we drove through the gate, exhibited some specimens of the morals to be expected within, by several intoxicated officers, and three Dominican friars in the garb of their order, in very familiar conversation with persons of rather equivocal, or perhaps I should say unequivocal, appearance: several of whom, in gay attire, were lounging, without protector or attendant, on the sofas around.

I scarce ever felt greater surprise, than on entering the first street after passing the gate. Instead of "the splendid city," of which, from childhood, I had read with such admiration, I was tempted to think myself in Timbuctoo itself. Mud houses of one low story, with large doors and grated windows, exposing filth and poverty to view, inhabited only by negroes and mulattoes, thronging in gaping and half-naked crowds about the doors and corners, were alone in sight!

By degrees, however, the appearance began to improve. The houses became more neat and lofty, till something like civilization and comfort, if not elegance, was to be seen. But, even in the best streets through which we passed, every thing wore a decayed and shabby appearance; while the covered verandas projecting from the second story, of clumsy architecture and dark colours, threw an air of gloom over the streets.

After two or three turns in the distance of half or three-quarters of a mile, we drew up before an English hotel, to which I had been directed, in a

street near the Plaza, or public square. Mr. Radcliffe, a son of the American consul, whom I had met on board the *Guerriere*, was politely in waiting to receive me. I accompanied him to the consulate, to a cup of tea; and, after an introduction to his father, have returned to my lodgings, to scribble this account of my ride to this noted city.

## LETTER XVIII.

### AUDIENCE WITH GENERAL LA FUENTE, PROVISIONAL CHIEF OF PERU.

Lima, June 24th, 1829.

As we were crossing the Plaza, to wait on Mr. Stanhope Prevost, a friend of my boyhood, we met Commodore Thompson, Captain Sloat, and Mr. Armstrong, just arrived from Callao, also on their way to the establishment of Mr. Prevost.

Commodore Thompson intended waiting on the authorities at the palace at one o'clock, and requested me to make one of his suite; to which I was happy to accede. A bloodless revolution, just achieved, has rendered useless, letters with which I was furnished to the late president La Mar, and to Don Luna Pizarro, a prominent member of the former administration. Only on Saturday last, Pizarro, after having suffered arrest and imprisonment, was obliged to embark for Valparaiso, under sentence of banishment by the present executive; and so recently as Monday, a governmental placard was issued, announcing the flight, from the headquarters of the army in Upper Peru, of General La Mar, the president, and his departure from Paita, with a single aid-de-camp, for a foreign country.

The individual now occupying the palace, as head of the republic, is General La Fuente, an officer who has risen from the grade of cadet to the rank he now holds. He was a protégé of Bolivar, when dictator

of Peru, and received from him a colonel's commission, and was afterwards made prefect of the district of Arequipa. This office was retained by him till about eight months ago, when, becoming an object of jealousy to the party in power, he was requested to resign the prefectorship, on the ground that his presence would be necessary, with the division of the army commanded by him, at the seat of war with Colombia, in Upper Peru; and to which, with his troops, he was ordered to repair.

La Fuenté resigned the civil office at Arequipa, but disregarded the marching orders. In the mean time General Gamarra, commander-in-chief under La Mar the president, passed through Arequipa, after the reduction of Bolivia in the south, on his way to the head-quarters of La Mar, at Paita, in the north; and it is believed that the revolution, or usurpation, which has just taken place, was then concerted by the two generals. La Fuenté was advised, by Gamarra, not to obey the orders of the government by proceeding to Paita, but to wait a suitable opportunity of landing his troops at Callao, and of making himself master of Lima, from which all the soldiers, except a small guard at the palace, had been withdrawn in the contest with Colombia; while Gamarra himself should take measures in the camp, to secure the abdication and exile of La Mar.

After the defeat of the Peruvians by Bolivar at Cuenca, La Fuenté received new and peremptory orders to proceed with his division to Paita; and this being thought the desired crisis for action, leaving Arequipa with sixteen hundred troops, he landed at Callao, and encamped at Santa Magdalena, a village two or three miles from Lima, under pretext, to the government in the city, that the transports in which he had put to sea were unfit for a longer voyage. The vice-president, Salazar, jealous of this movement, summoned La Fuenté to the palace, and,

informing him that new transports would be in immediate readiness, ordered the embarkation of his troops for their destination without delay.

The general then began removing the mask, by replying that his troops were fresh recruits unprepared for service, while the Colombian army was composed of veterans, with whom it was impossible for them to cope; that the war could not be maintained, and that there must be peace; adding, as he took his leave, that he should return to Santa Magdalena, and if the vice-president had any further communication to make to him, instead of sending for him to the palace, he must repair himself to the camp!

Soon afterwards, he sent a communication to Salazar, to say, that, satisfied of the incapacity of the administration to meet the exigency of affairs, he should take upon himself the executive power till congress should be convened; and wishing to be informed when the vice-president would vacate the palace. No answer being returned, the next day, at two o'clock, two companies of soldiers, under an aid of La Fuenté, entered the city without music or any special display; and, orders from the camp having been privately issued to the troops on guard to allow themselves to be quietly relieved, took possession of the palace. Salazar immediately retired to his private residence in the city, and, in the course of the evening, La Fuenté arrived in the city, proclaiming himself "the provisional supreme chief of Peru, till the meeting of congress." And all things went on, and are still going on, as if no change whatever had taken place.

Meanwhile Gamarra was accomplishing his part in the army, and is now, by the abdication and exile of La Mar, uncontrolled commander-in-chief. It is understood that the result of the whole is to be, the appointment of Gamarra to the presidential chair,

while La Fuenté will be made vice-president, with the promise of succeeding eventually to the supreme office.

The people in general appear to have taken little interest in the change. The suffering, poverty, and various desolation brought on the city and whole land, by the revolutions and counter-revolutions of the last ten years, have been such as to break down the spirit of every class; and few seem to care in whom the chief power is vested, so long as they escape further oppression and sorrow. It is the general sentiment, both of foreigners and native citizens, that a military despotism, in tolerable hands, if not absolutely necessary, is more desirable, just at present, than any other form of government.

After partaking of refreshments at Mr. Prevost's, we directed our way, under the guidance of Mr. Radcliffe, the American consul, and his son, to the palace. This is an extensive pile, forming the north side of the Plaza, or public square, in the centre of the city, while the cathedral is on the east, and uniform ranges of houses, with shops under arcades on the ground floor, on the south and west.

It is a quadrangle, extending along three streets the same distance it does on the square, and enclosing a large area, filled with gardens and shrubbery; and various buildings for the accommodation of the public offices.

The exterior of the whole presents a decayed and mean aspect. The front on the square is occupied, on the ground floor, by shops of every description; while the second, and only other story, shows nothing but a range of the gloomy wooden balconies which disfigure all the dwellings in the city. A lofty and ornamented gateway, in the centre, alone gives it the appearance of a public building. The offices of the city and district of Lima, as well as of the various departments of the general govern-

ment, being accommodated within the palace, a part only of the pile is appropriated as the residence of the president. This is the same as that occupied by the viceroys during the dominion of Spain, and extends along the west and north sides of the quadrangle.

The building is said to have been erected by Pizarro, at the founding of the city, in 1536. The ground occupied by it is certainly the same, and the general construction may not since have been materially altered; but the frequent and extensive repairs which numerous earthquakes, and the decay of time, must have made necessary, have doubtless caused an almost entire substitution of material.

The nature of the present administration, an usurped military power, prevented any surprise at finding the patrolling sentry at the entrance, or in discovering the first hall into which we were ushered to be a guard-room lined with soldiers, and its walls covered with arms. At the farther end on the north, three successive flights of broad steps, extending from side to side of the room, and each terminating on a platform or landing several feet wide, brought us on a level with the second story, and in front of a massive folding door opening into another apartment. This is the sala in which, according to common report, Pizarro was assassinated: whether identically the same or not, will perhaps admit of a question: at all events, it is shown as such; and, in reference to the entrance from the street, and stairs leading to it, answers well to the descriptions in history of that tragic scene.

An aid-de-camp in waiting, after receiving us with much politeness, left us for a moment, to announce the commodore and party to the president.

This gave time for a glance around. The apartment in which we were is spacious, and well, but rather over furnished with pier tables and mirrors,



chandeliers, sofas, &c. Some good paintings were on the walls, and, amongst them, two portraits; one full-length of General San Martin, and the other, according to an inscription, that of his excellency "El Almirante Christoval Colon." Three or four persons, in military garb, were lounging in an alcove at the upper end of the room, near a window overlooking the street on the north.

The aid soon returned, and led the way through a drawing-room richly furnished in crimson and gold, to the cabinet of the chieftain. He was seated on a sofa on one side as we entered, but rose till the whole number had been presented; then, placing Commodore Thompson on the sofa beside him, commenced a conversation, while chairs were placed round for the rest of us. He is a small man, of thin habit, and apparently in ill-health; his complexion, eyes, hair, and mustaches, dark, with a mild and intelligent countenance, and unassuming manners. He speaks Spanish only. Conversation turned principally on the object of Commodore Thompson's arrival, the relief of Commodore Jones, and the complimentary welcome incident to it; upon language, and the comparative ease with which Spanish, French, and English, are acquired, &c. &c.

Having understood that he had been particularly indisposed the preceding evening, the commodore made his call short, and we soon took leave.

The ante-room, as we left, was beginning to fill with officers, assembling to pay their morning court. Mr. Radcliffe, intimating that it might gratify the party to see the principal reception room, now called the hall of independence, we were shown into it. It occupies nearly the whole length of the corridor by which we approached the ante-room, and opens upon it by a succession of large windows. It is a fine, elevated apartment, near one hundred and fifty feet in length, and about thirty wide--the ball-room

of the castle in the time of the viceroys, and now the inaugural chamber; and the apartment in which the heads of government receive the congratulations of the citizens on the anniversary of the independence of Peru.

A chair of state, of classic and beautiful pattern, occupies the head of the room. This was the throne of the viceroys; and has changed its name only, its place and use being the same as under the royal government. A large allegorical painting hangs against the wall, immediately over it. The principal figure represents the genius of Peru, in the costume of the Incas; consisting of a tunic of yellow, drawn closely round the neck with short sleeves, and a girdle at the waist. A mantle of crimson, tied in a knot upon the chest, flows behind, from the shoulders; while sandals on the feet, and a band of gold around the head, surmounted by a coronet of feathers, complete the dress.

A canopy of red and white silk, the national colours, with draperies of the same colours intertwined, spreads over both the picture and chair of state. The only other furniture of the room, besides a carpet, is a brilliant line of glass chandeliers through the centre of the ceiling, and an uninterrupted succession of sofas of scarlet around the walls.

## LETTER XIX.

### FESTIVAL OF THE AMANCAISE.

Lima, June 25, 1829.

THE Amancaise, an annual festival celebrated at Lima on the 24th of June, occurred yesterday.

It is something similar to our "May-day;" the occasion of it being the height of bloom, at that time, of a flower peculiar to Peru, called "the Amancaise;" to gather which, the citizens of every class,

in the afternoon of the day, hasten, as to a gala, to a spot in the vicinity of the city, deriving its name, as well as the festival itself, from the flower, because found in a greater abundance there than in any other place.

After an early dinner with Mr. Radcliffe, our party, principally on horseback, set off. It was with difficulty that a sufficient number of horses could be secured, as every animal of the name and similitude, in the city, is put in requisition at this time, if at no other during the year.

We left the city by a new and handsome gate on the north, a few rods only from the public square, opening directly on the bridge running across the river Rimac, which, at this point, flows along the walls. At this season of the year the stream is shallow and insignificant; the whole bed of the river, a hundred yards and more in width, presenting only a mass of dry gravel, intersected, in two or three places, by small rivulets, purling like so many brooks in their pebbly courses. But in the summer of this latitude, when the snow and ice in the Andes, fifty or sixty miles distant, are melted, a torrent, of immense magnitude and force, is poured down the same channel, exhibiting, at times, a grand and fearful sight, as it rushes through the arches of the bridge, in a depth of thirty or forty feet.

On this account, the bridge, of brown free-stone, is necessarily very substantial and lofty, and is a strong and well-looking piece of architecture. Beyond it lies a large suburb; after passing which, we entered a regularly-planted and beautiful almeda, or avenue, a favourite promenade of the Limanians, and similar to that already described at the entrance of the city from Callao.

After passing the almeda, we entered a narrow winding, and sandy road, enclosed on either side by high mud-walls, and completely filled by parties in

carriages, on horseback, and on foot, gazing at each other, and interchanging looks and bows of cheerfulness and hilarity. In the number were persons of every class of society, from the highest to the lowest, and of every shade and colour, from the fairest Briton to the deepest ebony of the African tribes.

At the end of two miles we found ourselves close to the wild and naked hills encircling Lima on the north and east, and immediately in front of a gorge between two of these, terminating at the distance of half a mile against the steep acclivity of a third. The whole were bare as volcanic ashes and sand can make them, except where the bloom of the flower, which had called the crowds together, exhibited here and there a tinge of yellow, (for this was the "Amancaese," the spot of our visit,) and over the precipitous sides of which, small parties were already scattered; and even horsemen, at the seeming hazard of their necks, clambering to points fitted apparently only for the footing of the goat or the chamois.

The general appearance of the multitude, at the distance first seen, was that of a field in America at a general militia-muster, or of a race-course in the sporting sections of the land; and a nearer view, save in the variety of colour and novelty of costume, did not lessen the resemblance. There was the same bustle and hum of laugh and talk, the same pressing and hurrying from one place to another, the confused sounds of musical instruments in different directions, and the loud and coarse mirth of the booth and the stall.

On either side of the way were carriages drawn by mules, with a postilion and footman, and filled with ladies and children in rich evening dress; around these, groups of genteel-looking horsemen were gathered in gay conversation and laughter, while within a few rods on every side, might be seen

thronged circles, in the midst of which negroes and negresses, in as full dress as their masters and mistresses, were dancing to music scarce less rude than that heard within the kraals of their aboriginal country. Indeed, both the figures thus danced, and the music, if such it can be called, are African in their origin, and introduced by the slaves; and though thus of necessity heathenish and vulgar, I am told that they are not unfrequently danced in the ball-rooms of the first society in the country.

Every person was decorated with the Amancaese, and clusters of the flowers were placed in the bridles and harness of the horses, as well as in the hats and head-dress of the riders.

The head of the valley commands a striking and fine view of Lima three miles distant. The intervening ground being lower than that on which the city stands, and containing numerous gardens and fruit-yards, besides the groves of the alameda, presents a verdant foreground—an advantage not enjoyed in any other point from which I had before viewed it, to the walls, towers, and turrets, of the capital, stretching in a long line beyond, with no little show of magnitude and splendour, as seen on the horizon in strong delineation against the sky. It is said to be the finest prospect of the city that the environs afford. Some of the adjoining hills, six and seven hundred feet in height, give a more bird's eye view, but, at the same time, disclose so much of the mud roofs, shabby appurtenances of the houses, and numerous marks of poverty and decay stamped upon the whole, as greatly to detract from the effect which would otherwise be produced.

On remounting, we rode to a rancho, or booth, for the purpose of tasting a common drink of the country, called "chichi." It is made from new corn ground, and tastes much like the beer at a distillery of whiskey, after fermentation, and before distillation

has taken place. The primitive and favourite preparation of it among the Indians was by chewing, in the manner of the *ava* at the Sandwich Islands; a fact which I was satisfied not to have learned till after my curiosity in tasting it had been indulged.

On turning from the mob which surrounded this establishment, we descried the "provisional chief," or president, and suite, approaching. His equipage was an English chariot, painted brown, with gilt trimmings, drawn by four fine black horses, in harness of silver gilt. An aid was with him in the carriage; and four horse-guards, bearing lances with the Peruvian pennant attached, followed immediately behind. Four officers were also in the train, two on horseback, and two in a gig. His dress was the same as on the interview at the castle, with the addition of a chapeau edged with white feathers, and surmounted by three ostrich plumes, one red between two of white, the arrangement of the national colours.

By this time the scene around had reached the height of interest in its novel and varied exhibitions. In addition to hundreds of *coalesas*, the clumsy and antique carriage in general use, there were two English chariots, two *barouches*, two gigs, and a few other foreign vehicles, on the ground. One or two Scotch and English ladies, on horseback, were also distinguished in the throng; and a few Spanish ladies mounted, in similar dresses and attitude; while other natives, male and female, Peruvians, both Spaniards and Indians, negroes and negresses of every shade, and in an endless variety of costume, some on foot, and others on every kind of animal, from the noblest of horses to the sorriest jackass, were scattered in thousands around.

It was not long before the fashionables began to move on a return, and the mob slowly to follow; many of those on foot dancing as they went, to the

rude tunes of the negroes, still heard at a distance, I observed one Peruvian female advance in this manner at least a quarter of a mile, turning as in a waltz the whole time, in the midst of carriages and gay horsemen, apparently in danger every moment of being run over.

In coming from the city, I had noticed, at the termination of the road where we entered the Amancaise, a kind of tent in crimson hangings, at which there was dancing and music, with a crowd around. The throng pressing forward, however, was so great, that I merely observed a man and a woman running to the carriages and horsemen passing, with plates extended, for money. On our way back, we stopped here for a moment: the musicians were still playing; the instruments, a violin, flute, and rude harp; the air, a monotonous repetition of a few wild notes. But what most astonished and affected me, and what is perfectly characteristic of the religious views and state of the people, was, to behold a table, in front of which the dancers were, spread with the flowers of the Amancaise, at which was seated a full-length waxen figure of the Saviour of men, crowned with thorns, and streaming with blood! representing Him who was emphatically "a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief," thus presiding over a scene of mirth and folly, and patronizing exhibitions that, to say the least, bordered on sin!

The sight induced a sadness, which all the gaiety of the thousands we met and passed on our way to the city could not dissipate. And it was only with the deep tones of the vesper bell, falling upon us from the towers of the cathedral as we entered the royal square—invoking from all, a moment, at least, for solemnity and prayer—that a change of thought and feeling came over me. Of all I have seen and known of the Catholic church and its services, this observance of the "evening orison" is the most

interesting and most impressive, and one in which no one can refuse to join.

At sunset, the great bell of the cathedral is slowly tolled three times ; when, in a moment, the stillness of death, both within and without doors, spreads over the city ; and all the thousands of her inhabitants assume the attitude of prayer. Whether walking or riding, whether buying or selling, whether singing or dancing, all at the instant suspend their conversation, their business, and their amusement, and, with uncovered heads, stand in the presence of their Maker and their Judge. Were the observance as sincere and heartfelt, as the signal for it is striking and solemn, the effect would be salutary indeed. But among those who understand the appointment best, in a majority of cases, it is to be feared, it leads only to the counting of the beads of a rosary, or to the repetition of an "Ave Maria;" while those from more enlightened lands, who know better than to trust for a blessing to the efficacy of these, in too many instances, there is reason to believe, waste the moment in idle gaze.

## LETTER XX.

NATIONAL MUSEUM, INQUISITORIAL COURT, AND  
PRIVATE MANSIONS IN THE CITY.

Lima, June 26th, 1829.

A HANDSOME brass fountain occupies the centre of the Plaza, and formerly must have been highly ornamental to it ; but like almost every thing else, public and private, in the city, it is now in decay and destitute of water.

The chief attraction of the square at present is the exhibition made by the shopkeepers of their various wares, not only in small apartments under the arcades along the south and west sides, but more



particularly in booths and temporary stalls—in front of the others, on the square itself—which are put up, and their contents arranged for display, in the morning ; and taken down again, and the goods all removed, in the evening.

After breakfast I spent an hour in sauntering among these, and in a walk through the principal market in an adjoining street. For this last there is no building or fixtures, and all the articles contained in it, fish, vegetables, fruit, and meat, are exposed on either side of the way, according to the taste and choice of the seller. The persons in attendance on the customers were exclusively Indians, and principally females, seated with their children on the ground.

Under the guidance of Mr. Prevost, I afterwards visited the building occupied by the Inquisition, previous to its abolition here. A part of it is now used as a common 'ail, and another as a barrack ; while the principal 'rooms are appropriated as a national museum, collecting under the patronage of Don Rivero, an intelligent and scientific Peruvian, educated in Europe, and at present director of the mint.

It was our expectation to have met this gentleman in the museum, but we were disappointed ; and a secretary showed us the collection. It is small, and as yet of little interest or value. The cabinet of minerals is best filled, but not rich in its exhibition even of the gold and silver ores of the country. In each corner of the principal room, in a glass-case, is a mummy, or body, in a state of preservation, as excavated from the ancient burial-places of the Indians, and still retaining the attitude and dress of interment. The bandages and grave-clothes are of cotton cloth, of a fine texture, and still bright and unfaded in colour. The dryness of the atmosphere and soil is such in this climate, that decomposition does not take place under a very long period ; and it is, pro-

bably, many hundred years since these ghastly forms were living and moving actors in the theatre of life.

Among the articles of aboriginal curiosity is the sceptre of the Incas ; and a variety of curiously modeled, and tasteful water vessels and drinking cups, some of them ornamented with gilding, proving the skill and attainment of the primitive inhabitants in the manufacture of earthenware. Within a very short time, a golden cup was found in some excavations making, which is said to be the finest specimen of ancient workmanship at present known. It is kept in a private drawer, of which Don Rivero had the key, and I could not be gratified with a sight of it.

A set of bows and arrows, taken within the last fortnight, were pointed out to us. They belonged to a party of Indians, who, on being surprised in the mountains by a company from the coast, fled and left them. The native tribes, beyond the distance of sixty and seventy miles from the seaboard, have never been in subjection to foreigners. Early witnesses of the oppression and cruelty suffered by their neighbours of the plains, they have ever kept themselves intrenched in the fastnesses of the mountains ; and have not only perseveringly rejected every overture to intercourse on the part of the whites, but invariably put to death all messengers sent among them, including several sets of priests, who, at different periods, have undertaken the perilous enterprise. This is not surprising, when we recollect that, in too many instances, the contact of the Spaniards with their fellows proved destructive, and their friendship death.

The chief room in the museum is the former judgment-hall of the inquisitorial court—a long and lofty apartment, with a rich and beautifully carved ceiling of cedar. One of the cells for the confinement of the prisoners was shown to us. It communicates

directly with the hall, and probably is that which was appropriated to the prisoner immediately under trial. We entered it by two low doors, of massive thickness—the first of heavy plank only, but the second strongly secured with iron, and completely studded with the heads of enormous bolts. The rusty locks and ponderous bars were moved with difficulty, while the doors, as they were turned, groaned on their hinges, as if in memory of the wretchedness they had imposed on the innocent and the good.

The cell is twelve feet by six, and eight or ten feet high, with a floor of stone, and a small heavily grated opening in one corner near the top—admitting, besides fresh air, a few rays of feeble and imperfect light.

This branch of the inquisition is said to have been lenient in its character. Imprisonment generally arose from a desire to extort money only, which, when furnished, procured liberty for the captive. Torture was never resorted to; though, in one instance, heresy—as a departure from the belief and practices of the church of Rome is termed—led to the tragic exhibition of an *auto de fé*. The victim was a female. Friends, and misguided zealots, having vainly strove

“ Back from her faith her stedfast soul to woo,  
That life might yet be hers,”—

doomed her to the dread alternative of a living funeral pyre, in the groves of the Northern Alameda.

“ And swift and high  
The arrowy pillars of the fire light grew,  
Till the transparent darkness of the sky  
Flush'd to a blood-red mantle in their hue ;  
And, phantom-like, the kindling city seem'd  
To spread, float, wave, as on the wind they stream'd.

“ What heard ye then ? A ringing shriek of pain,  
Such as for ever haunts the tortured ear ?—  
I heard a sweet and solemn breathing strain,  
Piercing the flames, untremulous and clear.

It was a fearful yet a glorious thing,  
To hear that hymn of martyrdom, and know  
That its glad stream of melody could spring  
Up from the unsounded gulfs of human wo!"

To Mr. Prevost, also, I was indebted for a personal introduction to a family of rank, to whom I had brought letters from Mr. Tudor. The Moorish style of building, introduced from Spain by the original founders of the city, is universal, in the establishments of the higher orders of society. It consists of a square pile, of one or two stories, enclosing a large area, or quadrangle, in the centre. This is surrounded by piazzas, with which all the rooms communicate, both on the ground and upper floors, where there is a second story: an inner court or second quadrangle is very common also, and sometimes even a third; so that the mansions cover a large space, and are often very extensive.

The entrance generally is by a lofty and massive portal, like the gateway of a castle; which, when closed, affords, like the portcullis, security in a degree against the approach of all danger from without, an advantage which has been found of no trifling importance in the years of commotion and turmoil through which the city has of late passed. The ground floor, where there are two stories, is usually appropriated to the stables, carriage houses, kitchens, offices, &c. while the saloons and chambers of the family are above.

The mansion visited by us on this occasion was of one story, extending around two spacious courts. Crossing the first of these, we passed through a veranda into an ante-room, separated from it by a succession of large windows and glass doors, with frames and sashes richly gilt. This apartment, thirty feet square, handsomely furnished, communicated by large folding doors of glass with another of the same size, fronting on the inner quadrangle, and to which we

were ushered into the presence of the lady of the house.

A female friend was with her, in the "*saya et manto*," or walking-dress of the Limanian ladies; a most unbecoming and unsightly costume, and a perfect disguise—so much so, that a sister, wife, or daughter, cannot easily be recognized in it—and so universally in use, that scarce a female of any rank is seen in the streets, except under its concealment. I need scarce add, that the impression made by it on a stranger is decidedly unpleasant.

The style of building, such as I have imperfectly described, is calculated to exhibit the residences of the wealthy and fashionable inhabitants to great advantage, as seen through the portals from the street. The colonnades surrounding the courts are often of handsome proportions and architecture, while the walls on the sides are tastefully painted in landscape, classic figures and devices, groups of statuary, &c. Large windows and folding doors of glass, in frames and sashes of gilding, expose much of the richness of the furniture within, and when thrown open, which is generally the case where there is an inner court, present a long and imposing vista through vases of flowers and shrubbery, so arranged, in the second and third quadrangles, as to conduce most fully to the effect of the perspective.

The impression thus made, especially at night, is very striking; and I scarce recollect to have seen any thing which has left a more lively image of magnificence and luxury on my mind, than the aspect of a residence before the gate of which I passed last evening.

The whole, including a noble portal, had been recently refitted, and painted anew; the walls of the courts behind the colonnades, being in rich landscape and elysian scenery, animated with fountains and statuary. The saloons, within, were brilliantly lighted; and a range of chandeliers along the centre

of the ceilings, marking a line of perspective far through the orange trees and shrubbery of the second area to the halls on the opposite side, brought to mind an illuminated palace in the Arabian Nights' Entertainment.

Though much of the effect, as in the coarse painting and tinsel of the stage, was attributable, doubtless, to the illusive advantage of candle-light over the beams of day, still there was a degree of true magnificence and luxury in the scene, leading to a belief that, in the time of her noontide prosperity, when all within were living comparatively in the same prodigality of wealth, Lima might have been fully entitled to the imposing epithet of "*the splendid city*," so long claimed as peculiarly her own.

But now, with much greater propriety, the sepulchral address, furnished by a poet, of the Incas of Peru to the Genius of Spain, may with all its force be applied to her :

" Art thou too fallen ? Do we see  
The robber and the murderer weak as we ?  
Thou that hast wasted earth, and dared despise  
Alike the wrath and mercy of the skies ;  
Thy pomp is in the grave, thy glory laid  
Low 'in the pits thine avarice has made.  
We come, we come, from our eternal rest  
To see the oppressor in his turn oppress :  
'Tis thus Omnipotence his law fulfils,  
And vengeance executes what justice wills."

## LETTER XXI.

### VISIT TO THE PADRE ARRIETA, AND STATE OF THE CHURCHES AND PRIESTHOOD.

Lima, June 27th, 1829.

DURING a turn in the Plaza immediately in the evening, in place of one, I saw dozens of fire-light scenes, in groups of negroes and Indians from the country, travellers and market people, in bivouac, by

whole families and companies, around fires which they had lighted to cook their suppers, and to dispel the dampness of a heavy atmosphere. I never beheld more admirable studies for the artist, than were thus afforded in the strong and bold lights in which the various figures thus assembled were thrown against the thick darkness around. Objects more grotesque and diverse, in figure or garb, can scarce be imagined : some busily engaged in the preparation of their food ; some talking and laughing ; some smoking, and others eating ; their dogs seated on their hind legs beside them, watching every motion, and looking wistfully for a fragment or a bone from some friendly hand ; while the donkeys, at their provender, more faintly described beyond, with their panniers and bundles piled around, made up the imagery of the back ground.

Here and there, a peon, or labourer, in a high-crowned hat and poncho, or an Indian in the dress of a soldier, might be seen intermingled with the rest ; while in the arcades adjoining, females of every rank, in the impenetrable disguise of the *saya et manto*, were seen flitting among citizens of the Spanish population, who stalked slowly along, enveloped in immense cloaks, with one corner thrown over the shoulder, and held so high upon the face by the hand, as in general to leave only a pair of piercing black eyes exposed.

The principal incident of the passing day has been a visit with Mr. Prevost to the Padre Arrieta, a monk of the church and monastery of St. Francis ; the most austere and devout of the priesthood of Lima, and in extensive repute for piety and learning. He is an intimate friend of Mr. Tudor, from whom I had brought private letters to him ; and he had intimated to Mr. Prevost a desire to see me at the monastery.

The convent of St. Francis is the largest, and was at one time, and still may be, the wealthiest in the city. It is an immense and noble pile, situated on

the north side of the city, near the bridge across the Rimac, covering and enclosing many acres of ground. The entrance is through a chapel adjoining the principal church; after passing which, we came into a spacious quadrangle, in beautiful and classic architecture of white stucco—the area being filled with shrubbery and trees, interspersed with splendid flowers, and the whole refreshed by a fountain in the centre. From this, an immense extent of corridor leads past a succession of courts—in the same fine style of building as the first, and furnished in like manner with fountains—to a distant and secluded part of the ground, where the Padre Arrieta lives by himself, in what is called a “house of penance.”

The silence of death reigned over the whole pile, it being now, from a failure of resources in the changes of the last years, little more than a mass of deserted and tenantless cloisters, containing scarce sixty or seventy monks, though originally filled with several hundreds. Transported, at once, from the buzz of the city into this utter solitude, seeing no living thing, and hearing only the echoing of our own footsteps, as we made our way farther and farther into the gloom of the deserted pile, associations of early novel-reading, the principal source from which we draw our ideas of priests, and nuns, and convents, and monasteries, came upon me with such force, that I was hurried in imagination two or three centuries back, and felt half disposed to indulge in some of the tremors I have known as a child, during a stolen perusal of a romance of Lewis and others of the same school: a disposition which the first object seen, on emerging from a corridor into a small enclosure, had no tendency to check—a barefooted Franciscan, in the gray habit of his order, stedfastly contemplating a skull which he held in his hand. On a second look, however, I perceived that, though the skull was genuine, the friar was only of wood,



mounted in the manner of a Stylite on a pedestal six or eight feet high—having on the opposite side a companion of similar material, and in the same attitude, with an open volume in his hand.

We were in front of the residence of the padre, a neat and simple building of one story, without any opening in this direction but a central door. While we stood for some minutes, rapping occasionally with an iron knocker, to the sound of which the hollow echoings within were alone returned, a much more melancholy spectacle than the skull which first attracted my attention, an evidence of the decay of matter only, was obtruded upon us, in one of "*the wreck of mind*." A maniac monk of the order, roused from his interminable reveries by the interruption which had taken place to the deathlike stillness around, made his appearance in a ragged garb, with matted hair and unshorn beard, from an adjoining cell; and, after a bewildered and idiotic stare, in reply to the inquiry, "whether the padre was within?" began to pace a few yards backward and forward, in front of the door from which he made his appearance, picking at the sleeve of his gown, and muttering to himself in incoherent and unintelligible sounds.

An aged porter at last opened the door, with the information that his master was at home, and would see us. We accordingly entered, first into a large and lofty, but dark apartment, which I afterwards ascertained to be a kind of vestibule to the chapel of the house directly in rear of it, and then by a side-door into a small sitting-room. On one side of this were two rude sofas covered with coarse canvass, with pillows of red and white striped cotton. Before one of them, near a window, stood a table spread with papers—a volume of St. Pierre's *Studies of Nature*, in the original, open as if in reading—and an unfinished letter in Spanish, which we afterwards learned was an answer to one I had brought from Rio de

. Janeiro. A half dozen old-fashioned chairs of unpainted wood, with backs and cushions of stamped leather, constituted the remaining furniture of the room.

Padre Arrieta soon entered from an inner apartment—a tall and largely framed man, but of thin habit, about sixty years of age, in the garb of the Franciscans, with an elastic cap of brown silk on his head. He received me, as a friend of Mr. Tudor, with great kindness, professing a strong attachment to him, and at once making all those minute inquiries which sincere affection dictates.

After a conversation of some time, he expressed a regret that he had no refreshments, not even fruit, of which, at most times, he has an abundance from his own grounds, to offer us, and proposed a walk in the garden, from a supposition, probably, that it would gratify me to view the whole establishment. A short passage, opening on either side into small dormitories, led from the room in which we were, to a library, a large and fine apartment, containing many hundred volumes, and some philosophical and scientific apparatus. Several folios in Latin, open on different stands, gave evidence to habits of study; while glass globes containing beautiful silver and gold fish, and vases of fragrant and splendid flowers, manifested a refinement of taste.

From the library we entered a rude piazza, or veranda, embowered with the vine and foliage of the muscadel grape; in which were several neat cages containing various birds, whose songs, he remarked, were a source of much innocent enjoyment in the retirement of his life. The garden, which he cultivates himself, is small, but well stored with fine fruit, abundant in its season. He very kindly proposed furnishing me with any seeds of fruits, or slips of the vine, &c. I might wish to carry with me to the Islands; an offer which I thankfully accepted.

From the garden we returned through the library and sitting-room to the vestibule, and from it entered the chapel, to view the paintings it contains. This is a neat and elegant apartment, sixty feet in length and thirty wide, with a lofty arched ceiling. The architecture is simple, and the altar at the farther end rich and beautiful, surmounted by a crucifix, on which the body is large as life, with rays of heavy gilding passing in all directions from it, so as to fill up the whole arch under which it stands in front of the sacristy.

So many genuflections, multiplied, no doubt, from having two heretics in company, were required from the padre, in making his way from the entrance to the chancel after us, that we had full time for this coup d'œil, before he came up to point out the pieces of particular merit lining the walls on both sides. All the paintings are illustrative of the closing scenes in the history of Him, who died that "whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life." The entrance to Jerusalem, amid the hosannas of the multitude; then, in strong contrast, the smiting, spitting upon, and buffeting, before the high priest; the passion of Gethsemane, and the angels strengthening him while his disciples slept; the scourging and nailing to the cross, and the yielding up of the ghost—all vividly and affectingly portrayed, and tending, in the silence and sanctity of the place, as viewed in a chastened and sober light partially let in from above, powerfully to excite the natural sympathy of the heart, and melt to tenderness the sensibilities of the soul.

And here, in my view, lies the grand objection to the introduction of such exhibitions in a place of devotion; not that the sympathy of our nature may not justly and advantageously be made the handmaid of piety; but from the danger that exists, when it is thus excited, that "the deceitful and de-

ceiving heart" within us will substitute it, with a fatal self-complacency, for the high and heavenly graces of genuine penitence and love.

Some of the representations of the suffering and ignominy of the Saviour of sinners, in the churches of this city, both in painting and statuary, are such, that I have myself at the sight, with the associations rushing on the mind in connexion with them, been irresistibly affected, when in a meditative mood, almost to tears; and can readily imagine how the ignorant and superstitious might interpret the excitement of a feeling thus purely natural, and neither morally good nor evil, into an exercise of piety commendatory and acceptable to God. From the exhibitions of this kind which I have witnessed in seeming penitents weeping at a shrine, and also from observation on the fruits of their devotion, I am persuaded that, independently of every error in belief or practice in the religion of the people, a deadly delusion on this point most extensively prevails among the common, if not higher, classes here.

The piece representing the scourging after condemnation, is the best in the number, and an admirable painting; worth, at Lima, the padre says, a thousand dollars—and it would in Europe probably be valued at a much greater sum.

"A house of penance" is one, to which those desirous, or under an obligation from the church, of doing penance, resort during its performance, and where they remain so many days or weeks in the practice of various austerities, in listening to the exhortations of the father, and joining in the repetition of prayers and the celebration of mass. At the close of the appointed time they make confession, and being absolved by the breath of man, return to the world, too often, from all I can learn, only again to become the victims of its sin and its guilt.

So great is the reputation of the Padre Arrieta for

sanctity, that his house often contains not less than fifty or more penitents at the same time, all eating and sleeping, for the period, within its walls. The whole establishment has been erected, and is supported, at his own expense, or by funds collected by him for the purpose.

Though the convent of St. Francisco is deserted, and in comparative ruins, still it is in better repair than any other foundation of a similar kind in the city. Churches, convents, and nunneries may be seen in every direction, shattered and peeled without by earthquakes, and stripped of much of their riches within by the hand of the marauder and revolutionist; while the impoverished monks are scattered abroad in the country for subsistence, or still linger in ragged and dirty garb around their ruinous and deserted cloisters in the city; in many instances, bearing in every look marks of low dissipation, seen in America and in England only in the most inveterate frequenters of the tippling-shop and tap-room.

Still the devotion of the population to Catholicism is manifested in almost daily processions, in which are exhibited a most incongruous mixture of splendour and beggary; in the number of the priesthood yet in apparent affluence and power; in the numerous shrines in the streets; and in public appeals at the corners for money to deliver souls from purgatory.

I passed a priest this morning standing in the street, with a plate extended for this charity. Beside him, fixed to the angle of a building, was an image representing a beautiful young female, enveloped to the waist in raging flames; while, with the dishevelled hair, eyes streaming with tears, and arms extended in a supplicating attitude, the commiseration and mercy of all were invoked, by the following inscription in Spanish on a tablet beneath:

“Fathers, brothers, friends, sons, treat us not with impiety: have you no charity? Are we your enemies?”

Like beggars, we beseech alms to appease an offended Deity. Passing us without regard, what souls can you have, not to wish to relieve us !”

## LETTER XXII.

### RETURN FROM LIMA, AND FAREWELL VISIT ON SHORE.

U. S. ship *Guerriere*, at Callao,  
July 3d, 1820.

IN this you have my last date, dear H—, on board the *Guerriere*: it is now 10 o'clock at night, and the *Vincennes* sails to-morrow.

The weather and climate of Peru, during the fortnight I have been here, have disappointed me as greatly as the desolate aspect of the country and the state of its capital. It is the winter of the latitude; and to me, in this respect, it has emphatically been “the winter of my discontent.” There is an unceasing haze and drizzly mist in the atmosphere, often bordering very closely on a shower, called ironically by the sailors, who feel all the inconvenience of it in their night and morning watches, “*Peruvian dew*.” Even in its summer brightness, though equable and bland as a zephyr on May-day with us, I am told that to foreign residents the climate is as insidious as fair, that it smiles only to destroy. The powers of the constitution are insensibly undermined beneath its blandishments, and premature decrepitude and an early grave are the result.

The principal visits of interest made in Lima, after that to the Padre Arrieta, were to the churches and monasteries of the Dominican and St. Augustine friars; to the chapels of the nunneries of Santa Anna and Santa Clara, where I had a sight through the grates, of the nuns at worship, &c.; to a Lancasterian

school; to some of the hospitals; and to the Pantheon, or general place of burial, three miles from the city, up the valley of the Rimac.

The school, the only one of the kind in the city, kept in a part of the convent of St. Thomas, is in a languishing state, and contains only one hundred and forty children, though the population of the city is fifty thousand. The principal appears an intelligent man, and much interested in the success of the experiment in the republic, but complains of a want of patronage. General Santa Cruz, a full-length portrait of whom hangs against the wall of one of the rooms, was a warm friend of the institution when he was at the head of the government; but none of his successors have followed the praiseworthy example.

The Pantheon shows to great advantage from the walls and bridge of Lima, and from many points of the road leading to it. The main building, fronting on the street, is an octagon ninety feet in circumference, with a lofty dome, seen in every direction rising above a scattered plantation of cypress-trees, within an enclosure covering five or six acres of ground. In a rotunda, immediately beneath the dome in the centre of the building, stands a sarcophagus of glass, containing a full-sized representation of our Saviour in the tomb, the only object attracting special attention as you pass through to the grounds beyond.

When a funeral occurs, the body is not interred in the ground, but deposited in a horizontal position in a niche in broad walls erected for the purpose. It is then surrounded with lime, and the opening in front plastered up. These niches are arranged in tiers one above another, and are hired for a certain time, according to the wealth and rank of the individual deceased, at the expiration of which the remains are cast into a common vault, or, if the person be poor and unknown, are soon tossed over the walls in the rear, where the surface of the ground is white with

fragments of the human form, and literally "a place of skulls." Indeed, the whole establishment, notwithstanding the neatness of the architecture and beauty of its aspect without, from carelessness in the manner of interment, and an unnecessary exposure of the common and last receptacle, is a disgusting place, and, the moment you enter, manifestly to every sense "filled with dead men's bones and all uncleanness."

Since my return to the *Guerriere*, I have been chiefly occupied in preparations for the continuation of my voyage. This afternoon I took a farewell stroll on shore, and am confirmed, by a second inspection of the port, in the opinion that Callao is decidedly the most wretched place I ever beheld in a civilized country.

The castle and fortresses, notwithstanding, constitute a noble pile, and are constructed on the most approved principles of modern engineering. As they have already formed, and probably will still form, a conspicuous locality in the history of Peru, I felt desirous of inspecting the works, and applied to the governor for the privilege of an entrance. This was most cheerfully granted, and an officer appointed to conduct Mr. Henderson and myself around the ramparts, and through the towers. The fortress is extensive, enclosing within its walls quite a town, with a church and kind of state prison; this last a horrid place, with frightful dungeons filled with hundreds of unemployed convicts, huddled together in filth and rags. In the number I perceived two or three English and Irishmen, highwaymen, who have been sentenced to an imprisonment of fifteen years.

After having been shown every thing worthy of particular notice within, with an acknowledgment of the politeness of the governor and officer who had attended us, we took leave, and, recrossing the draw-bridge, directed our way to the site and ruins of



"Old Callao," on the point adjoining, which was utterly overwhelmed by the great earthquake of 1746; a calamity among the most fearful of its kind on record, by which the whole population perished in a moment, and the sea, like a mountain, rolled in upon the ruins, burying much of the shipping in port beneath the mighty surge, and bearing a frigate on its waters two miles and more into the country.

The place, and objects presented by it, accorded well with the tone of my feelings. Unaccustomed even to slight indisposition, the oppression I am at present suffering has affected, in a degree, the usual buoyancy of my spirits; and in view of the speedy breaking up of all my associations and attachments on board the *Guerriere*, I am not only sick in body, but under the influence also of the *mal du pays*. Weary of changes so exciting and so painful, my thoughts hurry with even more than ordinary warmth to the objects of affection bound to me for life; and as, in imagination, I scale the Andes, and every intervening barrier between me and "the happy valley" around the waters of the Otsego, my only language is, "Oh that I had the wings of a dove! for then would I flee away"—not to "the wilderness," but—to all the blessings of my country and my home!

But to return to the scene of the earthquake. The whole surface of the ground, for a wide extent, is broken and distorted by the tops of houses and churches, whose foundations are far beneath; and sections of walls are here and there seen, in the inclined position in which they were caught by the gaping earth, as they fell under its agitations; while bones and ashes are widely strewed around.

Not satisfied with the exhibition which these desolations of the ancient catastrophe still present, the passing generation has added a horrible deformity to the scene, by making these ruins the receptacle for the unburied bodies of the hundreds and thousands

who have perished by famine and by sword in the political convulsions of the last ten years, within and around the neighbouring castle. Heaps of skulls and broken skeletons are clustered on every side, while entire bodies, shrivelled and dried like a mummy, with the clothes in which they were shot or cast down still clinging to them—from the once showy uniforms of the officer and soldier, to the rags and tatters of the beggar, with here and there a winding sheet—lie scattered abroad in sickening confusion and deformity! The scene was too horrible to witness, and almost too much so to describe; and we hastened from it to the beach, on the side of the point open to the full swell of the sea.

Here the wildest and most fearful surf was rolling, as if again about to burst over its wonted barrier, and desolate the land. Beneath a gloomy and clouded sky, it, too, looked melancholy; and I returned on board ship, sick at heart at the many evidences I had met, both among the living and the dead, in the short walk of an hour, of the sin, and sorrow, and calamity with which the world has been and still is filled!

It was near sunset; and then came my last address and my last prayer with the crew—not calculated, in the immediate and necessary association, to dissipate the gloom, had not the only source of true consolation, and the brightness of an unchanging world, where “all tears shall be wiped from our eyes,” and there “shall be pleasures for evermore,” been sweetly brought to sight by the hymn of Moore containing these beautiful lines:

“Oh! who could bear life's stormy doom,

Did not thy wing of love

Come brightly wafting through the gloom

Our peace-branch from above:

Then sorrow, touch'd by thee, grows bright,

With more than rapture's ray,

As darkness shows us worlds of light

We never saw by day.”

## Washington Islands.

---

### LETTER XXIII.

#### DEPARTURE FROM PERU.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, off Callao,  
July 4, 1829.

THE Guerriere, dear H——, is no longer my home, and I am once more afloat in the midst of strangers. The morning was to me a sad one, spent chiefly, till the hour I expected to join this ship, in scribbling, by farewell notes, to Commodore Thompson and Captain Smith, what I dared not trust to my lips, when I should be called to give them the parting hand; and in passing from deck to deck, to bid adieu, as I had opportunity, to the crew individually.

The Vincennes was expected to weigh anchor at twelve o'clock, immediately after the firing of a national salute by each vessel of the squadron, in honour of the day; and, early after breakfast, Captain Smith kindly apprised me of an intention of seeing me on board my new home in his own gig. This he did, but not till my heart had been deeply touched by a letter of much good-will and affection from him. Coming, utterly unexpected as it did, from one I had learned to admire as a man, and sincerely to love as a friend, but of whose cordial return of warm interest I was till then ignorant, the perusal of it affected me, under the circumstances, even to tears; and gave me the feelings of a child, when called immediately afterwards to exchange parting salutations with my shipmates of the steerage, and fellow-officers of the

gun-room. And when I came at last to Commodore Thompson, alone in his private apartment, I was incapable of uttering a word—to have opened my lips, in answer to his assurances of every kind regard, accompanied with a warm blessing, would have been to betray a weakness of which I should have been ashamed—and I left the cabin literally speechless.

Different marks of honour are shown to different officers, according to their respective rank, both on coming on board, and on leaving a ship-of-war; and, as these are always paid when the individual receiving them crosses the gangway, the etiquette established is, that an inferior precede a superior in entering a boat alongside. Had I been alone, I should have been attended by two side-boys only at the ladder, and a boatswain's mate to "*pipe over*," as the phrase is: but a captain is entitled to four side-boys, to the attendance of the boatswain himself, and to a guard of marines presenting arms. When the boat was reported to the captain on the quarter-deck as ready, I, of course, bidding farewell to the officer in command, moved before him to the gangway, the boatswain at the foot of the steps beginning at the same time his whistle. By some means I had missed him in my morning round; and now, stretching out his left hand, while he held his pipe in the other, he seized mine as I was passing, and shook and piped, and shook and piped, again and again—the officer of the deck, marines; captain, and all, waiting my movements—till the tears rolled down his cheeks, and I was obliged to tear my hand from his iron grasp, and hasten over.

Captain Smith could not avoid a smile, as he followed, and evidently was not displeased at the disregard of ceremony into which the feelings of the generous-hearted man had betrayed him; and as he looked up, after taking his seat in the gig, and saw every port filled with sober faces, he broke silence

by saying, "It makes our good fellows look sad, Mr. Stewart, to see you shove off; and, to tell you the truth, I suspect none of us have felt more so, since we bade our own fire-sides farewell."

I mention these trifles, to show you the reason there is to believe that the office and services of piety are far from being regarded with indifference on board a man-of-war; and that, even in the hardest sailor's bosom, there are affections alive to the true character, design, and value of the appointment.

The wind was too light to allow of sailing at the time intended, and we did not get under way till sunset; but we then did it beautifully. The hour was greatly in our favour for effect, as we filled gently away, in the gaze of all the shipping of the port, and dropt closely under the stern of the *Guerriere*, crowded with eager spectators, from the quarter-deck to the fore-castle.

As in the deepest silence we approached her quarter, the rigging of the *Vincennes*, at a given signal, was in an instant manned by the whole crew in holiday dress, and we gave three noble cheers, followed by "Hail Columbia!" from a delightful band. A thundering answer was quickly poured from the shrouds of the *Guerriere*, filled as by magic with hundreds that I love. It seemed to come from the heart; and while I accredited a full portion of the enthusiasm breathed in it to myself, it thrilled through the heart: then we gave another three, followed by "Yankee Doodle;" and, as we glided by, heaping sail upon sail to the breeze, cheer after cheer burst upon and around us, from the *Guerriere*, the *St. Louis*, and the *Dolphin*, till, hiding my face in my cap, and leaning against the mizzen rigging, I wept like a child: and mine, I can assure you, dear H——, were far from being the only tears.

As we rapidly cleared the shipping, "Auld Lang Syne," in all the power of its best associations,

breathed its plaintive melody around ; and I know not where the excitement would have ended, had not " Home—sweet—sweet Home !" as we spread all our canvass to the breeze, brought, with the fulness of its tones, thoughts and affections that hurried the imagination, for the time, far from the passing scene.

The darkness of the night almost immediately afterwards gathered round us, and I retired to my state-room ; but had scarce thrown myself on my mattress for a moment of repose, before the cry, " A man overboard !" rang once more through the ship. I had been under the excitement of such strong feeling during the whole day, however, that it scarce produced on me its almost irresistible effect : and had not the lad—it proved to be a lad of fifteen or sixteen—been speedily picked up by a boat, I should have been obliged to charge myself with a want of sensibility, notwithstanding the many gushes of feeling through which I had just gone. The agitation I experienced, however, may have been quite as great as that suffered by the boy himself : for, on scrambling over the ship's sides, and stepping on the deck again, his only exclamation, as he looked at his feet, and that, too, with an air of no little nonchalance, was, "*I'll be hanged if one of my shoes an't gone !*"

## LETTER XXIV.

### VOYAGE TO THE WASHINGTON ISLANDS.

U. S. ship Vincennes, at Sea,  
July 26, 1829.

THE first destination of the Vincennes is to the Washington Islands, a group in the vicinity of the Marques de Mendocça's, and frequently included with them under the general appellation of the " Marquesas." They bear a relation to these last, both in position and proximity, similar to that which

the Society Islands do to the Georgian group, rather more than a degree farther west.

Though the Marquesas were discovered by a Spanish voyager so early as the year 1595, the Washington group, scarce a degree distant to the north-west from them, remained unknown to the world till 1791; when they were first seen by Captain Ingraham, of Boston, and in the succeeding year visited by Captain Roberts, of the same place, who gave them the name by which they are now generally designated, and to which, by established usage in such cases, they are justly entitled.

They are three in number—Huahuka, Nukuhiva or Nuuhiva, and Uāpou—forming a triangle, by their relative position to each other, the points of which are included within the parallels of  $8^{\circ} 38'$  and  $9^{\circ} 32'$  S. latitude, and  $139^{\circ} 20'$  and  $140^{\circ} 10'$  W. longitude, from Greenwich. Huahuka is the most eastern of the three; Nukuhiva lies about twenty miles directly west of it; and Uapou thirty miles south of the central parts of Nukuhiva. Nukuhiva (twenty miles in length, and of nearly the same breadth, and having three or four good harbours on its coast) is much the largest and most important of the three; and that alone which ships have frequented. It is the island, you will recollect, at which Commodore Porter refitted his squadron in the Pacific, during the late war between the United States and Great Britain, and is the principal scene of the journal which he published.

The inhabitants are now, as they then were, in every respect unchanged, except it may be in an addition of corruption, among those in the immediate vicinity of the harbour occasionally visited by ships, from a licentious intercourse with unprincipled white men from civilized and christian countries. It will add much to the interest of our cruise among the different islands we expect to visit in the course of our voyage, thus to commence our observations

on those which are still in the original heathenish state of the whole of Polynesia, from the advantage it will afford, of enabling us to make a just comparison between the condition and prospects of immortal beings, still in all the darkness of paganism, and others (most emphatically and truly "bone of their bone, and flesh of their flesh") upon whose characters and condition the enlightening and regenerating influences of Christianity have been made, in a greater or less degree, to bear.

The inhabitants of the Marquesas, radically the same people, are both physically and morally in circumstances precisely similar; and although it is not the intention of Captain Finch to touch at that group, the account I shall give, and every observation we shall make, on the Nukuhivans, will apply essentially to them.

We are now sixteen days from Callao, without any incident worthy of notice. Having run the whole distance in the full strength of the south-east trade-winds, and directly in their course, we have had a breeze unceasingly fresh and fair, with all the inconvenience of rolling so heavily before it, as to have been denied, to a great degree, every profitable occupation of time, even that of reading with comfort. Yesterday was our sabbath. The only difference in the mode of performing religious service here, and on board the *Guerriere*, is in the signal used in assembling the crew. Instead of the boatswain's pipe, followed by the hoarse call around the decks, "*All hands to prayers, ahoy!*" as the bell strikes the time, the "*Portuguese Hymn*," from the band, breathes to every heart, in sweet and solemnizing strains, the welcome invitation,

"O come, and let us worship,"—

while, from all parts of the ship, we silently obey its impressive call. My desk is the capstan, spread with the American ensign: beside which, I stand



mounted on a *shot-box*, to secure the elevation of a foot or two above my audience.

At the close of the sermon, yesterday, Mr. Stribling, the first lieutenant, took my station, and read to the ship's company the following general order :—

“ As it is possible that we may be in port at the Washington, or Northern Marquesas Islands, before the next Sabbath, I consider the present a proper occasion to say to the crew, that the natives of Nukuhiva, the island at which we shall anchor, have been so variously described by different persons who have at long intervals been amongst them, and their treatment of strangers represented as so fickle and uncertain, that I feel it a difficult task to determine in what light safely to regard them : and I therefore design to be cautious in the intercourse which I may permit to exist between them and us, that we may ourselves judge the more justly of them.

“ The object of our visit is of a diversified nature, but is directed especially with the view to secure harmonious intercourse between them and those of our defenceless seafaring countrymen, whose pursuits are lawful, and whose necessities compel them to resort to harbour for refreshment and supplies ; to reclaim those who, from thoughtlessness or improper motives, may have remained amongst them ; to exhibit our own moral advancement ; to elevate our national character in their estimation ; and, by the contrast thus presented, to induce a praiseworthy imitation on their part.

“ To effect these desirable results, it is incumbent on us to be circumspect in every part of our conduct ; to impose, if necessary, unusual restraints upon ourselves ; to display, without arrogance, the superior advantages of our condition ; to deal with frankness and honesty ; to check in ourselves undue curiosity ; to abstain from sensual indulgences and gross familiarities ; and to treat them as a sovereign people.

“ These remarks are preliminary to, and I hope will explain the propriety of, my interdicting all officers, and other persons, going from the ship without appropriate uniform, and suitable protection of arms &c.; and the further inhibiting natives, men or women, from coming on board, unless under peculiar, or such other circumstances as have heretofore been the usage of the ship in other ports.

“ If, after such interviews as may ensue between the chiefs and myself, I can be satisfied that we may safely trust ourselves on shore, then it will be a pleasure to grant such liberty to the crew to visit the island, as may be consistent with the stay of the ship and indispensable duty on board; expecting, as I shall, punctuality of return, correctness of deportment, and a disposition to aid the intentions already expressed.

“ W. C. B. FINCH.”

“ July 19, 1849.”

From this official document, (contrasting, so strongly as it does, with addresses that are known to have been made by commanders of vessels to their crews, in approaching the South Sea Islands,) you will perceive, my dear H——, that the Vincennes is a “ *tabu ship*”—a characteristic of no little importance, and of no small value, among the islands of the Pacific.

To one ignorant of the gross licentiousness to which too many of the ships from christian lands are here voluntarily surrendered by their commanders, the propriety of such an inhibition might seem singular; but to you, who, from your own observation, know too well how readily men, in this dark part of our world, not only abandon the principles and the practices of sound morality, but boldly cast off the most salutary restraints of decency and civilization, there is no need of saying, that every counteracting and reproofing example is most desirable and most praiseworthy.

While visiting Captain Finch in his cabin last evening, he apprised me of his intention, and submitted the order to my inspection. His views and feelings, in reference to the whole voyage, and of the importance of an exemplary deportment from all attached to the ship, are most decided; and he appears determined to make the cruise of the Vincennes among the islands, as far as in his power, productive, in every respect, of the highest possible good to the different governments and people we may visit.

---

## LETTER XXV.

### ARRIVAL AT NUKUHIVA.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Bay of Taiphae,  
July 27th, 1829.

We are once more at anchor. Yesterday at twelve o'clock, just after worship, Huahuka, the most eastern island of the Washington group, was descried on our lee bow, thirty miles distant. We at once bore down for it, and, weathering the south-east point, coasted for a distance of fifteen miles closely along its southern shore. On this side, it seemed lofty, precipitous, and barren; too much so, we judged, to be inhabited: its greatest height was estimated at fifteen hundred or two thousand feet.

Like most other high tropical islands that I have seen, it is deeply furrowed with narrow glens, separated from each other by sharp spurs of mountain, running from the highland in the centre to the shore. Here and there a small plain, or table land, and occasionally a short sand-beach, appears, but no alluvial interval, and generally a bold coast, with breakers dashing high against its dark cliffs. No woodland was to be seen, except on the loftiest peaks of the interior; but all the high ridges and valleys, and the whole surface of the country, is beautifully verdant from a heavy growth of tufted grass.

As we sailed west, the wildness of the formation rapidly increased, and we soon made the south-west point. Near this are two small islets, evidently once a part of the main land : on passing closely round which, we opened the western side, and in a few moments came in sight of one or two small coves, overhung by hills covered with wood and low bushes.

As yet we had discovered no sign whatever of inhabitants. Every thing on shore seemed solitary as the desert. Disappointed in this respect, and the night rapidly approaching, we were about to bear away for Nukuhiva, already dimly descried far in the west from us, when a high bluff of rocks directly abreast of the ship became suddenly crowned with islanders, whose light skins and naked figures were perfectly distinguishable, while the shores rang with wild shouts, as they waved streamers of white cloth high on their spears, and tossed their mantles above their heads in the air. Having too much sail set, readily to check the way of the ship, we soon shot past, while they, scampering along the heights, and over the hill ahead, shouted and whistled, wildly gesticulating with their hands and arms, and waving their tapas.

We reduced sail as rapidly as possible, and, getting at the same time under the lee of the land, our speed was quickly lessened to an almost insensible progress, and we were expecting the party soon to be up with us again, when the figures of others were seen against the sky, hurrying down the face of a rocky promontory just ahead, hallooing and beckoning, and waving their streamers.

The hills behind this bluff rise precipitately, and are beautifully wooded. In coming abreast of it, we found it to shelter, by its projection, a short pebbly beach, opening into a narrow ravine, filled with groves to the water's edge. The front of the glen is but a few rods in width, and so completely occupied

with trees as to appear but one deeply shaded bower. Nothing like a habitation could be discerned, and it is probable that the shelter of the groves and the recesses of the rocks, constitute the only abodes of the forty or fifty natives seen among the cliffs, or clustering in rude excitement on the shore.

The scene was one of the wildest imaginable, and such as few have it in their power ever to behold. The picturesque beauty of the wooded hills and glen brightly gleaming in the setting sun, the naked figures of the islanders, and their rude and extravagant gestures and vociferations, exhibiting man in the simplest state of his fallen nature, still the unclothed tenant of the forest and the inhabitant of the cave, could scarce fail in producing a most powerful sensation among those who had never before witnessed any thing of the kind. And I suspect no one on board was disappointed in the depth of the impression, or degree of excitement, occasioned by this first scene in the South Seas.

To me, the sight, though singularly wild and striking, was not, as you, dear H——, well know, an entire novelty; and strongly associated in my mind, as it unavoidably became, with the ignorance, degradation, and thousand miseries which long personal observation has taught me to believe inseparable from such a condition, the excitement I felt, in common with my companions, was far from being one of unmingled pleasure.

In the midst of the shouting and apparent opportunity for us to land, Captain Finch ordered the music on deck; and the moment its full and animated strains reached the shore, the effect on them was most evident; they instantly crouched to the ground in perfect silence, as if under the influence of a charm. As the night was rapidly approaching, there was no time to attempt sending a boat off; and while the band continued to play a succession of

airs, the ship was headed for Nukuhiva, and all sail again set. We were soon beyond the reach of their voices ; but they were seen, while the shades of the evening gathered round them, still to remain seated on the rocks, and under their dark bowers, as if absorbed in silent wonder and admiration.

This incident of a few rapid moments became to me the inlet of a thousand recollections and feelings, inducing a melancholy mood. The remembrance of what I once believed and hoped would have been my occupation for life, among an untutored race like these ; the experience I had known of the contentment, happiness, and success that may attend missionary pursuits ; the interruption of all my plans ; my present station, and object in visiting this group, not to attempt to dissipate the darkness that hangs over its inhabitants, but only to glance at them for a day, and see them no more for ever, leaving them in their ignorance and their sins, still to remain unrescued victims to the vices of those who may occasionally visit them—all made me sad.

It is probable that few ships, if any, have ever before been so near to this little spot : and to its rude inhabitants, our beautiful vessel, with her numerous crew in their Sunday dress of uniform whiteness, our floating banners, and our full-toned band, must have seemed for the moment like a vision from a better world. O that some far happier bark might speedily be seen from their shores, bearing to them that which is no dream nor “ cunningly devised fable,” but the wisdom of God, and the power of God unto salvation.

The channel between Huahuka and Nukuhiva being less than thirty miles wide, we ran only a part of the night, and lay-to the remainder. This morning at six o'clock we were eight or ten miles from this last island, with the whole east end fully in view. Upou, the third of the group, was also in sight,

twenty miles south of us, and Huahuka still visible about the same distance to the east. The highest peaks of Nukuhiva, we judged to be between two and three thousand feet above the level of the ocean. Its eastern end is perfectly iron bound, presenting an uninterrupted succession of barren precipices. As we approached with a gentle breeze, the only object that attracted particular attention was the headland forming the south-east point, for which we were steering. It is a bold and lofty promontory, surmounted by a gigantic rock, having a most striking resemblance to the ruinous watch-tower of some dilapidated castle, upheld by ponderous bastions, and terminating in a formation which requires but little fancy to transform into battlements and parapet. I secured a correct drawing of it; and after the example of Captain Jones, of U. S. ship Peacock, we call the point "Tower Bluff."

On passing this, we opened on the right, the deep bay and valley of Oomi, inhabited by the Taipiis, the warlike tribe with whom Commodore Porter skirmished, while refitting his squadron in the harbour in which we are now lying. The valley is filled with verdure, and richly covered to the mountain tops with groves of the cocoa-nut and bread-fruit. A high green point, clothed only with grass, and a still deeper arm of the sea running three or four miles inland, separate this valley and its waters from that of the Hapas, the only tribe intervening between the Taipiis and the Teiis, the occupants of Taiohae, immediately round our anchorage.

There being no obstruction to the navigation along the coast, (except a single point of rock above water, within a mile of Tower Bluff, opposite the valley of the Taipiis,) we ran close in with the shore, and soon approached a fleet of fishing canoes. They were filled with men of the Hapa tribe, who, the moment they descried the ship, began hauling in their lines and fishing-tackle, in readiness to board us.

There was no little excitement on our decks, in the prospect of a close observation of these creatures; and, as we came in among them and caught the wild sounds of the joyous chatter and laugh, with which they expressed their surprise at sight of us, and greeted our approach, every one was ready to throw a line to the numbers who leaped from their canoes into the sea, to get hold on some part of the ship, and to mount her sides as she passed. By the assistance thus afforded, five or six succeeded in the attempt, though we were under considerable sail. Some of these were entirely naked, and in this respect a degree more barbarous than most of the Sandwich Islanders I ever saw; but all appeared as good-natured and jovial as could be.

It soon was ascertained from them, that their tribe and the Taipiis were, as usual, at war; and that only two days previously there had been a sea-fight between them near the spot at which we then were. Their grimaces of detestation and deadly hatred to their enemies, as they pointed to their habitations and valley, and pantomimic representations of the battle, the discharge of the muskets, and effect of the shot, were quite amusing; while they used all the eloquence of speech and gesture to induce us to espouse their cause, and pour destruction on the poor Taipiis, whose very name seemed to be a watchword of terror among them. For this purpose they wished us much to come to an anchor near their valley, opposite; but finding us determined to proceed to this harbour, they continued on board, the Teiis being at present their friends and allies.

Some of the crew quickly took compassion on their nakedness; and they had been but a few minutes with us, before they were metamorphosed, from bare savages, into sturdy tars, in frocks, trowsers, and tarpaulins, pulling and hauling at the rigging in the management of the ship, with as much ex-



pertness as if they had been before the mast all their lives.

The distance from Tower Bluff to the entrance of Taiohae, or Massachusetts Bay, as Commodore Porter called it, is about eight miles; the coast, after passing the valley of the Hapas, being bold and lofty, without any opening or lowland. Besides the distance from Tower Bluff, two striking landmarks indicate the approach to it; the one, a red faced rock, and the other a white stripe down a dark cliff, having at a distance the appearance of a cascade, and being probably the channel of a watercourse in heavy rains. The immediate entrance is designated by two small islets, or rocks, in a line with the coast, one on each side of the channel, called the east and west "Sentinels," according to their respective situations. We rounded that on the eastern side so closely, as to be able almost to cast a biscuit upon it, and at once had the whole of the bay and valley in view.

Picture to yourself a smooth basin eight or nine miles in circumference, stretching in a circular form from the narrow passage between the Sentinels, about three miles inland, and terminating at that distance in a curving beach of sand, three-fourths of a mile or more in length. This beach is the front of a valley of the same width, which rises gradually for a couple of miles, and then, branching into three or four others more narrow and steep, suddenly terminates on every side in the abrupt acclivities and precipices of a range of lofty mountains which encloses the whole, and descends on either side, to the Sentinels at the entrance, in bold promontories of rock, thinly covered with a green sward.

From the beach in the centre, luxuriant groves spread widely among bright unwooded hills, and velvet-like lawns, through the valleys behind, and up the lower hills, skirting them to the highest elevations. At the head of the principal valley, a gigantic

pyramid of rock presents an object strikingly unique in its form and position ; on the right, and behind it, a perpendicular basaltic wall of several hundred feet crowns the summit of the loftiest mountain, and opposite, on the left, an immense projecting cliff of gray stone, mantled with trees, and richly-hanging parasitical plants, seems ready momentarily to leap from the face of the precipice against which it stands, to the bosom of the green valley below. Innumerable ridges and glens intersect the whole ; down which the mountain streams tumble and foam in rapids and cascades.

The valleys are so thickly covered with trees, that few of the habitations of the natives are seen. Three or four occupy the open summit of some of the nearest hills ; the bleached thatch of others, here and there peeps through the heavy foliage embowering them, and one or two are discerned in the solitudes of the mountain forests.

Such, my dear H——, are some of the most striking images caught in a first glance over the bay and valley of Taiohae.

On passing the Sentinels, the wind which we had carried in with us became light, and soon died entirely away ; so that we were obliged to anchor more than a mile from the beach ; a light breeze afterward, however, enabled us to move inward a half mile farther, and take the station we wished on the eastern side, just opposite the former encampment of Commodore Porter.

While yet under way, two or three canoes were seen paddling towards us from the fishing grounds near the sea, and others from the centre of the bay : and we had scarce let go our anchor, before scores of both sexes came swimming in all directions from the shore, soon surrounding the ship, sporting and blowing like so many porpoises. They were all received on board ; and we quickly had noise and

confusion in abundance. I should think the number on board amounted to at least one hundred and fifty, or two hundred.

It was not till two or three hours that a canoe of chieftains was announced as alongside. The party consisted of Moana, the prince, or king of the tribe, a boy about eight years of age; of Haapé, guardian of the prince, and regent during the minority; with Tenaé, a son of the same age as Moana; and Piaroro, or Piaoo, a chief of rank from the neighbouring tribe of the Hapas. Neither men nor boys had any other clothing than the simple maro of an inferior kind of tapa, or native cloth. I never saw brighter looking little fellows than the prince and his companion, and, as if by common consent, they at once became favourites with the officers.

Haapé is a middle-aged man, of mild countenance, and seemingly of most kind and amiable feelings. He welcomed us with great cordiality—taking it for granted, that, by the arrival of one of "*Porter's ships*," as they call all American vessels, he had gained just the kind of ally against the Taipis that he needed. He is scarcely above the common size, not corpulent, and much in his whole appearance like a chief of the third rank at the Sandwich Islands. Most of his hair, which is slightly gray, was shorn off, except on the crown, where a bunch was closely gathered, and tied in a knot with a string of white tapa. His only ornaments were a pair of ear-rings neatly carved from a whale's tooth.

A first glance at Piaroro tells him to be of high rank, a prince by nature as well as blood; one of the finest looking men I ever saw—tall and large, not very muscular, but of admirable proportions, with a general contour of figure, and roundness and polish of limb, that would do grace to an Apollo. His skin is so perfectly covered with tatau, in a variety of tasteful and symmetrical figures, as to give

him the appearance of being clothed ; and though it is apparent that naturally his complexion was as fair as most of his countrymen, his whole face and head, chest and shoulders, are, from this cause, as black as ever an Othello is pictured to be.

His features, too, are of a noble style ; teeth as regular and beautifully white as nature ever made ; and the whole expression of his countenance benignant though aristocratic, with manners retiring and dignified. The dressing of the head seems to constitute a principal labour of the toilette of both sexes ; and Piaroro's hair was arranged with the greatest care, being tied very smoothly and closely with white tapa in two bunches on the top.

My partial knowledge of the Hawaiian language, which does not differ radically from that spoken at this group, enabled me to interchange ideas to some extent with them ; and, by the aid of the five or six Society Islanders and Hawaiians belonging to the crew, Captain Finch succeeded so far in explaining the general object of his visit, as to make them understand that we came neither for trade nor war, but to express our good-will towards them, purchase from them such refreshments as were desirable, and render them any service of kindness in our power.

After communicating these facts, and learning others from them concerning the general state of their tribes and island at present, refreshments of bread, raisins, apples, &c., were served, when the band striking up on deck, they were quickly withdrawn by it from the cabin to the poop, partaking in no small degree till sunset of the general surprise and childish pleasure produced by it.

On entering the harbour, a white flag had been hoisted at the fore-top-mast head, as a signal that the ship was free of access to all who might choose to come on board. The captain informed them of the design of setting it, and told the chiefs that any

of the people might come off whenever they saw it flying ; but that the taking of it down would show that the ship was tabu till it should be hoisted again ; that now it was to be lowered for the night, and all on board, men and women, must start for the shore.

This, Haapé and Piaroro made known to the crowds thronging the decks and rigging from the poop to the forecastle, and began to put their authority by command in exercise, but in that mild and leisurely manner only, which is generally adopted, I believe, among all the Polynesians in ordinary cases, and especially in such as are not perfectly agreeable to themselves or the people. At first, little attention was paid to the order ; but when captain Finch repeated the injunction to the chiefs, assuring them that the ship must be cleared, they assumed a more authoritative and decided tone towards the people, and the men began plunging overboard amidst the confusion of a general chatter and exclamation. The ladies manifestly considered the order as referring only to the other sex, and very composedly remained clustered about, in the belief that, like all other ships, probably, that had ever visited them, the *Vincennes* was to be their home till her anchor was taken for sea again. And when, after repeated declarations that they too must go, they began to suspect the truth of the case, scarce any thing could exceed the looks of surprise. They seemed determined, by their dilatory movements in obeying the order, still further to test the reality of such an unknown measure ; and it was not till we beat to our usual evening quarters, and the officers very courteously pointed out the steps at the gangway to them, that they too began, with many a "*taha ! taha !*" to leap one after another into the water, and "*pull away,*" as they have learned themselves to say, for the shore. The chiefs said laughingly, as they took their leave to enter their canoe, "*This*

*is a strange ship?"* And I doubt not it is the first in which they have ever known any restriction to be placed on the grossest licentiousness.

After the vessel was thus cleared of noise and nakedness, and the perfumes of cocoa-nut oil and other strong odours which had greatly annoyed and disgusted us, Captain Finch invited me to a seat in his gig, in a row round the harbour, or rather that part of it within our anchorage. The excursion was delightful, and the scenery, mantled in the softness of a sunset tint, certainly as wild, if not as beautiful, as any I ever gazed on.

## LETTER XXVI.

### VALLEY OF TAIOHAE.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Nukuhiva,  
July 28th. 1829.

THE reveillé had scarce been beaten this morning, before the Vincennes was surrounded by the noise, loud talking, hallooing, and various rude merriment of the islanders. Finding the ship strictly tabu, they took possession, by permission of the officer of the deck, of the launch, which had been hoisted out, and moored at a little distance, and crowded her till her gunwales, though a heavy boat, were almost level with the water. As the white flag has not been hoisted during the day, they have been obliged to content themselves with that accommodation.

While bathing with Captain Finch, before breakfast, at a retired spot on the eastern shore, the chiefs we saw yesterday came to us, accompanied by an Englishman named Morrison. He has resided here several years, as a collector of sandal-wood; and the captain readily accepted his services as an interpreter—a part he is qualified to perform more satisfactorily than the Society and Sandwich Islanders of our crew, who are at times much embarrassed between an im-

perfect knowledge of English, and a variance between this dialect of the Polynesian tongue, and their own. The principal object of the visit, on the part of the chieftains, was to know when they might expect Captain Finch and his officers on shore; and 11 o'clock, having been appointed, we left them for breakfast.

Heavy showers of rain came down upon the bay, from the mountains in the interior, afterwards; but before noon it became clear and pleasant, and we prepared to make our promised visit. The party consisted, besides the Captain, of Lieutenants Dornin and Magruder; Midshipmen Irving, Taylor, Bissel, and Smith; a sergeant and guard of marines; and myself. The procession of boats, the display of arms and dress, and the manner of landing, were such as either to abash or intimidate those we intended to honour; the chiefs, who were standing on the beach to receive us, being evidently much embarrassed. It arose, most probably, from a sense of inferiority, for almost the first words of Haapé, as he led the way to his house, were in expressions of regret that he had no entertainment to offer us, in return for the kindness received by himself and friends on board ship yesterday.

A feast is a first expression of hospitality among themselves, and it is not improbable that he feared we might expect something of the kind from him on this occasion. Perceiving us satisfied on this point, however, and perfectly at our ease, they soon became equally free and unconstrained in their manner and conversation. They were all dressed, as on the preceding day, in the simple maro or girdle only. Some dozen or two of men, women, and children came running together to witness our landing, but the principal part of the inhabitants were at the ship, or absent in some other direction.

The house of Haapé, with whom Moana the young king resides, is situated on the brow of a small hill near the beach, and overlooks the bay. It is small,

but is a conspicuous object from the anchorage, and has a pretty, cottage-like appearance. The houses — though of very different sizes, from twenty to one hundred feet in length, from eight to sixteen in height, and from ten to fourteen and sixteen in breadth — are all of one shape and style, and vary materially in their form and construction from those of the Sandwich Islanders.

Here, the roofs, instead of descending to eaves on both sides of the ridgepole, have rafters in front only, while the back of the house descends perpendicularly or in a very slight inclination from the peak to the ground, giving to the exterior the appearance of an ordinary hut cut lengthwise in two. They are universally erected, so far as I have observed, on a platform of rough, but in many cases massive stone-work, from one to four feet in height, which extends two or three feet beyond the area of the house. The rafters descend in front to a plate, or timber, extending the whole length of the house, supported by a row of thick round pillars, from three to five feet in height, over which the eaves project sufficiently to screen the entrance from the weather.

At the peak, the rafters rest on a similar stick of timber, supported by two or more posts, from eight to fourteen feet in height. The space between them is filled with poles of bamboo, or of the light wood of the hibiscus, laid parallel, two or three inches apart, over which lighter sticks are placed horizontally, at regular intervals; the whole being neatly lashed together at the points of intersection. The back and ends are filled up in the same manner, and thus prepared for the external covering. This is of thatch, composed either of the leaf of the bread-fruit tree, the cocoa-nut, or palmetto, *chamærops humilis*, all of which are prepared for this purpose in different methods. The cocoa-nut leaf is from twelve to sixteen feet long, and deeply feathered on either side of the



rib running through the middle of it. This rib, or stem, is split from end to end, and the leaflets on each, braided closely together, forming a matting of that length, and one and a half or two feet in breadth. Thus prepared, they are placed on the rafters double, the higher ranges lapping over the lower in the manner of slate or shingles.

The leaf of the bread-fruit is two feet in length, one and more in width, and deeply indented. It is prepared for thatching, by stringing the leaves as closely as possible upon a rod of light wood, ten or twelve feet long, and half an inch in diameter, through a slit made in the stem of each leaf; it is then attached to the roof and sides in the same manner as the coconut, and forms a more durable and better thatch.

But the palmetto affords the most valued covering, and that most used, especially for the roof wherever found in sufficient abundance. Its fan-like leaves are fastened one by one, with their centres about a foot from each other, upon long split pieces of the hibiscus, which are then ranged upon the roof, sixteen or eighteen inches apart, and, thus disposed, lap considerably, every way, over each other. All these kinds of thatch, instead of becoming dark and sun-burnt, like the grass of the Sandwich Island huts, bleach beautifully; and, when seen at a distance, gleam among the groves, in the brightness of the day, like neatly whitened cottages in our own country.

The fronts of the habitations are seldom thatched. Sometimes they are entirely open; in which case the timber supporting the roof, and the pillars beneath, are generally neatly hewn and ornamented by braids of sennit, of various colours, white, black, yellow, &c. tied on in horizontal stripes, or diamonds, in a fanciful manner. In most of the houses, however, the front is composed of bamboos, lashed horizontally to the pillars at intervals of an inch or two, or in lattice-work, for the admission of light; in which case

there is a small door in the middle, furnished with a shutter, in a slide, to be closed or opened at pleasure. Such as this last was the front, and such the door, by which our party entered the dwelling of Haapé.

There were a number of persons in the house, besides his wife and female relatives, children, and servants; some sitting, and others lying and lounging around. The females were closely wrapped in large mantles of white tapa. Most of them wore neat turbans of the same, some a bandeau only, with the ends tastefully arranged on one side of the head, and others the hair simply in loose locks in the neck and over the shoulders. The wife of Haapé, a fine looking and graceful woman, was nursing a child some months old, of which she seemed very fond.

In every house the internal arrangement is the same. A smooth trunk of a cocoa-nut tree extends the whole length, a foot or two from the farther side. At an interval of about four feet, another lies parallel to it; and the space between, spread with grass and covered with mats, constitutes the bed of the whole family and household; the innermost log forming a general pillow, and the second a support for the lower limbs, which extend over it. The rest of the area is a paved floor, upon which they partake of their meals, and perform their in-door work.

Calibashes of food and water, wooden bowls and trays, some stone adzes, with other rude implements, numerous spears and war-clubs, and a few muskets sticking in the thatch, constituted the furniture of the establishment.

The crowd following us in, added to the heat and closeness of the house, the swarms of flies, strong smell of cocoa-nut oil, &c., soon made us very uncomfortable; and after a few expressions of civility, and assurances of the kind intention of our visit, Captain Finch distributed among the chiefs of both sexes some small, but to them valuable, presents, such as

axes and knives, and pieces of white calico. They were received with the utmost eagerness, and with an evident jealousy of one another, each secreting immediately whatever was placed in his possession.

After this, and a few moments spent in the examination of some spears, calibashes, wooden dishes, and other articles of manufacture, we proposed taking a walk inland, among the groves and plantations of the valley. As we left the house, a chief warrior was pointed out to us in the crowd, a small, but exceedingly athletic and muscular man, with sharp features and wild expression of countenance, and a tremendous head of bushy hair frizzled in every direction; cultivated, it is probable, to add to the terror of his looks in battle. He had a spear in one hand, and, at our request, went through the various rapid movements and gesticulations, terrific grimaces and savage shouts, of an onset; throwing so much of the excitement of reality into the exhibition, as at times to make one almost apprehend that, before we were aware of it, his spear might be found transfixed in some of us.

The surface of the valley is uneven, and entirely covered with groves of the breadfruit, cocoa-nut, and various other trees, with scarce a sign of any artificial cultivation. In a walk of more than a mile, we saw one or two small enclosures only, containing clusters of the cloth plant or paper mulberry, sugar-cane, and roots of the *dracæna terminalis*, and a few tobacco plants. These, however, appeared well kept; and the fences surrounding them very neatly constructed of bamboo, lashed horizontally to stakes set in the ground, with cords formed of the shreds of the cocoa-nut shell. Among the spontaneous growth, I recognized many of my old friends of the Sandwich Islands the *pandanus odorotissimus*, *aleurites triloba*, *arum costatum*, *eugenia malaccensis*, *acacia*, *gardenia. palma christi*, &c.

A rapid stream, runs in wide sweeps among the

thick groves, as it makes its way from a principal glen in the mountain, to the beech, and adds greatly to the picturesque aspect of the humble abodes of the inhabitants, scattered about in the deep shades overhanging its borders. We followed it for a mile, without meeting with any object worthy of very special attention, though we found the luxuriance and verdure of every thing around exceedingly refreshing, after a voyage of twenty-two days from the parched and desolate coast of Peru.

Our walk terminated at what may be called the *theatre*, or *opera house*, of the settlement, a large, rectangular platform of stone pavement, surrounded by low terraces, also laid with stone: the first designed for the public exhibitions of the song and the dance, and the last for the accommodation of the spectators who assemble to witness the performance. Entertainments of this kind are the most fashionable and favourite amusements at the Washington and the Marquesan groups. Every inhabited district has its *Tahua*, or public square of this kind: some of them so extensive, it is said, as to be capable of accommodating ten thousand people.

Impatient to visit one of their temples, I inquired of the interpreter where they were situated. He answered by pointing to a ruinous-looking building in the immediate vicinity—not differing otherwise in its appearance from the common habitations around us—and saying “that is a *Meae*.” He accounted for its present condition, by informing us that within the year past, a war had been carried on against the *Teiis*, occupying this valley, by their neighbours the *Hapas*, in which the latter were victors, and carried their spoiliations even to the temples, bearing away all the images, and leaving the buildings in ruins. No attempts, it appears, have since been made to replace the idols, or repair their former dwellings: an evidence of indifference to the symbols of their super-

stitutions, at which I was surprised. To the same cause, it seems, is to be attributed the many appearances of neglect and decay in the district, and the manifest poverty of the chiefs and people. Haapé himself is in a state of vassalage, and the whole valley in surveillance to Piaroro, the chieftain of the Hapas, here nominally as a guest, but in reality as ruler, and exactor of imposts.

After partaking of the delightful beverage of the cocoa-nut water, furnished us in abundance by the chiefs, we retraced our path to the beach.

Before joining the boats again, we were given to understand that the chiefs would return our visit in the afternoon, and Captain Finch invited the females of their families to accompany them. This they promised to do, if a boat were sent for them; explaining the reason of the request, by informing us, that the native canoes are utterly interdicted to them by *tabu*.

This is the first instance in which we have come in contact with a living feature of the singular system of superstition so widely spread over this ocean; and it led to inquiries concerning its existence, and principal characteristics here, which we were fortunate enough to have in a degree satisfactorily answered.

The whole population is divided into two general classes; the common, and the *tabu*. The common class embraces all of the female sex, of every rank and station, and all men engaged in their immediate service as personal attendants. It also includes such of the male sex as engage in the public songs and dances at their places of amusement, by which it would seem that the occupation among them is looked upon as effeminate and degrading. All other men belong to the *tabu* class.

As in other groups where this system prevails, the restrictions of the *tabu* particularly affect those of the common class, in points respecting their habitations and food. The houses of men of the *tabu*

class, can never be entered by a woman, or other person, of the common order; consequently, the wives of such, and other females, with their attendants in their families, whether in a stated or temporary residence, have separate houses for cooking and eating. But though the house and food of the man is prohibited to them, theirs are all free to him, and he can enter them at pleasure.

In regard to food, the bread-fruit, cocoa-nut, yam, and various mixed dishes formed of these articles, with most kinds of fish, are eaten indiscriminately by both classes, except such as become incidentally tabu, by being placed in a basket, calabash, or other utensil of a tabu person; all such contact consecrating them to a restricted use. But bananas, hogs, turtle, cuttle-fish, bonetta, and albicore, are always tabu to those not belonging to the privileged order.

Any thing passing over the head of a person, or even the hand of a tabu man, must never itself be passed over, sat, or lain upon. To suffer this, would be a profanation of it, in their view, which would bring the displeasure of the gods upon the individual through whom it became restricted, by its being passed over his head. Consequently, when this infringement takes place, whether by accident or design, the individual causing the profanation, by applying the article to any common use, becomes an object of revenge to the other; and his life is sought, as the only atonement for his carelessness or presumption. Till his death is secured, the person through whom the article became tabu, is supposed to be liable to some fatal disorder, or other dreadful calamity.

If a woman passes over, or lies on any thing, which has been consecrated by the touch of a tabu man, the article thus profaned can never be used as before, and the woman must be put to death.

In general, however, the chief inconvenience that

arises from this incidental consecration of an article, is the restriction of its particular use. For instance : if a tabu man places his hand beneath a sleeping mat, it can never be used as such again ; but it may be worn as a mantle, or fitted to a canoe for a sail ; though a mantle or sail, having been over the heads of others, cannot be used as a sleeping mat.

This superstition accounts for an incident that recurred this morning, while Captain Finch was distributing presents at the house of Haapé. Designing to give a parcel of white cotton cloth to one of the female chiefs, he tossed it towards her over the head of a man sitting near, who immediately seized and kept possession of it, exclaiming in a quick voice, "*tabu !*" The interpreter told the captain that it was forfeited, and if he gave her another, not to pass it over any one, but at the time made no further explanation.

I do not recollect to have heard that the restrictions of the tabu ever extended to the use of common canoes, at other groups in the Pacific, and know that they did not, at least as a general thing, at the Sandwich Islands, during the prevalence of idolatry there. It would appear, that the observance of these arbitrary superstitions constitutes the principal rule of right and wrong in the nation, and is the chief law of the people. Instead of imputing the calamities of life to the vices and moral enormities of which they are guilty, diseases and death, famine and war, and every calamity, are interpreted by them into just retributions for violations or neglect of the unmeaning prohibitions and capricious requirements of the tabu.

The cloth had scarce been removed from the dining table this afternoon, when, the approach of a war-canoe was reported by the quarter-master ; and the male chieftains were soon alongside in all the state they could muster. The canoe was single, and

not very large, perhaps twenty feet long and three wide, rough and rude in its construction, and altogether inferior to the most common fishing barks of the Sandwich Islanders. It was constructed from the bread-fruit tree, and not from the more compact and beautiful koa, in universal use for this purpose at that group. In its shape, too, at the head and stern, it varied materially from theirs. A low prow, almost on a level with the water line, projected horizontally several feet before the body of the canoe, and terminated in a flat figure-head, carved into a hideous face. Between this and the bow, three green cocoa-nut leaves, four or five feet high, were fastened erectly; close to which, in the head of the canoe, upon a platform of small sticks, covered with a mat, sat, in the attitude of a Turk, a chief of distinction from the tribe of Taioa, who inhabit the country to the west of this valley. He was wrapt in a large white mantle of native cloth, and wore upon his head a dried banana leaf, neatly and ingeniously wrought into a becoming toque. In the middle of the boat was Haapé, with the girdle only, and a cap similar in material and make to that of the chief of Taioa; while Piaroro, elevated in the stern on a high platform, deeply fringed with the pendent leaves of a palm, acted the part of helmsman, with a long steering paddle, as six or eight stout men hurried the bark over the water.

Piaroro, like Haapé, wore the girdle only; and his hair, in place of being closely knotted with tapa on the top of his head, as on the former occasion, was brushed out as far as possible on each side, and descended in enormous frizzles over his shoulders, imparting to the whole contour of his face a most wild and savage aspect. In his ears he wore ornaments of ivory, beautifully carved and polished, contrasting strongly in their whiteness with the jet-black of his hair.



The finishing of the stern of the canoe was as peculiar as that of the prow. From the keel, on each side, a light round timber extended, curving gradually upward, like the runners in front of a sleigh, and terminating in a broad flattened blade, six or eight feet above the water. Between these, at the top, a rude image of a god was suspended in a reclining posture, and from the extremity of each, a line was stretched to the corners of the platform, closely hung with tufts of human hair, the trophies of victorious conflicts with their enemies.



On coming over the sides of the ship, they paced the deck with a stateliness of step, and importance of air, that at once bespoke the formality and display of the occasion; and by every look seemed to say, "Our canoe, and its trappings, will compare very advantageously, we think, with your black barges and flying pennants!"

A boat had in the mean time been despatched for the ladies, and they shortly after arrived, very modestly enveloped in full draperies of white tapa, with turbans of a kind as thin and fine as gauze. The ceremony of refreshments was again gone through with; and Captain Finch made additional presents to them of calico, &c., for mantles, and other articles of apparel. During the time they were on board,

we had another evidence of the nature and force of the tabu: none of the females would ascend the poop-deck, which is the most pleasant part of the ship, while any of the chiefs remained in the cabin beneath.

After the serenade of an hour from the band, they returned to the shore, apparently highly pleased with their visit, the captain taking the young prince, Moana, and his companion, Teinae, both of whom came off with us in the morning, in his gig, followed by the chieftains in their canoe, and the ladies in a cutter.

## LETTER XXVII.

### DANCE IN THE VALLEY OF THE HAPAS.

Bay of Taiabas, at Nukuhiva,  
July 29th, 1822.

AFTER one of the most fatiguing excursions I have ever made, not excepting even the descent into the volcano of Hawaii, I take my pen at eight o'clock, dear H ———, to note the scenes of the day, before they lose their freshness in the observations of another.

You may be surprised to hear that the whole is connected with a dance. Hearing of an intended exhibition of heathen festivity in the interior, a party from the ship was formed to witness it. I joined the company, not only for the sake of the *opera*, but also on account of the facilities which would be presented by it for gaining a knowledge of the country, and the true state of the people.

We left the ship with Morrison for a guide, between nine and ten o'clock. Our trip began by ascending one of the smooth sloping hills of grass, whose softness and bright gleamings in the sun, as seen from the bay, throw an air of civilization over the boldness of the surrounding scenery. The path

leading along its summit for half or three-quarters of a mile, afforded delightful views, on the one hand, of the harbour and its headlands, and the rich groves upon the beach and up the valley; and, on the other, of the numerous glens, cascades, and insulated peaks of the mountains in the interior.

On turning an abrupt point, near the farther declivity of the hill, a mile inland, two warriors, in full battle-dress, on their way to the Vincennes, came suddenly upon us—both men of noble stature; every limb, in its muscular proportions, presenting a model for the skill of a statuary. Their dress, in every respect alike, was singularly striking and imposing; especially that of the head, which instantly attracted the admiration of the whole party. It consisted of a crescent, three or four inches broad at its greatest breadth, fixed uprightly in front, the lower edge following the line of the hair on the forehead, and the points terminating at each temple immediately above the ears. A neat border, the eighth of an inch wide, ran round the edges, while the middle was entirely filled with the small scarlet berries of the *abus precatorius*, fastened upon the material of which it was constructed, by a gum which exudes from the bread-fruit tree. The crescent formed the front of a cap fitting closely to the head behind, and the foundation in which the heavy plumage surmounting it is fixed. This plumage consisted of the long, black, and burnished tail-feathers of the cock, the finest I ever saw, those in the centre being more than two feet in length. They were arranged behind the front-piece as closely as possible, and in such a manner as to form the shape of a deeply-pointed chapeau, placed crosswise on the head, the feathers in the centre standing perpendicularly, and becoming more and more vertical, till the lowest at the edges drooped deeply over the shoulders. The ends, falling, from the highest point above the forehead,

one over another in a regularly defined curve on either side, played in the air with the gracefulness of an ostrich plume, and imparted to the whole an appearance of richness and taste we had not been led to expect from any of the decorations of the country previously seen.

In their ears, and entirely concealing them, they wore ornaments of light wood, whitened with pipe-clay. They are perfectly flat in front, something in the shape of the natural ear, but much larger, and are fastened by running a long projection on the hind part through slits made in the ears for receiving such ornaments. Strings of whale's teeth hung around their necks, and frizzled bunches of human hair, were tied around their wrists and ankles; their loins, also, being girt with thick tufts of the same, over large maros of white tapa. Short mantles of white cloth, tied in a knot on the chest, with long spears, completed the costume.

I scarce remember to have been more suddenly or deeply impressed by any sight, than that of these figures, as they first burst on the view. Their lofty head-dresses, tossing proudly in the wind with the motion of their bold gait, their naked and brawny limbs, and various savage trappings, converted them, for the moment, into seeming giants. The most hideously painted, and powerfully equipped N. American Indian, would fail, I think, in a comparison with one of these, as the majestic and fearful warrior.

A belief has gone extensively abroad among this tribe, the Teia, that we shall certainly join them in their war with the Tapiis; and the instant they descried our party, regarding us as irresistible allies, they rushed forward, with shouts of exultation and joy, exclaiming, in tones of triumph, as they went rapidly through the actions of an onset, throwing themselves in every wild and threatening attitude, scowling with looks of deadly fierceness and revenge, and

brandishing their spears in the air, as if ready to pierce an enemy—" *Tapii! Tapii! te make i te Tapii!*" "The Tapiis, the Tapiis! Death to the Tapiis!"—after which, bursting into loud laughter, and informing us that the dance to which we were going had already commenced, they hurried gaily on towards the beach.

Descending here into a large valley, branching eastward from the principal one fronting the bay, our walk for the two succeeding miles was of a character totally different from that over the uncovered hill, being so completely overshadowed by heavy groves of the bread-fruit, cocoa-nut, and other large trees, as scarcely to allow of an occasional peep at the sky. The habitations of the people were thickly scattered around, and in general are larger and more neat than those of the farmers and fishermen at the Sandwich Islands. They were all of the construction already described. The elevated platforms of stone on which they stand, impart to them no little of an air of cleanliness and comfort; and doubtless contribute to the health of the inhabitants, by protecting them from the dampness of the ground. Most of the inmates were away, either at the seaside or the dance; but such as were at home greeted us, on every side, with friendly salutations.

At the end of three miles the character of our path again changed, becoming a dank, closely embowered, and solitary way along the course of a torrent, which had long been heard rumbling among the rocks, as it plunged its passage to the shore. The sweet singing of birds also, concealed in the thickets around, enlivened this part of the walk, and imparted new hilarity to our spirits. Crossing the water, we once more emerged from the shade of the forest, and not long after, coming to another mountain stream, found ourselves at the foot of a high, precipitous, and unwooded hill, half a mile in length. It was one of

the sharp spurs of mountain jutting down from the top of the range enclosing the valley of Taiohae, and marking, on this side, the boundaries of its tribe. Few staircases are at a greater angle of steepness; and, but for the holes worn into the path by the feet of the islanders, a constant zigzag course, and the assistance in pulling ourselves up afforded by the long grass and twigs within reach, it would have been almost impossible for us to have gained the top.

So closely under the lee of the mountain as to be cut off from every breath of air, with the sun pouring on us in scorching rays, I never before was so much exhausted by any effort. The strength and resolution of several of the party were almost overcome; and one, near fainting, threw himself against the precipice, in utter despair of proceeding further, till a native, following, took him upon his back, and carried him to the summit. Had not our vigour been previously kept up by the refreshment of cocoa-nut water, supplied to us abundantly for the trifling compensation of a little tobacco, the whole distance from the beach, we should scarcely have surmounted this hill, but have relinquished our purpose, though now within a couple of miles of its achievement. Yet it was to the top of this mountain, and by this same path, that the islanders, in 1814, transported a long nine-pounder, given to them by Commodore Porter, to prosecute their war with the adjoining tribe of Hapa. It is almost incredible that a gun of such weight could have been raised up the face of a precipice like this by human strength alone, but such is the unquestionable fact.

The bird's-eye view from the summit, of the whole valley and bay—of the Vincennes at anchor reduced in the perspective to the dimensions of a gunboat, the dim outline of Uapou far in the south, with the vast expanse of the ocean mingling almost imperceptibly with the sky—presented a true blending of

the beautiful and sublime. Here, too, we met, and hailed with pleasure the fresh trade-wind from the east, to cool and invigorate us for the remaining part of our journey. On gaining the height, we at once entered the territories of the Hapas. A level spot on our right, some half mile in extent, covered only with grass, was pointed out to us as the scene of Commodore Porter's first skirmish with the natives of this tribe. From the farther end of it, we overlooked the narrow head of an inland valley belonging to them, that in which the exhibition to which we were hastening was taking place; and still farther beyond, in the east, at a distance of four or five miles, the country and habitations of the Tapiis, the race so much the subject of talk among the rest of the people, and apparently so greatly the object of their dread.

From this height we began to descend, over gentle declivities of thin grass, towards the place of our search, without any object of particular attraction till within a half mile of it. At that distance we crossed a fine stream, just above a broad cascade of fifteen or twenty feet, and followed its foaming bed through successive groves of the bread-fruit and cocoa-nut, interspersed with cottages and plantations; while the monotonous and dull sounds of the drums and music of the dance first broke upon the ear. These, as they became more and more distinct, quickened our step, till a throng of natives, in gay dress, having caught sight of our party, were seen hurrying towards us with shouts of welcome. The whole scene, as we came in among them, and threw a hasty glance around, transported us at once to the times of Cook and the first navigators of these seas, when the discovery of the existence and habits of a people so novel struck them with a surprise and charm amounting almost to fascination.

The grove is one which the muses themselves

might covet. Majestic trees cluster widely round the Tahua or dancing ground, on the margin of the mountain torrent. Their lofty tops so thickly interlace each other above, as completely to embower the whole glen; and the rays of the torrid sun, beneath which we had been walking, instead of striking us with a scorching glare, fell in rich and grateful mellowness on the groups below.

The assembly consisted of several hundred persons of both sexes, in all the display of dress which their condition allows. The warriors in battle array, and the dancers in their fanciful costumes, were the most conspicuous objects; while the appearance of all, especially that of the females, evidenced great attention in the preparations of the toilette. In justice to the Hapas, I must say, that in many instances they exhibited proofs of gracefulness and taste, in the arrangement of their head-dresses and mantles, that would have gained them credit in more polished circles of fashion than are known in their sea-girt isles.

White appears to be the favourite hue, especially for decorations of the head. Their turbans are of various shapes; the most common consists of a piece of native cloth, of the size of an ordinary pocket-handkerchief, bound closely to the head, having the ends twisted into a large knot immediately in front, or on one side over the temple. The ends of others are longer, and formed into large puffs or cockades on the tops or sides. In some, there is an opening on the crown for the hair, which, tied closely to the head, then hangs down in ringlets in the neck and shoulders. Some wear fillets or bandeaus only, either with or without bows or hanging ends, and many leave their black tresses entirely unconfined, and flowing carelessly over their mantles.

The pau is much less worn here than at the Sandwich Islands; and often the only dress of the



females is the large kehei, or mantle, in which the Hawaiians wrap themselves in the coolness of the evening or morning. Here this is unfastened, except as gathered round the figure in thick folds by the hands, over both shoulders, or under one arm, leaving the other uncovered.

Till now, I had begun to doubt, from all I had seen at the sea-side, whether the natives of this group are so decidedly a finer race, and handsomer-looking people, than the Society and Sandwich Islanders, as they are generally accredited to be. But, judging from those seen on this occasion, I am fully persuaded they are, particularly in the female sex. Many of these present were exceedingly beautiful; the impression of features has more of an European mould, than most uncivilized people I have seen. In complexion many of them are very fair, scarcely, if any, darker than a clear brunette; admitting even, in some cases, of a distinct mantling of colour in the cheek and lips; while in figure they are small, and delicately formed, with arms and hands that would bear comparison with any in the drawing-rooms of the most polished noblesse.

The general lighter complexion observable in this company, in comparison with most met upon the beach at Taiohae, is attributable to the greater moisture of the atmosphere in the mountains, and to the deep shades in which most of their habitations are situated. But the uncommon fairness of many of the females is the result of an artificial process, followed by an almost entire seclusion from the sun. The juice of a small indigenous vine called *papa* possesses the quality of whitening the skin; and such as are peculiarly desirous of fair complexions, wash themselves every morning in a preparation of this, and, wrapping themselves closely in their garments, keep within doors most of the day. When they do go out, they always make use of the large and spreading

leaf of the palmetto for an umbrella. They usually bathe in the evening.

On the approach of a festival, the arrival of a ship, or any occasion of public interest, they plunge into the stream, and, washing off the greenish hues of the *papa*, anoint themselves carefully with cocoa-nut oil, and put on their best apparel. Many add to the oil the juice of the turmeric, of a pale yellow, or a mixture from the burnt root, which is a bright orange; thus imparting, as they imagine, new beauty to the skin, but which is any thing but inviting to a civilized eye.

There are those among the men—a species of dandy, I presume—who imitate the females in the use of the juice of the *papa*, and in avoiding all exposure to the sun, but do it at the sacrifice of the privileges of the *tabu*. They are indeed chiefly of the number already under its restrictions, as singers and dancers at the public exhibitions.

The arrival of our party could scarce fail of interrupting the songs and dance a few moments, and for a time there was no little confusion and uproar; but after being received and welcomed by the chiefs, and placed in seats of honour and of good observation beside them, the amusements were quickly renewed.

This *tahua*, or theatre, is a structure altogether superior to that visited by us yesterday; and so massive and well-built as to be capable of enduring for ages. It is a regular oblong square, about sixty feet in length, and forty broad. The outer wall consists of immense stones, or slabs of rock, three feet high, and many of them four or six feet long, joined closely together, and hewn with a regularity and neatness truly astonishing, in view of the rude implements by which it must have been accomplished. On a level with the top of this outer wall, a pavement of large flat stones, several feet in width, extends

entirely round; forming seats for the chiefs, warriors, and other persons of distinction, and singers performing the recitatives and choruses accompanying the dance. Within this, and some inches lower, is another pavement still wider, having large flat-topped stones fixed in it at regular intervals of six or eight feet, used as seats by the beaters on the drums, and other rude instruments of music, and immediately within this again, an unpaved area, some twenty feet long by twelve broad, constituting the stage on which the dancers exhibit their skill.

The performers in the part we witnessed were a young chief, eighteen or twenty years old, at one end of the area; and two boys of eight or ten, at the corners of the other. The music, if such it can be called, was that of four drums on each side of the inner pavement, and the voices and loud clapping of hands of about one hundred and fifty singers, seated on the upper platform with the chiefs and warriors. The drums were small, not more than two feet and a half in height, and ten or twelve inches in diameter, formed from the trunk of a kou tree, (*cordia*,) hollowed to the thickness of an inch nearly two-thirds of the length from the top. They were excavated at the bottom also, leaving a partition between the two, with a small hole in the centre. The heads were of shark-skin, laced on with flat sennit of the cocoa-nut fibre, in a manner similar to that in which they are tightened in common drums with us. They stand upright on the ground before the performer, and are beaten with the hand only, in rapid strokes of the fingers joined together, while the ball rests on the edge. Around the bottom, long oval holes are cut vertically, to cause an increase of sound.

The dance commenced by a slow beating on the drums, followed by graceful movements of the hands, arms, and feet of the dancers, in a similar time, but increasing quickly with the rapidity of the beat, to

a display of great activity. The singers joined in upon the first motions of the dancers; these last also taking a part, sometimes in solos and sometimes in duet, followed by responses from the orchestra, or grand choruses, by the whole.

The principal dancer was uncommonly handsome, both in face and figure; and, though not large, admirably proportioned. The use of the *papa*, and seclusion from the sun, had rendered him almost as fair as any one of our number.

His dress was little calculated for ornament. It consisted of a large quantity of white human hair, worn high and much frizzled around his head, (of heavy bunches of the same material, but black, about the wrist and ankles,) and of a profuse quantity of white cloth around the loins, as a *marô*. That of the boys was more striking and fanciful. One wore on his head the feathered helmet, and other decorations of the ear and neck of a warrior; the cap and plumage being of a height equal to all the rest of his figure. Above his girdle, was a full sash of white cloth, tied in a large bow, with long ends in front; and from it four white cords of platted *tapa*, two behind and two before, descended to the knee, each terminating in monstrous tassels of black hair, fastened to flat circular pieces of wood, whitened with pipe-clay. His waist, wrists, and ankles were also hung with the same, and in either hand he held a small tuft of white.

The head-dress of the other was a bandeau of white cloth, in a thick roll over the forehead; and above this, a wreath of black feathers, surmounted by a high ornament of white *tapa*, gathered into folds at the frontlet, and spreading above into a large cockade, in the shape of a peacock's tail; the whole having an airy and tasteful appearance. His necklace was composed of alternate bunches of a brightly shining aromatic vine, and the flower of the cape

jessamine; while his maro, of the purest white, arranged in neat folds, was intertwined with garlands of the same.

The dance ceased at the end of twenty or thirty minutes; and a company of young females, forty or fifty in number, seated on an adjoining and elevated platform, began singing, in the dull and monotonous repetitions of the same intonations of voice characterizing all their songs, accompanied by a loud and simultaneous clapping of the hands, brought together in a manner to produce a very peculiar sound. An inquiry into the meaning of this, made us acquainted with the occasion of the present celebration.

The learning of a new set of songs had been enjoined some months previous on these girls, and they were placed under certain restrictions of the tabu till it should be accomplished. This had now been done, and the dance was held in commemoration of it. It was only of a common kind, and not of sufficient interest to attract the great multitude that often assemble, as we are told, at some of the more distinguished.

These exhibitions are known by the general name of *koika*. They are celebrated on a great variety of occasions, but the most noted are those which take place at the ingathering of the bread-fruit harvest, and at a ratification of peace when two or more tribes have been at war. Such is the passion of the people for the amusement, that, to enjoy it, they not only make the longest and most fatiguing journeys from all parts of an island, carrying their food, and suffering the greatest inconvenience, but not unfrequently hazard their lives by voyages in their wretched boats to other islands; besides being exposed, while there, to murder, in the conflicts which almost invariably arise among parties from different tribes at their close, and in which all are obliged on one side or the other to take part.

The singers by profession, called *kaioi*, are the poets and composers, as well as performers, of the songs sung on these occasions. The subjects are various, often furnished by some passing event, such as the arrival of a ship, or any less novel incident; and not unfrequently, like ballads in our own country, the songs become extensively popular, and are sung in private by all classes. In almost every instance, language and allusions of the most objectionable character, as is the case every day in their ordinary conversation, are introduced; and many are abominable, almost beyond belief.

I was too much occupied with my pencil, to pay very particular attention to the words now repeated; and, from previous knowledge on this subject, was well satisfied to remain ignorant of them. Before they had concluded, the throng around became so annoying in their rudeness, and every appearance indicated such a disposition to utter licentiousness, that the charm at first felt, from the novelty and wild beauty of the scene, was speedily broken; and, accompanied by one or two others, and soon followed by all the party, I gladly retraced my way to the ship.

A principal object, on my part, in making the excursion, was to see pure heathenism, (heathenism as it exists before one ray of christian light has beamed upon its darkness,) that I might, from the observation of my own eyes, testify to its true character: and that object has been, I can assure you, dear H——, most fully answered. Before the grossness of one half that was forced upon me had passed in view, I was compelled in the thoughts of my very soul to exclaim, "Stop—it is enough!" but I had gone beyond the point of escape, and the whole truth, in its abominable details, was riveted upon me.

There was less of licentiousness in the dance than I had expected; but in a hundred things else, there were such open outrages on all decency, that I hur-

ried away in a horror of disgust, with a heart too much humbled for the race to which I belong, and too much depressed at the depravity and guilt of man, to think or feel upon any other subject. At first I could scarce find spirits to interchange a word with my companions, but hastened on before, or felt far behind, that the oppression within me might escape their notice.

So completely was I prostrated, that, for the first time in my life, I believe—not in a spirit of rebellion, trust, but with a feeling of deep anguish—I looked to heaven, and exclaimed, “Oh! why, why was sin ever permitted to enter a world otherwise so fair! why has it been allowed to mar the highest glory of man, till in all countries, and among all classes, it in too many instances degrades him to the level of the brute!” Thou, O God, knowest, for with thee is all wisdom; and, blessed be thy name, with thee, too, are all goodness and all truth: and “justice and judgment are ever the habitations of thy throne!”

## LETTER XXVIII.

### FORM OF GOVERNMENT AND CIVIL AND RELIGIOUS DISTINCTIONS.

Bay of Takohae, at Nukuhiva,  
July 30, 1829.

CAPTAIN Finch, and a party of officers, left the ship early this morning, for a visit, by water, to a valley called Taioa, four or five miles to the leeward of this port. The first division of our crew, forty in number, are also on shore on liberty; but the day being very wet and showery, with strong puffs of wind from the mountains, I shall myself remain on board ship, to “*hāna-āa*,” as the natives say, or “make fast,” some information respecting this group, of which I have gained possession by other channels than the mere observation of the eye

That which I will first notice, is the marked difference in the character of the government and political economy here, and at the Hawaiian and Tahitian Islands. The well-organized form of monarchy, so conspicuous and so well defined in all its details in the last nations, has no existence in this ; and instead of the regular gradations of rank, from the peasant and fisherman to the king, with appropriate honours and immunities, as found in them, the only civil distinction known here, is unconnected, both in appearance and reality, with much either of dignity or power.

The hereditary title "*Hekaiki*," common to all the tribes, whatever its interpretation may be, "head," "leader," "prince," or "king," secures to its possessor few of the prerogatives of chieftainship ; the highest power attaching to it, being less than that of a Scottish laird of yore in his highland clan. It is unaccompanied by any privilege of jurisdiction, or any power of levying a tax, or of commanding a personal service in others ; and thus, extending neither to the rights of property nor of person, the influence of the individual distinguished by it appears to be more like that of a wealthy citizen, respected and popular in the community in which he resides, than that of a prince or lord over the subjects or slaves of an uncontrolled dominion.

If the chief desires any article of food or property in the possession of a common islander, he must seek it as a voluntary gift, or by barter, without reference to rank or title ; and if he needs assistance in any piece of work, in building a new house, enclosing a piece of ground, or gathering a bread-fruit harvest, he can secure it only in the way customary among private individuals, by making a feast, inviting the people to it, and presenting his object, with the expectation that all who participate in the entertainment will also aid in the work. Such is



the general limited power, and the dependence, of the chiefs.

On the other hand, the freedom of the people from all restraint and rule, in reference to any acknowledged head, is equally great. If one man receives an injury from another, instead of entering a complaint to the chief, and seeking redress according to some established usage of the country, he at once resorts to the prowess of his own arm, and takes a lawless retribution by inflicting violence and death: or, if restrained from such revenge by fear of the power or influence of the aggressor, standing at a distance, he expends his anger in fierce gestures and loud declamations against the infringement of his rights.

Such is the character of the relation which exists here between the chiefs and the people: it confers on the former little influence or authority, except that arising from aristocratic birth and large possessions, and exacts from the latter the ordinary marks only of respect and good-will.

I am at a loss to determine under what form of government this should be classed. Though simple and primitive in some of its features, it would mar the beautiful image in our mind's eye, of the venerated patriarchal state, to associate with it, under the name, so much of barbarism as belongs to this race; and I have been more than half tempted, with all deference to the dignity of our own happy government, to style it—will you forgive me?—a republic *en savage*, in which every man is the representative of his own rights, and the only lawgiver, with liberty in all cases promptly to wield the power of the executive, after having discharged to his own satisfaction the functions of the judge!

The military title of Toa, or head warrior, is distinct from that of Hekaiki, or civil chief, though they are often united in the same individual. Like the

last, it is almost entirely nominal as to any right of rule or control over others which it secures to its possessor. Even in times of war, a Toa has no authority, but that of example, in bringing his fellow-soldiers into the field, or of regulating their movements in the conflict after it has commenced; every one fighting or fleeing as seems most expedient to himself.

But though the people are thus free from the restraints of civil and military power, they are notwithstanding under the dominion of an iron-handed tyranny—the tyranny of superstition over the darkness of minds and hearts lost in ignorance and sin; and it is in their system of idolatry that we find the origin and the support of the most conspicuous and influential orders among them.

I have already mentioned the general division of the population into the tabu and common classes, and pointed out some of the most remarkable of the restrictions imposed on females, and all persons included in the latter. My present observations will refer principally to the tabu class.

This has its subdivisions, each of which is strongly marked by the degree of veneration and power attached, in the superstitions of the people, to the individuals composing them. The four highest grades in the tabu are the following:—the *Atuas*, the *Tauas*, the *Tahunas*, and the *Uus*; the *gods*, the *prophets* or *sorcerers*, the *priests*, and *their assistants in human sacrifices*. All other men, not degraded to the common class by some of the means enumerated in a preceding letter, constitute a general and inferior grade.

The word *Atua*, the appellative of the first class, with scarce a modification, is the term used in all the Polynesian dialects to designate the ideal beings worshipped as gods, in the system of polytheism existing among the people. At the Washington

Islands, as at other groups, the Atuas or false gods of the inhabitants are numerous, and vary in their character and powers. Besides those having dominion respectively, as is supposed, over the different elements, and their most striking phenomena, there are Atuas of the mountain and of the forest; of the sea-side and of the interior; Atuas of peace and of war; of the song and of the dance; and of all the occupations and amusements of life.

It is supposed by them, that many of the departed spirits of men also become Atuas: and thus the multiplicity of their gods is such, that almost every sound in nature—from the roaring of the tempest in the mountains, and the bursting of thunder in the clouds, to the sighing of a breeze through the cocoanut tops, and the chirping of an insect in the grass, or in the thatch of their huts—is interpreted into the movements of a god.

But it is to none of these imaginary beings, that the term Atua, as used in the subdivision of the tabu class, refers; but to living men, who claim the title and attributes of the deity: not through a professed inspiration, or possession by a supernatural influence or power, but in their own right of godship, as those who control the elements, impart fruitfulness to the productions of the earth, or smite them with blasting and sterility; and who exercise the prerogatives of the deity in scattering disease, and wielding the shafts of death. They are few in number, not more than one or two at farthest on an island, and live in a seclusion and mysticism somewhat in unison with their blasphemous pretensions. There are none at present in the near vicinity of Taiohae, though the former abode of such an individual is pointed out at the foot of a bold cliff, high in the mountains.

The Rev. Mr. Crook gives the following account of an Atua, at the island of Tahuata, in the Windward or Marquesan group, while he resided there tempo-

rarily in 1797, as a missionary from the London Missionary Society: "He is now of great age; and has lived from early life at Hanateiteina, in a large house surrounded by an enclosure called the A. In the house is an altar, and, from the beams within, and upon the trees around it, are human carcasses, suspended with their heads downwards, and scalped. No one enters the premises but his servant, except when human sacrifices are offered. Of these, more are offered to him than to any other of their gods; and he frequently seats himself on an elevated scaffold in front of his house, and calls for two or three at a time. He is invoked in all parts of the island; and offerings every where are made to him, and sent to Hanateiteina."

The honours and powers of this class do not appear to be always hereditary, though they sometimes are; and its perpetuity depends principally on those who have ambition enough to aim at it, and at the same time talent and art sufficient to succeed in imposing on the credulity of their fellows.

The Tauas, the order next in influence to these pretended gods, are a more numerous and more tangible class. It was one of these, who came on board the ship, two days ago, in company with Haapé and Piaroro, when they made their visit of state; and whom I then mentioned as a person of distinction from the tribe of Taioa. His name is Taua-hania and it is at his invitation, that the party of officers have gone to that valley to-day. Of this class, therefore, being one with which I have come into contact, I feel prepared to speak more fully and more intelligibly.

The Tauas seem closely allied in office and reputation to the Atuas; for, though they do not profess to be gods, yet they are supposed to possess an hereditary gift of inspiration, and the power of causing a god to dwell within them; and it is individuals of

this class principally, who venture to usurp the dignity and name of the Atuas. There appears in their character a combination of the sorcerer and the prophet. Often at night, crying out with a shrill voice, in wild and unnatural sounds, and then giving answers in their usual tone, they pretend to be conversing with a god within them; and, making a rustling in the leaves with their fingers, say they have been miraculously taken through the thatch of the house, and brought back again by the door. In their fits of inspiration they become convulsed, glare fiercely with their eyes, and, putting their hands into a violent quiver, run about prophesying death to their enemies, in a squeaking voice; and at times demanding human victims for the god by whom they are possessed.

Though all chirurgical operations are performed by a different class, the Tauas alone act the part of physicians. Every internal disorder is believed to be inflicted by some god, who has taken possession of the person for that purpose, and is called "*mate no te Atua*," "sickness from a god;" and the Tauas, being inspired, are applied to, as alone capable of contending with the evil. When sent for by a sick person, their practice principally consists in feeling for the mischievous deity, and in smothering him when found, by rubbing him between the palms of their hands! This is the manner, too, in which they pretend to inflict death on any one who has provoked their displeasure. In order to cure some disease, they place the patient in water, invoking the god, and beating the water with branches of trees, and pouring some of it on his head.

This class is held in great reverence by the whole population, and are believed to become gods after death. This event, therefore, is always followed by human sacrifices; and is an infallible signal for predatory excursions upon the neighbouring tribes in

times of peace, and for pitched battles in those of war, for the seizure of the necessary victims. Though the Tauas form one of the most elevated grades of the tabu class, pretensions to the high gifts of the character are not limited to the male sex; and female Tauas, though not so numerous or so influential as the males, are found in all the tribes throughout the islands.

Next to the Tauas, and perhaps belonging to the same class, stand the Tahunas, or priests, a class more numerous, but less formidable in their character, and less presumptuous in their pretensions, than the preceding. The office is not, like the supposed gifts of the Tauas, hereditary, but is conferred by the ordination of those already exercising its functions, who also initiate the novices in the discharge of its duties. These are various, and consist principally in offering sacrifices, and in performing the ceremonies of their idolatry; in singing the sacred songs, and beating the drums of the temple; in celebrating funeral rights, and performing surgical operations; such as the dressing of wounds received in battle, the extraction of fractured bones, and, it is said, even that of trepanning with a shark's tooth, in case of injury to the skull.

The Tahunas have a distinctive dress, consisting of a cap formed from a cocoa-nut leaf. A part of the stem, six or eight inches in length, is placed perpendicularly over the forehead, and the leaflets still attached to it are passed round the head on each side, and neatly fastened together behind. Besides this article on the head, they wear a cape of the same material. In this the stem is split till within an inch or two of one of the ends; it is then passed round the neck, so that the extremities rest on each shoulder, and the separated ends are tied together. The ribs running through the leaflets being taken out, they hang over the chest and back. These articles are

usually worn by them on ordinary occasions, and always when in discharge of the services connected with their office.

The offerings made to their gods are various, according to the different occasions on which they are presented; shrubs, flowers, cocoa-nuts, bananas, bread-fruit, fish and fowls, dogs, pigs, hogs, and human victims, being all, at times, deposited with invocations before the idols, or suspended in front of them on poles. At every meal, too, a morsel of the food in readiness, before any one partakes of it, is cast against the thatch of the house, with the careless and familiar exclamation to some god, "*There is some for you;*" a form which, whether originating or not in a vague impression of dependence on the goodness and bounty of a supernatural power, should reprove the many, who, blest with the clearest light of revelation, daily surround boards crowned with the rich gifts of God, without a thought or expression in acknowledgment or gratitude.

The ceremonies of their religion consist chiefly in singing, accompanied by the beating of drums and clapping of hands. The sacred songs are various, and many of them intelligible only to the priests. One, according to an account of Mr. Crook, is "a kind of litany which a Tahuna chants to the beating of the great drum of the temple, repeated at the end by another in a similar tone. The notes are much prolonged, and, towards the close, the voice is shaken in a hoarse undulation. Another song is a kind of recitative, in which the priest declaims, with the utmost violence of voice and action, concluding with a sharp sound like the bark of a dog, directed toward the audience, who return a suitable response.

All the traditions they possess are embodied in the sacred songs—the fabulous origin of their islands, the names of others in whose existence they believe,

the genealogies of the chiefs from their first origin, the feats of their heroes, with the histories of their wars, and all other events of which they profess any knowledge.

The account they give of ~~their~~ origin is, that the land composing their islands was once in "Havaiki," or the regions below, the place of departed spirits, and that they rose from thence through the efforts of a god beneath them. At that period, they say, there was no sea; but that it, and all animal and vegetable productions, were afterwards born of a woman; and that originally men and fish were locked up in caverns in the depth of the earth, which burst with a great explosion, leaving the men upon the land, and casting the fish into the sea.

In their songs, they enumerate the names of forty-four islands, besides their own. In the number are evidently some of the Georgian and Society groups; and the description of another is that of a lagoon island, to which none of this cluster have the least resemblance. One of their traditions, respecting these foreign islands, gives an account of the introduction of the cocoa-nut here. It is, that a god, on a visit to them from an island which they call Oatamaaui, finding them destitute of this important tree, fetched it to them in a stone canoe: the whole transaction being described in a minute and equally incredible manner. They have similar accounts of the visits of the gods of other islands; and in the traditions of them, we find the reason of their calling the first visitors from America and Europe, "Atuas," gods; the name now given to all foreigners.

But to return to the Tahunas, or priests, and their ceremonies. Sometimes a bundle, which is called the "clothed god," consisting of a wooden log wrapped in cloth, with four conch shells fastened upon it, is lifted up and carefully laid down again by the priests; all the people standing and making responses to an



unintelligible jargon, during its elevation. Sometimes a human skull is placed in a curiously-wrought urn adorned with flowers, and elevated in a similar manner. A cocoa-nut leaf, also, woven so as to represent a human victim, and fastened to a long pole, is borne along on the shoulders of two men; a principal priest then speaks aloud, as if asking a question, and all the rest answer in a shout. The vociferative part of this ceremony is also practised when on the water in their canoes.

Frequent use, in these ceremonies, is made of a piece of wood, with another fastened across the top of it; and also of a small canoe, decorated with human hair. At times, too, a hami or girdle, or other article, is held up, and the name of a god invoked in a loud and bold manner; and when a surgical operation is about to be performed, the rude instrument of tooth or bone is elevated, in a similar way, towards the imaginary power, as if expressive of dependence for success on the skill that may be supernaturally imparted.

The sacred drums are of two kinds, small and large. The first are precisely similar to those used at the koikas already described. The others are much larger, being from five to six feet high, and from fifteen to eighteen inches in diameter. Their construction and material are the same as the smaller, except the heads, which are made of the skin of a devil-fish, in place of that of a shark. They, too, are beaten with the hand and fingers, but in a regular, solemn movement, either uniformly, or with two or three beats in succession, with an intervening rest; while the smaller ones are beaten continually, in quick time, filling up the intervals between the strokes on the larger drum.

The clapping of the hands, accompanying the song and the drum, is varied, both in sound and movements, somewhat in correspondence with the differ-

ence between the beating of the larger and smaller drums, the slower and louder strokes being made with the hand held hollow, and the fingers partly intermixed, and the intermediate claps with the hands held flat, and struck forcibly against each other.

In times of war, for many days previous to a battle, the priests are engaged in various ceremonies; and also after battle, over victims taken, if such there are, before they are offered in sacrifice. The priests alone have the privilege of eating of any thing offered in sacrifice to the gods.

The only remaining distinctive order, in the general tabu class, is that of the Uus, or assistants of the priests in the human sacrifices. Admission to this grade is granted to those only who have killed an enemy in battle with the short club or battle-axe, called the Uu, whence their peculiar appellation. The priests are not numerous, and, having many ceremonies to perform, the principal duty of the Uus appears to be, to relieve them from the more laborious parts of the horrid process of human immolation. The Uus have the privilege of feasting with the Tauas and Tahunas, which is denied to every other inferior grade.

Besides these distinctions, founded in their idolatry and upheld by its superstitions, there are those of employment, into which most others of the people may be classed. All persons celebrated for their ingenuity and skill in the manufacture of ornaments and weapons of war, in making canoes, and in finishing the neater parts of their habitations, are distinguished by a general honorary name, and are employed and entertained with great hospitality by others at their houses. This is the case, also, with those particularly expert in catching fish: persons of property give such, land to reside on, and furnish them with canoes, for the benefit of their services.

All the land, with the growth upon it, is heredi-

tarily possessed by the higher orders, civil and religious, the chiefs, warriors, prophets, priests, and their assistants, the boundaries of the respective domains of each being accurately defined, and well known. The islanders, guarding and gathering the productions on these, and performing the various avocations of servants and dependents in the households of the proprietors, make up the whole population.

The brief, though I fear still tedious, outline thus given, of the various classes of persons with whom I may meet, will enable you, my dear H—, more readily to understand the hasty sketches I may transmit of the few days of observation we shall yet enjoy at Nukuhiva. In the hope of fresh scenes on the morrow, I now bid you good night.

## LETTER XXIX.

### A DAY IN THE GLEN OF TAIOA.

Bay of Taihoo, at Nukuhiva,  
July 31st, 1849.

CAPTAIN Finch was so highly delighted with his visit to the Valley of Taioa, yesterday, that he urged me to make the same trip, in company with some of my fellow-officers. We accordingly mustered a party in a short time, this morning, for the purpose.

It not being thought prudent for one boat to go so far from the ship alone, two were ordered to be manned. Knowing the passage between the rock called the "West Sentinel" and the main land, to be wide enough for a boat, at the advice of the interpreter and the Taua, we took in sail, and went through it with our oars, for the double purpose of gratifying our curiosity and of shortening the distance. It was at low tide, however, and we found it dangerous; a tremendous current rushed westward, hurrying us onward with great velocity, while high breakers

foamed upon beds of rocks within an oar's length on either side; and whirling eddies, both on the right and on the left, threatened to draw the boat irresistibly into their roaring vortices. Had it not been for the prompt directions of the old sorcerer, or whatever he may be called, in the pilotage, the risk we should have run would have been fearful indeed. There was no one in the cutter following us, to direct her right management through; and, the moment we ourselves were in safety, signals were made for her to go round the rock, which fortunately were understood before she had approached too near the danger to allow of changing her course.

The western side of this Sentinel presents a most singular aspect. It is entirely bare and inaccessible, exhibiting on its face the most indubitable evidence of having once been in a state of fusion. The external configuration, from the bottom to the top, a height of some hundred feet, is, without any special intervention of fancy, that of a succession of Gothic arches of lava, which assumed their present forms as it trickled and cooled, when a fluid, from some molten reservoir above.

A few small trees of ironwood, (*casuarina*,) here called *koa*, crown the summit, and stud the southern side; but every where else it is naked, and the chosen resort of unnumbered white gulls, seen soaring above, or fluttering about the crevices in which they securely build their nests. A native, in despite of the heavy surf and sharp rocks presenting their points at every turn, had swam across the channel to the island, and, with a small calibash in his hand, was searching the caves and ledges, at its base, for cockle and other shell-fish.

These were the observations of a moment, as we lay on our oars waiting the arrival of the second boat. She was soon in sight; and, making sail again, we bore away before the trade-wind, setting freshly





along the coast, for our destination, four or five miles westward. In less than an hour we suddenly opened the little valley. The intervening coast is high, and consisting, with scarce an exception, of bare and perfectly inaccessible cliffs, prepares one to be most forcibly struck with the richness and magnificence which burst on the eye the moment of shooting past a rocky promontory, sheltering the glen from the storms and violence of the sea.

Immediately before us were two small basins, forming an inner and an outer harbour, neither more than half a mile in diameter. The nearest, as you approach, is encircled by small unoccupied hills of grass, studded with a coppice here and there, and affords a fine anchorage for shipping; while the second, just beyond, gives a ready access to the inhabited parts, by a circular sand-beach, skirted with heavy groves of the cocoa-nut and bread-fruit, the pandanus, tufted palmetto, and flowering hybiscus.

On the left side of the glen, a stupendous range of cliffs rises more than two thousand feet perpendicularly from the beach, in such wild and singular formation, as to seem more like a highly-wrought fancy sketch for a romance of the stage, than a scene in nature. The whole, from the first peak in the foreground, to that in the most distant perspective, appears but a succession of richly wrought, moss-covered obelisks, arranged thickly, against and upon one another, with such novel effect, that I can compare them only to so many gigantic stalactites, inverted after their formation, and planted as they stand, for the lasting admiration of all who may behold them.

Directly opposite, on the right, across the thickly embowered glen, at the distance of half a mile only, imagery of a totally different character was presented: gently swelling hills of grass smiled beneath the morning sun with all the brightness and verdure of a lawn in June, as they rose one above another to the

height of five or six hundred feet, and then terminated abruptly in a basaltic cliff, resting like a crown on the point in which they converged; the whole constituting a beautiful foreground to the rich growth and wild outline in the distance, where the gorge winds itself out of sight in the interior.

I have gazed upon much beautiful scenery in various parts of the world, and in a great variety of aspects, but must unhesitatingly proclaim triumph to the glen of Taioa over every thing of the kind I ever beheld. It is one of the scenes which words cannot portray, presenting, at a single glance, contrasts of the sublime and beautiful, so conspicuous and so imposing, as irresistibly to elevate and charm the mind.

The unheard-of notes of the bugle and the horn, echoing among the western cliffs as we gradually approached the shore, quickly brought group after group of the wondering inhabitants to the beach. This would not have been the case, however, had they not learned, from the visit made them yesterday, to regard us as friends. Otherwise they would have fled to their coverts, or mustered for a defence; for, when the captain and his party entered the bay, and their boats first came in full sight of the shore, the old Taua, and other islanders in company, lay down, for a moment, in the bottom of the boats; and the moment the cutters, filled with foreigners only, were descried by the natives inland, they began a precipitate flight, catching the children in their arms and on their backs, and giving every evidence of the greatest terror. As soon as the success of the trick was thus manifest, the old patriarch rose up with a laugh, and beckoned to them with his fan till he was recognized, and the people returned as rapidly as they had fled; joining heartily, themselves, in the sport which their ready alarm had excited.

On landing, we were conducted by our host to one



of his houses in a grove adjoining the beach ; and a first act, on his part, was to present me with a neat wicker-work fan, of a simicircular shape, whitened with pipe-clay, and having a polished handle of hard dark wood. This he did, partly out of regard to my office, looking on me as a fellow-wizard, his own title, *Taua*, being that by which I am already every where known and addressed ; and partly, I suppose, in return for some small gifts made to him before leaving the ship. Among the other officers, also, he distributed different tokens of good-will.

In his house, the curiosity which had brought us to the valley began to be abundantly gratified. The habitation itself did not differ materially from that of *Haapé*, except in being larger, but it contained articles of greater interest than any we had met at *Taiohae*. The most remarkable of these was a coffin, something in the shape of a canoe, with a neatly-wrought lid ; the whole being wrapped in large folds of native cloth, containing the remains of a son of the *Taua*, who died many years since. It is elevated two or three feet from the ground, on a bier of framework, and occupies the centre of the house. The dead bodies of all persons of high distinction among them, are preserved in their houses for a long period in this way.

Besides this, there were two or three of the large drums of the temple, the first we had seen ; a neatly wrought image of a god of war, carried with them in a canoe when expecting a sea-fight ; a war conch adorned with tufts of human hair ; with spears and battle axes, a stone adze, and other rude utensils and ornaments.

Eager for further observation, we soon commenced an exploring tour through the settlement, and were astonished at the many evidences of art and civilization discoverable. In many places, the street running up the glen, through which a broad stream pours

its water to the sea, is as wide and neat in its whole appearance as that of a flourishing village in our own country, but far more sylvan and picturesque; while the houses, well built of their kind, and as comfortable, for the climate, as the cottages of the labouring classes in America and in England, with large enclosures of substantially-laid stone wall, exhibit, on every hand, proofs of labour and skill not expected among such a people.

We had proceeded but a short distance, before we came to a house distinguished by the symbols of idolatry. It was elevated on a platform of more than ordinary height, and against one side, a large log, carved into a rude image, was reclining, with fragments of cocoa-nut, bread-fruit, and other articles, thickly strewn around. Within a stone's throw was another tabu place, a depository of the dead, of which I took a drawing. It stands in the midst of a beautiful clump of trees, and consists of a platform of heavy stone work, twenty feet or more square, and four or five high, surmounted in the centre by eight or ten posts, arranged in the shape of a grave, and supporting, at a height of six or seven feet, a long and narrow roof of thatch. Close beneath this was the body, enclosed in a coffin, like that seen in Taua's house. In the immediate vicinity we again found a large habitation belonging to our friend, and were refreshed, at his order, with cocoa-nut water, while waiting the arrival of the civil chief of the valley, who, we had been informed, was on his way to meet us. He soon came; and is the largest islander we have seen, quite equal to most of his compeers of Hawaii, being so corpulent as scarce to be able to walk, and tataued from head to foot till as black as the darkest of the Congo race.

From this spot, a vista up the valley, so rich in beauty, opened upon our view, as to make us impatient of any delay, and, after the interchange of a

few civilities with the chief, who appears a reserved and sober-minded man, we proceeded in the ramble we had commenced. Our way was a wide and neatly kept street of greensward, with a broad path in the centre, so perfectly embowered by an avenue of trees, extending before us in long perspective, as to be almost impenetrable to the sun. Neat cottages, enclosed with regular stone walls, were scattered along at short intervals in the deep shades: from which the simple inmates, in their light and graceful costume, gathered round us with a diffidence and civility widely in contrast with the vulgar and offensive rudeness of others we had met, more accustomed to the sight, and more corrupted by the vices of foreign visitors, than these seem to be.

There is a mellowness and chastened colouring in the light of a tropical sun, coming at noon-day upon you, through the dark foliage of a thick-topped grove, that imparts a double richness and beauty to the scene on which it falls; and, with this shade on every thing around, as we moved slowly on to the varied notes of the bugle and horn, amidst objects at once so soft and sylvan; so unique and wild, and surrounded by a people, whose admirably modeled figures and unclad limbs were in strict unison with the whole, I experienced feelings of admiration never excited by the novelty and romance of any circumstances in which I had before been placed.

The residence of the Hekaiki, or chief, is near the middle of this street. He had kept our company, and, on arriving at it, invited us to enter. I was attracted, however, across the way by a tabu house, against which three huge images of wood were placed, two with their faces inward towards the thatch, and one with the face outward. I commenced a sketch of them as they stood; which being perceived by one of the natives, he immediately, without ceremony, seized the two godships

ning their backs towards me, and whirled them over with as much carelessness and familiarity as I should myself, had I been disposed to make thus free with the objects of their superstition. I was somewhat surprised at the little veneration shown for the idols of their own worship, though not ignorant of the great inconsistency often discovered among the heathen, in the grossness of the adulation of their gods at one time, and their disregard, and even abuse of them, at another. I recollect to have heard, while living at the Sandwich Islands, of instances in which persons, disappointed in their expectations and prayers, have not only scolded and upbraided, but actually beaten, their images of wood and stone.

On pursuing our walk still farther, we unexpectedly met that which led to full information, in reference to the funeral ceremonies of the people. It was, in coming to a house surrounded by the remains of a feast given on such occasions, with the preparations making for the deposit of the body, still lying in an open building, at a short distance from that at which the festival had been celebrated.

During the severe sickness of a person, the house in which he lies is crowded with women, wailing in the mournful tones by which the Polynesians express their grief. The Tauas, in the mean time, are exerting all their skill and sorcery to stay the disease; and when these fail, and it becomes evident that death is approaching, they all dance around the mat of the dying man, cutting themselves with sharp stones, as if in a frenzy, and uttering the most piercing lamentations, though often without the appearance of much sincere distress. This continues till the person expires, when all unite in a most terrific and prolonged howl.

A kind of bier is then constructed of spears and other warlike weapons, fastened in wicker-work toge-

ther, and spread with mats, usually in a small house adjoining the dwelling of the deceased. Upon this, the corpse, neatly dressed in garments of new cloth, is laid out, and kept for several days. Persons watch with it during that period, torches being burned at night, while the priests in attendance mournfully chant their elegiac songs.

A principal business, also, is the preparation of a feast, profuse in proportion to the wealth and dignity of the family. While the provisions are baking, some leading individual, arrayed in full dress, and wearing all his ornaments, with a fan in his hand, goes forth to invite the chiefs and superior orders. Passing from house to house, he calls at each with the exclamation, "*tou kee*"—"this is your invitation." This part of the ceremony was witnessed by the gentlemen from the ship here yesterday.

The messenger was dressed in a large quantity of white cloth, wearing on his head a bandeau of white, with bows, surmounted by a mitre-shaped cap, formed of the green leaf of a banana tree. Besides the fan in his hand, he bore on his shoulder a long pole, from which were suspended seven white scarfs, tied into bows at the ends, in a manner similar to those used in our own country. They also saw the baking of five large hogs, and the collecting of the bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and bananas, for the puddings, but were obliged to return to the ship before the feast began.

The men summoned, collect at some tabu house near; while the women, tastefully arrayed in their finest garb and ornaments, assemble without, as spectators. From the time of the death, till the priests complete the songs chanted on such occasions, all fast; and no fire is allowed to be kindled within sight.

When these are finished, the food, usually little more than half-cooked, is brought from the ovens,

and the head of the family, acting as master of ceremonies, cuts up the hogs with a knife of bamboo, and separates the flesh from the bones with a sharp stone. The head is always the portion of the principal priest, and is usually laid aside by him for another meal, being also entitled to any other part he may choose to eat at the time. The joints are then distributed among the chief personages, who invite others to partake with them; all, in addition to the meat, being furnished with wooden bowls of the mixed dishes of bread-fruit, cocoa-nut, and banana.

After having eaten as much as they desire, each puts aside what remains of his portion, and they sit and converse together, or go away, and return to eat again, till the whole is consumed, which frequently is not the case till the close of the second or third day.

The house at which the feast had now been, was in an offensive and disgusting state, from the fragments of half-cooked meat scattered around, and suspended among the sticks of the fence on the top of the platform. Two immense wooden troughs, nearly as large as canoes, half filled with poe or pudding, of the consistence and general appearance of bookbinders' paste, stood on one side of the door, while a whole hog, of some hundreds' weight, still uncarved, lay opposite on a bed of green leaves, the whole swarming, like bee-hives, with the quantities of flies collected by the fumes and odour of the entertainment.

The roof of the house, at the end and middle of the ridge or peak, was ornamented with streamers of white, fastened to the tops of short poles, fancifully decorated with green leaves, and bows of cloth also white. Immediately adjoining on one side, was a singular structure just erected, which attracted particular attention. It consisted of an enclosure of stone around a small platform. At each corner of the low wall, a number of long, slender bamboos were

erected, tied together at short intervals, in a square form, by bands of white cloth; while within, surrounding a bier covered with white, were a number of cones six or eight feet high, formed of the braided leaf of a cocoa-nut, confined at the tops by bands of white cloth. The bier was prepared for the deposit of the body, after it should be placed in the coffin; and the cones of cocoa-nut leaf were shrines formed by the priests, in which to place food and water for the spirit of the deceased; to which incense, formed by placing heated stones in vessels filled with cocoa-nut oil, is also offered. We visited the body in an adjoining hut, decently laid out, and covered with a sheet of native cloth. A single female, seated at the head, wrapped in a large mantle, and bathed in tears, seemed performing the office of watcher and mourner.

From this spot onward, the evidences of idolatry became more striking and numerous. We passed several temples, containing more hideous-looking images than we had before seen, and successive depositories of the dead, surrounded by light shrines, enclosing perishable food for immortal souls. The temples do not differ from the larger inhabited houses, except that they are always open in front. All we saw contained three images, one at each end, opposite and facing each other, and one in the middle, against the thatch behind. One singularly disproportioned image stood alone in the midst of a thick grove, on the top of a very high and solid platform of stone, grinning horribly over an immense wooden trough, filled with various offerings.

Here again our path was uncommonly delightful, leading close by the margin of the river on our right, while thick groves clustered on the left, beneath the wild peaks of the mountain overhanging our heads, and extending before us to the interior. Every structure, too, seemed to exhibit something more artificial,

and more like civilization, till at last we came to an establishment with such massive walls and mason-like enclosures, and a wide entrance, with a regular flight of broad steps leading to a well-flagged court, as really to astonish us. The stones, bearing marks of antiquity, were regularly hewn and joined with the greatest nicety; many, which I measured, being from four to six feet in length, nearly as wide, and two or more deep. The interior of the thatched part was as neat and well-finished, as the mason-work without was heavy and substantial; and judging from its contents—war-conchs, head-dresses, and various ornaments, packages of cloth, and rolls of mats, muskets, spears, and other weapons—its proprietor must be a person of no ordinary rank. Not even a servant was to be seen; and having, with one or two others, left interpreters, chiefs, wizards, and all, far behind, we were under the necessity of satisfying our curiosity by our own conjectures.

This situation afforded an open view of the river and continuance of the valley far into the mountains; and we were strongly tempted to prolong our walk farther; but being already two or three miles from the beach, and separated from most of our party, we thought best to return. I first, however, secured a sketch of a temple and burial-ground just above, with a hideous idol scowling among the dead from the midst of a thick clump of the pandanus, including a characteristic section of the mountains towards the head of the valley, and was far from regretting the few minutes occupied by it, when afterwards informed that the temple was that at which human victims are chiefly immolated.

\* With the exception of one or two places of the kind, nothing is more manifest in their aspect than the fact, that the images are literally crumbling into dust. The decay resting upon them, rendered more conspicuous by their deformity, seems already to pro-



claim the approach of the period, when, with all the "*idols of silver and of gold, which every man hath made for himself to worship,*" these too shall be cast "*to the moles and the bats,*" and be trodden under foot in perpetual neglect and abhorrence. To me the sight was most gratifying, adding assurance to the impression already received, that nothing more is needed, even here, than the dawning of the "*light of life,*" to scatter the spiritual darkness resting on the land.

We retraced our steps with the same admiration that we had first taken them, till, about midway from the beach, all our party became assembled again; and, seated on the grass in the edge of a grove, we partook, in true pic-nic style, of the ample stores furnished from the baskets of Johnson, our kind ~~and~~ steward. He is a steady and valuable friend on *such* occasions, and one we ought never to forget, *when*, with keen appetites, each seizes for himself, *sans fourchette*, whatever comes uppermost of the cold roast fowls, sliced tongue, beef, ham, cheese and bread, he so snugly stows away for the time of need.

Surrounded by hundreds of the natives, (who seemed to think that their turn for the gratification of curiosity had now come,) we enjoyed all the honours of the *déjeuner en public* of the Bourbon family.

The dignitaries of the land, seated among us, nibbled and sipped with becoming care and gravity, the strange articles of diet presented to them, while a cake of ship-bread, handed to some of the common by-standers, was quickly crumbled into a hundred pieces, and tossed to eager and noisy applicants on all sides, followed by loud laughter and various other expressions of delight. Those of the crew with us as attendants, were glad too to break their fast by *improving* the privilege, without waiting *for the cloth to be removed*, of seizing a luncheon kindly slipped into their hand by some friend in the circle; making

a species of saturnalia of the repast, quite allowable at such times of haste and hunger.

On our way to the beach, circles of females, in neat and graceful attire, with fanciful head-dresses, were seated in every grove, singing monotonous ditties, accompanied by the clapping of hands, interluded by a loud noise of the tongue, something like the clucking of a hen in gathering her brood around her.

The whole population of the valley crowded the shore as we prepared to depart, and many of them assisted in getting our purchases of fowls, cocoa-nuts, pigs, sugar-cane, bananas, &c., into the cutters, and afterwards carried us on their backs through the surf, which, at low water, breaks too high to allow a large boat to come close to the beach. When all were on board, our friend Taua returning with us, we shoved off a short distance, and lay on our oars till we had given a farewell air on the bugle and the horn. The western cliffs had already thrown their evening shades widely over the glen, and the darkness of the grove behind presented the crowd in such bold relief, as to give full effect to the fineness of their forms and the classic drapery in which they were partially enveloped. No loud shouts nor vulgar merriment were heard among them; but silent musings seemed to indicate a feeling of reluctance to see us depart; and as we completed the "finale," and pulled away for the ship, wishes and prayers of the sincerest good-will followed the last looks we gave, as they began slowly to separate, and disperse among their native wilds.

My heart sighed for the beginning of missionary instruction among them; and during our return, every thought was busy in devising plans by which light might speedily be brought to break in upon their darkness, and those good tidings be proclaimed to them, which, if received and embraced, would at once make their abode, not only what it is now by nature,

one of the most romantic spots<sup>o</sup> on the globe, but morally and spiritually "*the happy valley*."

## LETTER XXX.

### CRUELTY AND INJUSTICE OF FOREIGNERS TO THE ISLANDERS.

Bay of Taiohae, at Nukuhiva,  
August 3d, 1829.

ON rounding the West Sentinel just at night-fall, on our return from the valley of Taioa, "Sail ho!" burst from a dozen lips, as we opened the anchorage, and descried a vessel inside the Vincennes, with the French ensign flying.

Taua-hania, as soon as he recognized the white flag of the Bourbons, manifested great uneasiness and agitation; and begged to be landed on the shore, and not to be taken on board our ship, saying he had "*great fear*." The cause was at once understood by us, from a statement he had made in the morning, as we entered the bay of Taioa, and pointed out to us the best birth for shipping.

It was this: Sometime since, a French vessel came to anchor at that valley. The commander found some difficulty, from the existence, it appears, of a real scarcity, in procuring as large a quantity of live-stock as he desired, and applied to the Taua, for the interposition of his authority, in obliging the islanders to furnish him with more than he had yet secured. This he was either unwilling or unable to do, or exerted his influence in vain: on which, the Frenchman ordered him to be seized when on board, and had him bound hand and foot to the mainmast—his arms and legs being passed round it, and tied in such a manner, that his whole weight hung upon the ligatures—and told him that he should not be released till forty ~~hogs~~ were brought to the ship. This took place early in the morning. In the course of six or eight hours,

by great exertion, the required number, including animals of every size, was collected; when the captain, in place of releasing the old man, demanded twenty more before he would unbind him. It was not till night, that these also were gathered from the interior, by seizing them wherever they could be found, and despoiling the whole valley of almost every animal of the kind. Thus, after being in torture the whole day, the prophet, "*make oa!*" "*dead!*" as in a pathetic tone he expressed it, at the same time shutting his eyes, letting his head drop on his chest, and his arms fall lifelessly beside him—" *make oa i te eha a te pooe!*" "*dead with pain and hunger!*" was unbound, and permitted to go on shore, without any remuneration for the indignity and misery he had suffered, or pay for the hogs received.

The Frenchman gained his object. But what was the consequence? The next morning, a boat from the ship, with an armed crew, approached the shore for water. Not perceiving any natives, they came carelessly to the beach, and were just preparing to land, when a volley of musketry was poured among them from the nearest thicket; and one man fell dead in the surf, while two others were so severely wounded, that the boat barely made an escape to the ship. The captain thought it prudent, no doubt from the disabled state of his crew, to weigh anchor and make sail immediately, and thus avoided further peril to himself: but only after having been directly accessory to the murder of one of his own men, and having insured, as it were, the utter massacre of any hapless crew of his countrymen, who, unsuspecting of just ground for fear, might commit themselves, or be unavoidably subjected by accident or distress, to the power of those thus wantonly rendered implacable enemies.

I fully believe this to be only one of ten thousand instances of oppression, insult, and cruelty of a similar

or far more infamous character, which would form a part of the true history of the intercourse of civilized man with the islanders of the Pacific, could it be laid before the world. Besides all that I have myself known and heard on this point, there is enough on record, furnished by various voyagers, to confirm me in the opinion. And it is in such aggression and barbarity, on the part of civilized and nominally christian men, that more than half the reputed savageness of the heathen world has its origin. The white flag of France is far from being the only one thus stained. Nor can the charge be confined to the comparative insignificance of a petty trader. Ships ploughing the sea for purposes of discovery and science, and even the stately hulwarks of Britain and America, sent forth to sweep the surface of the ocean in search of piracy, and outlaws, and every injustice and oppression, must share in the opprobrium: for there have been commanders, who, in place of pursuing the kind and christian policy of a Byron of the Blonde, and a Jones of the Peacock, in their intercourse with the Polynesians, have deported themselves, in some instances at least, in a manner to shroud the stripes of America in reproach, and to tinge the proud banner of Britain with a double die.

But the facts on which this assertion rests seldom reach the public ear, or meet the public eye, unless it be in a version somewhat similar to that which we may rightly suppose the Frenchman, in the case above related, to have given of the circumstance, communicated to us with all the freshness and feeling of just indignation, on his arrival at some one of his native ports. "The ship —, commanded by —, has just entered our harbour, from a long voyage in the Pacific ocean. She has been peculiarly unfortunate in the loss of several of her crew at the Washington Islands, where she touched at Nukuhiva for refreshments. The islanders, it appears, are a

very treacherous and ferocious people : a boat sent on shore for water was suddenly attacked by a party in ambush, and unhappily one of the crew perished ; and the rest barely made their escape after being severely wounded !”

Taua-hania, whom Morrison, in his interpretations, styles “chief of the gods,” related the particulars of the same outrage to Captain Finch, the day he made a visit to the valley.

On boarding the Vincennes, after having despatched the old chieftain, according to his urgent request, to the shore, we learned the new-comer to be “The Duchess de Berri,” Captain Moeté, from Callao five days later than ourselves, bound to Manilla.

Captain Finch, though daily importuned by the chiefs and warriors for muskets and powder, with offers of any quantity of hogs in return, has utterly refused to comply with their wishes in this respect, fully explaining the reasons of his determination, by pointing out the evils that result to themselves from their violence and wars. Desirous that the commander of the Duchess de Berri should adopt the same policy in this respect, he early sought an interview with him, and informed him of the course he himself had pursued, and his wish that he would follow the example. Ascertaining that muskets, ammunition, and brandy were the only articles on board the ship, which Captain Moeté could offer in return for the wood and water he needed, Captain Finch immediately supplied him with coarse cottons and implements of iron sufficient for the exchange, and engaged to have both wood and water transported from the shore for him by the boats and men of the Vincennes. He also gave information to Captain Moeté, who appears to be an intelligent and respectable gentleman, of the ill-conduct of his countryman, of which the Taua had complained ; and

he seemed fully to perceive the hazard to which he might have been exposed in consequence of it, had his visit been made at a time when there was no other vessel in the harbour, and he unaware of any inciting cause to treachery and vengeance on the part of the islanders.

I have not been on shore to-day, but have occupied myself principally in taking a panoramic drawing of the harbour and valley, as viewed from our anchorage, and in sketching the tatou on the figure of Te Ipu, a chief warrior of this tribe. Captain Finch has held a long and interesting conference with the chiefs, priests, and warriors, dissuading them from the prosecution of war with their neighbouring tribes, and pointing out to them the advantages and blessings which would arise to themselves, from living in peace with each other, and in promoting the best interests of the whole, by considering themselves as one and the same people, bound in an alliance offensive and defensive against enemies and invaders from abroad only.

The wars among them are various in their character, as well as causes. Sometimes they arise from a petty theft, or an insult or injury offered to an individual, in the re-entment of which the whole power of the tribe to which he belongs is called into action. Not unfrequently, a friendly party visiting a neighbouring tribe, becomes unintentionally embroiled; and the result is fierce contests between the two tribes, though the individuals first injured or killed may themselves have been greatly the aggressors. Motives of mere ambition, a determination in one chief to possess himself of the property and possessions of another, often leads to this result; but the most common cause is the seizure of the inhabitants of one valley by those of another, for the purpose of immolation to their gods.

In addition to the stealing of a war-conch from

the Hapas, this last is the occasion of the present war between the Teiis and Taipiis. Only a short time since, a party of Taipiis stole into the bay in which we were at anchor, at the dead of night, and creeping guardedly into a house near the beach, whose inmates, seven in number, three men, three women, and a child, were wrapped in unconscious sleep, seized and overpowered them, and bore them off in triumph, to be sacrificed to the manes of a distinguished chief, before any alarm could be communicated to their neighbours. Urging this violence as a just cause for fighting, the chiefs and warriors now again pleaded with the captain to join with them in punishing their enemies, or at least to supply them with guns and powder for that purpose.

While he admitted the atrocity of the crime, he recommended them, notwithstanding, to seek peace, and to maintain it, with all their fellow-tribes; with the assurance that neither this nor any of "Porter's ships" would ever aid them in their conflicts.

It appears, that after the subduction of the Taipiis by Commodore Porter, in 1814, Keatanui, at that time chief of the Teiis at Taiohae, became virtually and avowedly the king of the whole of Nukuhiva, and was succeeded at his death in this honour by Moana his son, the father of the present prince Moana. All the tribes, including the Taipiis, partially at least acknowledge the boy, whose maternal grandmother is a chief woman of that tribe, still living at their principal valley, as the rightful prince of the whole; and Captain Finch strongly recommended to them, after a reconciliation should take place, to convene a general council, at which he should formally be proclaimed the king of the island, and they all pledge themselves equally to honour and defend him.

The necessity and advantages of such political arrangement was illustrated by an explanation of



the general features and character of our own government, in which twenty-four distinct and independent states form a combination, offensive and defensive, under a chosen head or chief, always dwelling in peace together, and entering into war only against a common enemy from abroad, while all differences among each other are settled in amicable council.

He again adverted to the object of our visit, that it was neither for war nor gain, that every thing given to them was in gratuitous expression of the good-will of the government of the United States towards them, and that nothing would be received in return. Also stating, that vessels of war were sent abroad by our nation, to secure peace, to protect unarmed vessels, and only to fight against such as ill-treated the defenceless trading ships of our country : and that, so long as the people of Nukuhiva did no injury to such vessels as should touch at their islands for the refreshments of water and wood, all the ships of war that visited them would come in friendship and in peace : and concluded his advice, by informing them, that though it would be inconvenient and troublesome, he should visit the Taipis in the ship, to assure them also that he was the ally of neither party, but the friend of both ; to express to them the good-will of our country in the same way he had to the Teiis, Taioas, and the Hapas ; to give them the same advice ; and to exert his influence in securing a permanent peace, and the acknowledgment of Moana as king. They seemed greatly pleased with the conference, and approved of all the advice.

On Saturday, Captain Finch informed the chiefs that the next day would be our sabbath, or day of public worship, and he wished a proclamation to be made, apprising the people of it, and interdicting their coming round the ship, either for amusement

or barter ; and at the same time invited the chiefs themselves to attend the service. This they did, deporting themselves with great propriety during both prayers and sermon ; expressing their approbation of the form of our worship by the usual pleasant exclamation, "*motaki*," "good," when they are particularly interested.

I had designed devoting a part of the afternoon to a conversation with them on the subject of our religion, and the introduction of missionaries among them ; but the captain of the French ship had invited them on board to receive some presents, and I deferred it till Monday. I had intimated my intention to them ; and on going on shore, I found Haapé, Piaroro of the Hapas, the prince Moana, and Tauahania of Taioa, assembled to meet me. The interview was long and interesting.

I explained to them some of the leading principles of the christian religion, the nature of missions, and the character and object of missionaries : that they were men and women of enlightened and powerful nations, who, at a sacrifice of many advantages and enjoyments in their native countries, left their fathers, and mothers, and sisters, and brothers, behind them, and went voluntarily to live with people such as themselves ; to introduce among them the arts of civilized life ; to give them books and writing ; and, above all, to communicate to them the knowledge of the true God, and the salvation of the soul in the world of spirits, through the death of Jesus Christ, the only Redeemer of sinners. I told them that many persons in America had a sincere desire for their welfare and happiness, and intended to send such teachers among them ; and then inquired whether they would receive them kindly, and be their friends ?—to which, "*Ae ! ae !*" burst from them all in much animation, followed by "*Motaki, motaki*," "good, good."

Haapé then said, " It is with the king Moana"—to which the little fellow at once replied, " So let it be ; it is good, very good." Taaú adding, " When they come, some of them must live with me at Taioa ; I will give them land, and build a large house for them." I told him they would gladly live in his valley, if he and his people would cast away their idols, and believe in and worship Jehovah, the only true God. To which he answered, " I know Jehovah is a mighty God. I have heard of him from Tahiti, where the people have burned their images, and taken him for their God ; and it might be well for us to do the same ;" adding, " Jehovah is a greater God than any of ours, for he is the God of *thunder and lightning* ;" taking this impression, as I discovered, from the flash and report of cannon, which they consider to be essentially lightning and thunder. He said, whenever it thundered at the island, they knew that a ship was approaching ; and that Jehovah caused the thunder, to apprise them of it.

He remarked also, that they had already a great many gods, he could not tell how many, and that they were constantly increasing ; for whenever a Taaú or chief, or priest, died, he became a god ; and so it would be always ; that he himself, when he died, would be a god. I told him that all their gods, and all their religion and sacrifices, were "*mea wahahe wale no*," " were altogether false," and of no value ; which he took apparently in very good part : and on again speaking of Jehovah and Jesus Christ as the only true God and Redeemer, he exclaimed again, "*Motaki ! motaki ! Jehova te Atua no matou*," " Good ! good ! Jehovah is, or shall be, our God !"

They were much more interested and attentive to the subject than I had expected to find them ; and on closing the conversation, asked how long before the teachers would arrive, and whether I would not be with them ; Captain Finch, as well as myself, hav-

ing informed them of my former residence as a missionary at the Sandwich Islands. I cannot but hope that the presentation of the subject will not be utterly forgotten; and that it may have some influence, in connexion with the advice of Captain Finch on the same point, in preparing the way for the welcome reception and kind treatment of any who may happily be sent by those who look for the salvation of the world, to lead them in the paths of truth and righteousness.

Towards evening of the same day, Lieutenant Stribling and myself took a stroll over the ground occupied by the encampment of Commodore Porter. It is just abreast of our ship, on the eastern shore—a small plain, skirted and studded with thickets and coppices of hibiscus, with a fine sand-beach in front, and guarded on the side towards the ocean by the rocky promontory terminating in the East Sentinel, and in the rear by steep and wooded acclivities. The whole is separated from the inhabited parts of the valley by a spur of the mountain and a small round hill, jutting into the bay with a rocky base, on which was placed a breast-work and battery commanding every approach to the encampment. Not a trace of such occupation, however, is now discoverable.

Commodore Porter appears to be held in very general and kind remembrance by this tribe; the elder chiefs and people often inquiring where and how he is, and whether he will never return to see them; and the younger asking, in reference to the captain, “whether this chief is Pota?” A kind of wild cucumber, which we found spread widely over the hills in the vicinity, we at first supposed to have been introduced by him, but have since learned that it is a plant indigenous to the country, and one capable of being converted into a fine pickle.

About twilight, the Duchess de Berri got under weigh, with the intention of prosecuting her voyage;

but the wind was light and baffling, with occasional strong puffs, and, getting too much under the lee of the eastern cliffs, she was thrown, just after dark, into a very critical situation, near a rocky point and indentation of the precipice. Her danger was announced by the firing first of musketry, and afterwards of a large gun. Three boats were immediately despatched from the Vincennes, under the command of Lieutenant Dornin, followed by the launch with the keel and hawsers. They arrived just in time to prevent her striking: she was already under the influence of the swell, and almost upon the rocks; five minutes later, and she would have been utterly lost and in so unpropitious a situation that the whole ship's company might have perished with her.

After the effort of an hour, however, on the part of our officers and men, she was towed to a place of security, and succeeded in passing the Sentinels, and getting safely to sea.

### LETTER XXXI.

#### REMOVAL OF THE VINCENNES TO THE TERRITORIES OF THE TAIPIIS.

Bay of Oomi, at Nukuhiva,  
August 6th, 1829.

PARTLY in apology for any special dulness that may be discoverable under the present date, I must commence the record of the day by apprising you, my dear H——, that I am sadly dispirited just at present, and most cordially weary of the vileness of the Nukuhivans. Though somewhat hardened to scenes which I am obliged to witness without the power to control, I am more and more disgusted with the barbarism and other appurtenances of heathenism, forced on us at every turn.

That the Taipiis might have no reason for supposing us the friends only of the tribes at war with them

Captain Finch determined some days since to remove the Vincennes to their waters, to evince to them our perfect neutrality, by holding similar intercourse, and bestowing the same gifts on them, that he had on the Teis, Taioas, and Hapas; and to exert his influence there also, in bringing the present hostilities to an amicable adjustment.

As mentioned in my last letter, he apprised the chiefs, on Saturday, of this design, and proposed to them to send a deputation of their principal personages by the ship, to hold a conference under his protection, with the rules of that tribe, that, if possible, peace might at once be formed. To this they readily acceded; appointing the young prince Moana, and Te Ipu, a chief warrior from the Teis and Taioas, and Piaroro from the Hapas. Though there was no fear for the personal safety of the young prince in landing among the Tapiis, from the power of his near relatives among them, still Haapé, his guardian, made it a condition of his accompanying us, that he should go on shore only with the captain, lest he might be detained by his friends in a kind of honourable captivity.

We intended to leave Taiohae on the fourth instant; but on taking our anchors after breakfast, and attempting for an hour, with a light and baffling wind, to get out of the bay, we were obliged to return to our moorings, and wait the land-breeze of an earlier hour the next day. Accordingly, all hands were called yesterday at four o'clock in the morning; and we cleared the harbour in a short time without difficulty. Our course, for the six or eight miles intervening between Taiohae and Oomi, being directly in the face of the trade-wind, we were obliged to beat up, and, in doing it, made two stretches into the mid-channel between Nukuhiva and Uapou, twenty-five or thirty miles south of it. We had fine views of both. The outline of Uapou is altogether the most romantic, and is most singularly marked by two or three ele-

vated and wild peaks in the centre, one of which rises in the proportions of a spire, leaning much on one side, to a perfect point, at least a thousand feet above the elevation of the general range.

By twelve o'clock, we had approached near "Tower Bluff;" and, in the lights and shades we then saw it, a more magnificent object of the kind can scarcely be imagined. Though evidently a mass of dark lava only, the whole is so softened by a delicate moss of green, interspersed with bushes in the crevices of the rocks, and creeping plants richly mantling its irregularities, that beauty is imparted to that which otherwise might seem an unvaried deformity; and as to the tower, as we term it, and the parapeted rocks around, were we in a country where remains of feudal power and grandeur are to be found, no one would be thought drawing heavily on his imagination, in pronouncing it, even at a short distance, the majestic ruin of some baronial castle.

A half mile from the promontory, a single rock rises eight or ten feet above the water, like the shaft of a column, with a rounded top. It forms a good mark by which to enter this inlet, the most eastern of three, communicating with the ocean by a common passage three or four miles wide, sometimes called Comptroller's Bay. We passed close by it, and are told that ships have gone between it and the Bluff, but should think not without danger. We carried the wind in with us, and ran readily to our present anchorage. The bay is very narrow, with high hills on each side, and deep water to their very base. By the direction of Morrison, we ran so far in as to become uneasy as to a want of room in case of accidents to our anchor or cable, and brought up in fourteen fathoms, little satisfied with our birth.

The steep hills on either side, at a distance of two or three cables' length only, are rocky, and slightly covered with grass. About a mile north of us, the

direction in which they run, they join at the water's edge in a short sand-beach, skirting a narrow valley filled with luxuriant groves. Behind this, the mountains, richly wooded to their summits, and sprinkled with cottages, rise abruptly, till lost in the clouds brushed over their tops by a fresh trade-wind. There is nothing particularly attractive, however, in the scenery thus presented, especially after having visited the wild magnificence of Taioa, and gazed for a week on the varied and picturesque beauty of the amphitheatre of Taiohae.

The appearance of our ship in the harbour was evidently regarded with suspicion; few of the natives were anywhere to be seen, and none except at a distance. We were not surprised at this; nor to learn, as we since have, that it was believed we had come only for war. By established and universal usage at this group, any member of a tribe, nearly related by blood or marriage to persons in another, may, in times of war as well as of peace, pass with impunity from the territories of one to those of another, and be regarded as a friend. Acquainted with this fact, we had brought with us a native Taipii who had married a woman at Taiohae, and was residing there; and hoisting a white flag at the foremast-head, we landed him on the rocks abreast of the ship, as a messenger of peace. Morrison, the interpreter, was also despatched in a boat to the beach, to give assurance to the chief personages of our pacific intentions, and to invite them to an interview with the captain. These manifestations of good-will soon brought a canoe or two alongside, with cocoa-nuts for barter; and in the course of an hour, many men and boys swam off, and came on deck.

The rain poured in torrents for two or three hours in the afternoon, but ceased in time for "the chief of the gods," the style of the Tanas, according to Morrison, accompanied by his conpeer in civil life, to



come on board before night. They were less imposing in their personal appearance than any of the higher classes we had seen; not differing, either in figure or address, from the most common of their fellows. There was no attempt at a display of costume or ornament in either, except a full wreath of red and white feathers, much soiled, in alternate bunches, over the forehead and temples of the Taua.

They quite amused us, in expressing the fears they had entertained, on seeing us approach; fully believing, as they said, that, "like Pota, we were coming in war only." This persuasion was the greater, from a *ruse de guerre* practised on them by the Hapas: these last, after learning from the captain that he should visit the bay of Oomi, though only for purposes of peace, sent a messenger to the Taipiis to excite a panic through our means, if they could secure nothing more effectual, by spreading the intelligence that Porter's ship was coming up to attack them by water, while they and the Teiis were to fall upon them by land. In consequence of this rumour, they had been busily engaged in throwing up a breast-work of stone across the front of the valley, which they pointed out as some little defence in the onset of our invasion. After making known these impressions and fears to the captain, and expressing their joy at finding them groundless, they said, "Now all is right: you come in peace, have brought Moana our king with you; and our valley and all it contains is yours, and yourself and ship's company may land at any time in perfect safety, and take whatever you please."

Captain Finch then fully explained to them his views, in the manner he had already to the other chiefs; and urged on them the importance of following his advice, instead of continuing to shed the blood of their fellows, and of devastating each other's valleys. At every sentence, they with great animation

and seeming pleasure exclaimed, "*Motaki! motaki!*" "It is good—it is right;" adding, "but you are the only chief that ever talked to us in this manner, and gave us such advice—this is the first ship in which we were ever told that it is wrong to fight: with Pota, it was all fight!" He told them, that whatever others might have thought it necessary and expedient to do, war was one of the greatest of evils; and pointing to the heavy guns of our battery, to the muskets, and cutlasses, battle-axes, and boarding-pikes of our well-guarded ship, assured them that all this array was not designed to promote bloodshed and war, but to secure peace both at home and abroad.

I was delighted with the intelligence and deep interest manifested by them in the subject; and, as argument after argument was pressed upon them, with an earnestness that elicited the closest attention, and a disinterestedness that proved itself to them to be sincere, my own feelings became deeply enlisted. The scene exhibited was one of no ordinary character: a captain of a vessel of war, in the cabin of his battle-ship, surrounded by chieftains and warriors stained with each other's blood, unfolding the miseries attendant on the prosecution of violence and war, and importuning them to friendship and lasting peace; while they hang on his lips, seemingly with the delight of children listening to a new-told tale. It was not a visionary thought that crossed my mind as I gazed upon it, that I had before me a proof that the prophecy is not forgotten, which declares that the period shall yet come, when all the nations of the earth "shall beat their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into pruning-hooks," and shall not lift up the sword one against another, neither learn the art of war any more.

So highly were the Taipiis pleased, and so completely was their confidence won, that they volunta-

rily proposed to sleep on board the Vincennes, that they might be in readiness to escort us on shore this morning, and show us every attention in their power. After tea, I spent the evening in the cabin with them, in a long conversation on the subject of a christian mission here. They gave a lively attention to all I said, with the repeated assurance of receiving any missionaries who might come to reside among them, with kindness and sincere good will.

At ten o'clock the next morning, we made our visit on shore : the Taua-kebua, the civil chieftain Taua-ica, the prince Moana, and myself, accompanying the captain in his gig.

Every new observation of the character of this wild race persuades me, more and more fully, that the fierce and vindictive deportment, reported of them in some instances towards foreigners, is attributable, in a great degree at least, and in a majority of cases, to the ill-treatment and wrong suffered by them from previous visitors, and often is the direct consequence of the imprudent measures and violent usage of the very persons who publish their ferocity to the world. That the Nukuhivans and their neighbours of the Marquesas have, in some instances, shown themselves treacherous and sanguinary in their intercourse with visitors, there can be no doubt ; but in my mind there is as little, that it has principally been in resentment for some real or supposed outrage on the part of civilized men. Few who come among them deport themselves in a manner to secure their goodwill and respect. Regarding them as beings scarce above the brute in their nature and habits, as those alike ignorant and reckless of all distinction between that which is right and that which is wrong, they treat them with utter contempt, except when views of immediate selfishness dictate the contrary ; and themselves too often lay aside, in their intercourse with them, both the principles and practices of mo-

rality, and even a customary regard to common justice and honesty. They care not what the impression left by them among such a people may be, and seem to have no foresight of the evils that may result, from their ill conduct, to others who may come after them.

Believing this to be the fact, Captain Finch is desirous of staying its consequences as far as practicable ; and of removing any former ill impressions, by paying to their chiefs, as the rulers of a sovereign people, every mark of respect in his power. We early had direct proof of the wisdom of this determination, and of the capacity of these savage chieftains rightly to appreciate the dress and etiquette of a ceremonious visit, in comparison with a commonplace and informal call—in the disappointment and chagrin openly expressed by the Taua of Taioa, because the parties visiting his valley and people went in the undress, and not in the display in which he had first met us at Taiohae.

But to return : The beach was not much thronged when we landed ; great numbers of the men being on board the Vincennes with cocoa-nuts and different articles for barter, while crowds of females covered the rocks abreast of her, and could not make their way to the place of landing as rapidly as we did. The Taua conducted us to his house, a few hundred yards in rear of the stone wall across the front of the valley—a large building, of the usual construction, darkened by the thickness of the groves overhanging it, and the luxuriance of the various growth within its enclosures. Here upon their own territory, and within one of their own dwellings, surrounded by their wives and children, and in presence of the officers of our party, Captain Finch chose again to enforce on them the various advice previously given, before distributing the cloth, calicoes, iron implements, &c. brought on shore for the purpose. They reiterated their cordial approbation of his sentiments, said they were

good, and such as no other person had ever suggested to them; that they would gladly make peace with the other tribes, and be happy to dwell hereafter in harmony and friendship.

They admitted the practice of stealing, from other tribes, victims to offer in sacrifice; and excused themselves by saying, that the Hapas and Teiis were guilty of the same outrage against them. In answer to the direct question, whether it was true that they did eat the bodies of their enemies, and of prisoners taken in battle, they without a moment's hesitation, declared positively and repeatedly that they did. On expressing our horror at such an abomination, they said they would do so no more; and the Taua added, that he would interdict the sacrifice of human victims at his death, so that there need be no occasion then for the inhuman crime of man-stealing.

Ascertaining that there was a meae or temple in the immediate vicinity, after finishing the conversation, we walked to it. The principal building was empty, but strewn with the fragments of different vegetable offerings; while in a smaller house adjoining there were three rudely carved idols similar to all we had before seen, except that one was a *Janus Bifrons*, the first double-faced god I have met.

The thick and heavy groves of bread-fruit, overtopped by the more lofty cocoa-nut, and the rankness of all the undergrowth, entirely intercepted the air from the sea-side; and finding the walking wet and unpleasant, and the heat very oppressive, we soon prepared to rejoin our boats.

On emerging from the thickets, we found the change, from the damp and heated atmosphere within, to the freshness of a delightful sea-breeze on the beach, so grateful, that we stopped half an hour under the shade of a clump of the hibiscus, the better to enjoy it; and soon had a subject for contemplation, in the crowds of both sexes and of every age, which

gathered round in all their rudeness, to gaze and admire, and express their good-will in noisy exclamations and merriment.

Our departure afforded another interesting sketch. As we lay upon our oars after gaining the smooth water, waiting the safe embarkation of the whole suite, we had a full and beautiful view of the semi-circular beach sweeping round the bottom of the bay, with its richly-topped groves and overhanging mountains. Many hundreds of the islanders covered the shore; all mingled in one living mass, from children still in their mothers' arms, to withered dames of threescore years and ten, and veteran warriors with snowy locks and fleecy beard, seeming to need the spears they held, for staves to support the decrepitude of their tottering frames rather than as weapons of defence against an enemy. Among them might here and there be discerned the glittering buttons, epaulets, and laced hat of an officer thickly thronged, or the less expensive but gayer uniform of a marine, affording a strong contrast to the wild islander with his tatau'd skin and savage ornaments.

It was one of the most characteristic and novel scenes we had witnessed at the island, and fixed our gaze till we had nearly reached the ship.

In the afternoon I went on shore again, intending to spend an hour in sketching; but a friendly native, who I had seen in the train of a chief in the morning, urged me to go with him up the valley, to see, as he expressed it, "the country of the young king Moana;" and, notwithstanding the terrific character, given us of the Taipis, I committed myself to his guidance, and walked a mile and a half or two miles inland. The valley is watered in its whole length by a pure and lively stream; and every where exhibits the same richness of soil and heavy growth seen on the beach. Judging from the number of dwellings, it must contain a large population; though, from

the ship it appears very contracted in its boundaries. I saw two houses only that seemed of a religious character: one a burial-place, with the shrines and bier of the dead, adjoining a building containing, as usual, three idols; and the other a tabu house of some person of distinction, on an elevated platform, at the corners of which were two images of stone, green with the moss which time had spread over them.

The Tahua, or dancing ground, about a mile from the shore, is as regular and well built as that in the upper valley of the Hapas; and one of the dwelling-houses near, is the largest, most neatly built, and ornamented, of any seen either at Taiohae or Taioa. I stopped to take a drawing of it, much to the amazement of the people around; and to their seeming admiration, when, on showing it to them, they recognized the sketch, and probably understood, in some degree, the design in taking it.

An old woman was lying sick in one corner. I attempted to sympathize with her, and ascertain the nature of her illness; but she seemed rather surly, and the most I could get from her was "*Mai iau*," "I am sick." It is the first instance I have met of confinement by sickness; and, from all I can learn, their diseases are few, and not very frequent. Besides pulmonary affections and diseases of the liver, they have the dropsy, which they ascribe to having eaten fruit that has been tabued with more than ordinary ceremony. They are also subject to the rheumatism, which, in some instances, is so severe as to contract the fingers and toes, so as to cause them to be perfectly double. This effect is also attributed by them to a superstitious cause. A species of leprosy, too, is said to exist here, covering the skin with a scurf, affecting the use of the limbs, and drawing the fingers backwards.

Diseases of the eye are not unfrequent, and sometimes produce entire blindness; when they are called

"*mate kaha*," "the sickness of a spell or charm," which some few persons are supposed to have the power of inflicting. These enchanters, in order to produce this effect, are said to procure the saliva of their intended victim, and, folding it in a parcel of leaves, wrought together in a peculiar manner, bury it under the ground. As this decays, it is believed the object of their malice will gradually lose his sight, or pine away and die. The only remedy in such cases is thought to be the discovery of the hidden *kaha*.

Boils, abscesses, and cutaneous diseases are common; among others, one, of which little urchins at school, and sometimes older fellows, in our own country, occasionally feel the inconvenience. The people, notwithstanding, are altogether a more smooth skinned race than the Sandwich Islanders; and few, here, exhibit the disgusting deformity, so common among our old friends, attending such affections.

After having crossed the mountain torrent several times, on the back of my kind and attentive guide, and gone the distance mentioned, a native overtook us, walking rapidly and talking loudly and angrily with my companion, without noticing any thing said by me. The latter immediately manifested some uneasiness, and said, "Let us return." On asking why? the only answer I could get was, "Let us go to the sea-side;" and, taking me by the hand, he hurried on. Though many we met exchanged my friendly "*aloha*," on passing, with as much kindness as usual, I perceived, from the sour and angry looks of others, that all was not right; and was confirmed in the belief, as a large fierce-looking fellow, seated between the stone images at the tabu-house mentioned, scowled on me like a demon, without taking the least notice of my salutation. All the explanation I could get from the guide was, "*Kakino!*" "It is bad!" as he hastened me forward, in evident apprehension, till we came in sight of the ship, and to the



beach, where the boat had already arrived, and those on shore were beginning to assemble. I have not yet learned the cause of anxiety expressed by my conductor, or of the manifest ill-will exhibited by many met on our return.

## LETTER XXXII.

### TRIP TO THE VALLEY OF HAKAPAA.

Bay of Oomi at Nukuhiva.  
August 8th, 1839.

OOMI is the most eastern of three deep indentures in the coast, separated from one another by two beautifully verdant, but unwooded, promontories, projecting into a common inlet of the sea. That in the centre is the largest and deepest, running two miles farther inland than either of the others. It is called Hakahaa; and fronts the neutral ground between the Hapas and Taipiis, the scene of Commodore Porter's principal skirmishes with the latter. The most western indenture, called Hakapaa, three miles from Oomi, is the smallest of the three, and washes the shores occupied by the Hapas.

We left the Vincennes at nine o'clock this morning, in three cutters, to visit these places; and had scarcely doubled the first promontory, half a mile from the ship, before we had the assurance, that, in point of scenery at least, the excursion would not be devoid of interest. The high point, consisting of successive shelves of black lava, covered with smooth grass, gleamed cheerfully in the brightness of the day, while the whole interior of the valley and the mountain above, presented one mass of groves, rich in splendid and various verdure. To the very mountain's top, the cottages of the Taipiis, bleached by alternate sun and rain till white as a plastered dwelling at home, were seen sprinkled among the

hanging woods. Perched high in the solitudes of the forest, and but partially exposed to the sight amidst the thick shades by which they are encircled and overhung, had we not known them to be only the lairs of the savage, there would have been little fancy in supposing, from their apparent neatness and good taste, that they were the abodes of men more happy in all their circumstances than the highlander of Scotland or the peasant of the Alps.

Our first destination was to the valley of Hakapaa, to seek an interview with the Tauga of the Hapas; and we rowed directly across the mouth of the central bay, stretching two or three miles inland to the shores of the neutral ground, seen winding far among the mountains in the blue distance, to the point of the second promontory. On doubling this, which entirely conceals, in the direction we approached, the habitable parts of Hakapaa, the first object that caught our eye was the top of a waterfall, leaping down the centre of a richly-wooded precipice, five or six hundred feet in height, which encloses, by a semi-circular sweep of half a mile, the entire valley, except towards the bay. The stream was larger than any we had before seen, and gave promise of a degree of gratification, on a nearer view, which did not prove deceptive.

On landing at the little beach skirting the bottom of the basin, we found the place as interesting in its general features as any we had seen; the neatness and massive character of the walls, enclosures of stone, and apparent comfort of the dwellings, being quite equal to any thing we had observed, even at the glen of Taioa. The stream forming the falls above, winds with rapidity through the middle of the valley, pouring itself into the bay at the east end of the beach. Near its outlet, a fleet of fishing-boats was drawn up on the bank, and in the midst of them a large war-canoe, similar in its construction to that

in which the chiefs at Taioa paid their visit of ceremony to the ship. In addition to the wooden god and the decorations of human hair behind, the skull of a murdered Taipii was lashed on each corner of the platform elevated at the stern, proclaiming the prowess of the victor in past engagements, and designed, by their spectral gaze, to throw intimidation and terror upon the enemy hardy enough to approach in another conflict. Not having met any thing of the kind before, the unexpectedness of the sight was accompanied by a feeling that made us sensible of being in one of those "dark places of the earth" that are "full of the habitations of cruelty."

Surrounded by an admiring and joyous crowd, we followed the windings of the stream, along a foot-way by its border, to the residence of Taua-tini, the prophet of the Hapas, holding the highest religious, as Piaroro does the highest civil, rank in the tribe. His house is in the centre of the village, on a large low platform, beneath the shade of some noble trees. Our approach had probably been communicated previously to landing from the boats, the Taua being in evident preparedness for the interview. He is a tall, slender, and venerable-looking man, with high and strongly-marked features, and more sedate and dignified expression of countenance and manners than any of his compeers. He received us without rising, seated on the sleeping-mats at the farther side of the house, immediately in front of a low entrance. His whole figure was enveloped in a large mantle of white tapa or native cloth, over which a smaller one of fine scarlet kerseymere fell from his shoulders down the back, both being fastened by one large knot, resting on the chest in front. A double roll of fine white tapa encircled his forehead; while his hair, tied in two close knots, was confined on the crown by long bands of the same. There was something strikingly interesting and

patriarchal in the whole contour of this personage, predisposing us at once in his favour, and inclining us to unusual civility and respect in our approach to him.

Captain Finch, after an interchange of salutations and introduction of the officers in his company, opened the conversation, through the interpreter, by stating the motives leading to his visit, a wish to pay him the same respect he had others of his rank, both friends and foes, and a desire to influence him to peace and friendship with the Taipis; and then entering into a full exposition of his views, urged upon him all the evil and disadvantages of the hostility now existing, and portrayed the benefits of happiness that might be made to result from a state of continued peace.

The Taua listened with serious and close attention, and the deepest thought; and when he had concluded, after a few moments of silent deliberation, expressed his cordial approbation of all that had been said. We were all exceedingly pleased with the good sense and deeply serious, though amiable manners, exhibited by him, and which marked him at once as a general favourite, and decidedly the most respectable islander we had yet seen. There was in his deportment nothing of the childish levity, and disposition to be diverted from a subject in discussion by every passing trifle, so characteristic of the untutored native of the South Seas, but an unvarying sobriety and thoughtfulness, becoming the station he holds, and the importance of the topics under deliberation.

After a short interview, a distribution of the usual presents was made, and the females of the household were inquired after, that they might share in them. They were at an adjoining house, and soon made their appearance, consisting of a wife and four daughters, the youngest about twelve, and the eldest

twenty years of age; all fair and handsome, and partaking in no common degree, for ladies of Nukuhiva, of the reserve and dignity of the father. Judging from the complexion merely, they would never have been thought his children, for, while scarce darker than a clear brunette themselves, he, in every part of his person exposed, was black as a Moor, from the effect of tatan. Their dresses consisted of very full robes of white, gathered closely round the person, with bandeaus and turbans of the same, arranged in most becoming taste and gracefulness.

Thinking it important towards the accomplishment of a peace, that Tava-tini and the heads of the Taihi tribe should have a personal interview, Captain Finch invited him to return to the ship with us, for this object taking with him a chief warrior and the females of his family. The proposal seemed unexpected, and a surprise; but, after a few minutes of reflection and seeming debate in council, he expressed his willingness to place himself under the protection of the captain, and, in returning his visit, to hold a conference on board ship with the Tava and Hetahi of the hostile tribe. The ladies expressed themselves greatly pleased at the suggestion, bearing sufficient time only to make their toilette with greater care than they had done, before starting; a favour most cheerfully granted; while we sailed forth in search of new objects of interest in the wilderness of the little dell.

The examination of a temple immediately adjoining the dwelling of the Tava, left impressions of deep melancholy at the degradation to which ignorance and superstition, where their power is uncontrolled, subject the mind and passions of man. From the evidences of every step marked on every thing appertaining to such of the structures of a similar kind previously visited by us, we had intently looked upon them rather as the ruins of an idola-



*Temple for Human Sacrifices, in the Valley of Halapoa, Washington Islands.—Page 222.*



trous system whose rites had ceased, and as monuments left by apostate worshippers for the curiosity of the passing voyager, than as piles kept in consecration for the performance of services existing at the present moment in all the freshness of their deformity; but, at this spot, we saw, and were made to feel, that the reign of superstition still holds the minds of the people in a bondage of cruelty and fear.

Like the last placé of the kind visited in the glen of Taioa, it is that at which the human victims, not eaten, are principally offered. A platform of stone twenty feet square and three feet high, so thickly surrounded, except in front, by clumps of the pandanus, as to make the centre a dark entangled bower, marks the spot where the last remains of the immolated are thrown, after having putrified and dissolved before the image of the god to whom they are sacrificed. Directly in front of this thicket, in a deep trough rudely sculptured at one end into a head, gaping hideously, as if to devour all who approach, lay a victim of cruelty, a single mass of putridity, above the surface of which, the green and discoloured bones of the skull and chest only were clearly discerned, in the momentary glance that could be cast within. Close beside it, the distorted image to which it was an offering, mouldering itself in green decay, reclined against the platform with a helplessness and inanity sufficient in themselves, it would be thought by an enlightened being, to upbraid with folly the hands that formed, and the minds that could bow down in worship to it.

On the right was a Tupapau, or house of the dead, containing a corpse still affecting the purity of the air, and whose manes may have called for the immolation that had been made; and on the left an altar, with an idol at each end, before which also were offerings recently presented. Besides fresh coconuts and bread-fruit on the pavement, fish and



pieces of pork had been hung around, evidently within a few hours, and two dogs killed and dressed as if for eating, but in an offensive state, were suspended before the images, one by the neck on a pole, and the other from a post, in a basket of coconut leaves, the whole swarming with flies, and throwing out strong odours under the power of the noon-day sun.

Such, dear H——, is a temple at Nukuhiva, in the day of sacrifice! And who, after the sight, or even a description of it, will say, "The heathen need not the gospel of Jesus to make them either wise or happy! that their religion is inoffensive, and their sacrifices acceptable in the sight of a pure and righteous God!" Who, with such facts before him, can for a moment believe that the missionary of the cross does more harm than he does good, when in the providence of God he is made the instrument of razing to the dust such altars of abomination and blood, and of erecting on the ruins humble chapels for adoration and prayer, where the only offering required is the sacrifice "of a broken and contrite heart," and the only victim in atonement for guilt, "the Lamb of God who taketh away the sin of the world!" And how was it possible for me to gaze on such a scene, but in the devoutest prayer that God, in mercy to his creatures, would speedily prepare the way for an utter overthrow of this system of darkness and of death, and, through the preaching of the gospel of salvation, cause himself, a pure and glorious Spirit, to be worshipped in this very grove, and by this very people, in spirit and in truth!

A few moments here were sufficient to sicken both the body and the soul, and we hastily turned from the revolting spectacle, in search of some scene of novelty or beauty to dissipate the impressions forced by it upon the heart.

The first distant glimpse of the waterfall on enter-

ing the bay, had determined me to extend my walk to it, whatever the distance might be; and expressing my intention, a guide was readily furnished by the Tava, to conduct me to it. Not knowing the degree of fatigue that might be required in accomplishing the object, Captain Finch declined accompanying me, and midshipman Huntt and myself set off with one of the gig's crew armed, as an escort. The whole party, however, moved up the stream at the same time, to secure a more full observation of the village.

We had proceeded a few rods only, when a dignified looking man, of fine figure and amiable countenance, some thirty-five or forty years of age, beckoned to us with a fan, from the elevated platform around his dwelling, and requested us to call: an invitation we were the more ready to accept, from the great neatness of the whole premises, and the evident respectability of the proprietor. He was a chief of rank; and a discovery, soon made, caused us to feel great satisfaction in not having neglected his proffered civility.

Shortly after our arrival at Taiohae, the particulars of an outrage, recently committed by a ship passing Nukuhiva, had been related to us, justly exciting our sympathy for the injured islanders, and our indignation at the ill-conduct of men from a christian country.

An American whale-ship approached the island and hove-to, off one of its little bays, as if desirous of communicating with the shore; and a large canoe with seven men put off to her. Five of them were received on board, when the vessel immediately made sail, and stood from the land. Three of the stoutest were then selected from the five, and detained on board; while the remaining two were driven into the sea, and obliged to swim for their lives—the canoe having fallen so far behind, as to have paddled for the shore when the ship stood out to sea, under a belief that all taken on board had been carried

away. One of the persons thus kidnapped, eighteen or twenty years of age, was the only son of a high chief, and a great favourite in his tribe. Besides his parents and an only sister, a strongly attached wife was left to lament his absence, and to deplore an unknown fate.

This fact, with its attendant circumstances, had deeply interested our feelings, when first communicated in the other bay; and was brought back with a double power and sympathy, as we here unexpectedly learned, that this beautiful valley was the spot on which the aggression had been made; and that we were now beneath the roof, and in the presence, of the father; and saw, in the group before us, the mother, sister, and wife of the stolen chieftain. Deep and unaffected sadness was depicted on every feature, as they repeated to us the narrative of their sorrows; and tears were mingled with their entreaties, that Captain Finch would exert every effort in his power, to have the object of affection, thus wantonly torn from them, restored to his home. A string of tapa had been made a record of the time since the event, by the tying of a knot at the return of every full-moon: and it was already marked with five of these, pointing out the month of March as the period of this infamous visit.

The object of the seizure, probably, was to supply some vacancy, occasioned by desertion or death, in the crew; and the unprincipled commander, after having availed himself of the services of the natives till his cargo is completed, should they live so long, will, doubtless, with as little compunction as he perpetrated the first offence, set them on shore at any island most convenient, though it be thousands of miles from their home; or even leave them on some uninhabited rock, as has been the case in instances which have come to the knowledge of a gentleman holding a high official station under our government in this

part of the world, and from whom I received an assurance of the fact.

The strong natural affection manifested by the family, their kind and amiable deportment, and the comfort and respectability of the whole establishment, enlisted our best feelings in their behalf: and Captain Finch, after reprobating in the strongest terms the aggression made under the American flag, and tendering his sincere sympathy, assured them that he would leave no means untried of restoring the lost member of their household, and of exposing to public reproach the man who had wantonly brought upon them the bereavement they mourned.

From this spot, Mr. Huntt and myself recommenced our search for the cascade, the dashing of whose waters already broke upon the ear. Within half a dozen rods, gleamings of its whiteness were also caught through the tops of the trees; and shortly after, we came in full view of a principal section of it. Both in height and beauty it surpassed every expectation; and while we hurried forward with exclamations of delight, we at once despatched the gig's man to apprise the captain of its nearness, and to beg the whole party to come and share in our enjoyment. The height of the fall must be near, if not quite, 300 feet. The stream is first seen against the sky, rushing over a cliff in the gorge of two wooded precipices, then dashing in broken and shelving sheets, seventy or eighty feet, into a basin upon an offset mantled with bushes and creeping plants, where it is concealed for a moment, but rushes again upon the eye a little to the right of the first projection, and, in one broad mass, leaps from ledge to ledge of an almost perpendicular cliff, the remaining distance of 200 feet. The body of water is not very great, but sufficient to be deeply impressive both to the eye and the ear, as it thus tumbles itself headlong, from so great a height, into a smooth and quiet basin below.

I attempted a hasty sketch, while Dr. Malone succeeded in measuring with a line the lowest section of the fall; thus affording us the means of a more accurate estimate of the whole height. I had marked that ledge on my sketch at seventy feet, and upon measuring the line, and finding it to be sixty-six, I felt a confidence in the correctness of the general estimate of the whole at two hundred and eighty or three hundred feet. We were too much delighted with the spot, to leave it in haste; but, by the time I had finished the outline of a drawing, it became necessary to rejoin our boats, in order to accomplish before night the intended visit to the adjoining bay and valley of Hakahaa.

### LETTER XXXIII.

#### HAKAHAA, OR THE VALLEY OF THE NEUTRAL GROUND.

Bay of Oomi, at Nukuhiva. .  
August 9, 1839.

On returning from the waterfall yesterday, to the dwelling of the prophet, we found himself, wife, and daughters in readiness for the proposed visit to the Vincennes.

The second daughter, however, was subjected, at the moment of starting, to a sad disappointment: she was just moving off, in fine spirits, when, unhappily, an infant some months old began crying; and the grandmother interdicted her leaving it—an injunction which, either from parental or filial duty, she chose to obey; though, I doubt not, greatly to her dissatisfaction.

At the Sandwich Islands, previous to the influence of christianity which has now obtained, the result in such a case would probably have been very different. and the babe would have cried in vain. From every

inquiry I have been able to make, I am happy to say there is good reason to believe that the abhorrent crime of child-murder, so prevalent among the Hawaiians and other Polynesians, is a crime of heathenism hitherto spared the Nukuhivans, and their fellow-islanders of the Washington and Marquesan groups. As a people, so far as we can judge, they appear as fond of their children, and give the same evidences of attachment and care in their treatment of them, as the inhabitants of a civilized country: a fact worthy of being placed in happy contrast with the horrors of infanticide, necessarily brought to light in a portraiture of the pagan state of the Georgian, Society, and Sandwich Islanders.

All the domestic relations, indeed, appear to be under more propitious auspices here, than originally at either of those clusters. The marriage tie, though existing almost exclusively in the baneful form of a singular polygamy, that of a plurality of husbands, instead of a plurality of wives, still seems more distinct, more binding, and more enduring here, than at the Society and Sandwich Islands. I have not been able to learn that any particular ceremony attends the marriage engagement, except an interchange of presents between the intended husband and the father of the bride, and the celebration of a feast by the common relatives, with accompanying amusements of dancing and singing.

We have yet met with no instance, in any rank of society, of a male with two wives, but are informed, that for one woman to have two husbands is a universal habit. Some favourite in the father's household or retinue, at an early period becomes the husband of the daughter, who still remains under the paternal roof till contracted in marriage to a second individual; on which, she removes with her first husband to his habitation, and both herself and original companion are supported by him.

Alliances, most unequal in point of age, are often entered into by families of rank, from motives of policy or ambition, in which an infant, male or female, is contracted in marriage to an individual of the opposite sex already arrived at years of maturity, or to a middle or advanced period of life. Contracts of this kind very frequently occur at the formation of a peace between two hostile parties or tribes; and the persons and families thus allied are always spared violence and death in any future war that may take place, or the devastations that may follow a successful inroad of either tribe upon the territories of the other.

Instances of strong conjugal affection are reported of them; and cases are known, in which the infidelity and unkindness of a husband or wife have so deeply affected the happiness of the companion, as to lead to the commission of suicide.

The row round the promontory overhanging this little glen, through the middle bay of the neutral ground at Hakahaa, is about three miles, and rich in a variety and beauty of prospect. The central inlet is about two miles in depth, and one in width. On first doubling the point, as we now entered it from Hakapaa, the ridges of hills, both on the right and left, are coated only in thick-set grass, but, about midway towards the beach on which we were to land,

“ A woodland scene

On either side, drew its slope line of green,

And sweetly hung the water's edge with shade.”

This was beautifully true of the western acclivity. A smooth and verdant shore rose gradually a few rods, above a bright base of pebbles at the beach, to a wide and regularly defined terrace, extending along the hill to the mouth of the valley a mile inland, and so wooded as to appear like an avenue leading to an abode of affluence and rank. It

reminded me of some of the drives I have taken in an English park ; but not a nobleman in the realm can boast an ornament in his grounds, in which there is united such luxuriance, gracefulness, and variety of foliage, as were here presented at a single glance to the eye. Across the bay, immediately opposite, a feature in the landscape equally striking, though less picturesque, attracted our notice, in an extensive plantation of bread-fruit, studding the rising grounds, in lines as straight as those of a carefully arranged orchard at home. It' is the first instance of a regular order in any growth of much extent that I have met with in the South Seas, and affords a pleasing proof of the great beauty the aspect of the country would present, if under the management of cultivators of taste and skill, such as, with proper instruction, the present proprietors themselves might become.

As we approached nearer, the extent and importance of this, almost unoccupied, valley of the neutral ground, became more and more manifest. In its general aspect, the form and height of the mountains bounding it, the evenness and breadth of the interval or bottom land along the stream in the centre, and in the evident richness of the soil, it has a greater resemblance to a fine vale in America, than any thing before seen. It presents none of the wild marks of volcanic formation, so characteristic of Taioa and Taiohae, but, on the contrary, is full of the mild features of a land susceptible of a high state of agricultural improvement ; a difference which gave it a new charm in our eyes, not only from its contrast with all we have lately beheld, but also from associations of home scenery.

The females of the Taua's household expressed some reluctance in coming within the boundaries of a territory common to their enemies, but dismissed their fears when informed that one of the boats



should remain off the shore with them, while our party landed. Taua-tini, alone of the natives, landed on the beach with the captain. A considerable number of Taipiis, warriors and common people, were collected on the green banks above the sand, but manifested no surprise at seeing so distinguished a personage of the tribe with whom they were at war, as Taua-tini, in our party. Nor did we observe any difference, in the deportment of the prophet himself towards them and his own people; he sat down among them as fearlessly, and conversed as familiarly, as if they were all on the best terms imaginable.

The exercise and excitement of the morning had given us keen appetites; and a first point, after reaching the shore, was to despatch Morrison, the interpreter, in search of a suitable place for partaking of some refreshments. When we had succeeded, we at once repaired to the spot, and, seated on our boat-cloaks, beneath the shade of a wide-spread and flowering tree, did as ample justice to the various viands of a plentiful and appropriate collation, furnished by the captain, and served by his boat's crew, as on any similar occasion in our lives.

Our cannibal friends, scattered along the opposite side of the path, which we had made a line of *tabu* to any nearer approach, gazed in wonder at our evident rapacity, and possibly set us down in their own minds as equally voracious with themselves; and that very justly, so far as the rapid disappearance of their *tabu fowls* from our sylvan board gave them data for the conclusion.

The thicket in which we were, and the path beside us, are those at which Commodore Porter commenced his skirmishes with the Taipiis, on the first invasion of this valley in boats, from the harbour of Taiahae. After being much annoyed by stones from the slings of his opponents, and by the spears

of those in ambush along the path, he succeeded in penetrating, with his small force, two miles up the valley, to a heavy wall of defence, which proved an effectual barrier to his progress; and he was obliged to avail himself of an opportunity to retreat, at a moment when he could do so without the appearance of absolute necessity. I was anxious to trace his course, and to examine the fortress he describes, and, immediately after partaking of the luncheon, followed the path through the wood for this purpose.

With a Taipii for a guide, we hurried up the western bank of the river, through a continuation of the hibiscus wood, by winding paths so overhung and entangled with branches, as to make it necessary for us, in many places, to creep rather than walk. A mile from the beach, we crossed the stream on the backs of the natives, who felt more than compensated for their attendance by a small piece or two of tobacco, which we all carried with us for the purpose, given to them occasionally. The remaining distance was through a continued grove of fine bread-fruit trees, and, after crossing and recrossing the stream in the manner we had previously done, at the end of two or two and a half miles we came to the wall.

The Islanders with us seemed perfectly acquainted with the points of locality most interesting, and not only readily made us acquainted with the position of the American party, and the spots of special defence by the Islanders, under cover of a breastwork impenetrable to every thing short of artillery, but, by lively pantomime, gave us no little of the spirit of the original scene. The difficulty and danger of the enterprise are by no means exaggerated in the published accounts of it.

Captain Finch had thought it necessary to limit our absence to half, or, at farthest, three-quarters of an hour, and we were obliged to be content with a

bare sight of a part of the structure. It appeared to extend a great distance among the groves up the valley, and, to one ignorant of its appropriate use, it would be thought only a heavy stone-wall along the base of the hill, for the purpose of an ordinary enclosure.

At the point at which we were, nothing was to be discovered of those distinctive features of a fortress mentioned in the journal of that period.

By a rapid walk, we rejoined our companions within the specified time; and reached the ship in good season.

A strong puff of wind, down the eastern hills, snapped one of our chain cables in the night; and the search for the anchor, and other ship duty, denied us the pleasure we had anticipated, of the company of the first lieutenant, Mr. Stribling, and of the sailing-master, Mr. Lardner.

At nine o'clock, Lieutenant Magruder, Dr. Wesels, midshipmen Kieth, Maury, Renshaw, Wurts, and myself, were off again for Hakapaa. We carried back with us the Taua of the Hapas, accompanied by the prophet and civil chief of the Taipiis to return his visit; thus giving a pledge of sincerity in their professed desire for peace. Their intercourse on board ship was most amicable; and after sleeping in a common tent on the poop-deck, the Taipiis themselves, without any solicitation on our part, volunteered this interchange of civilities. The females were returned to their homes last evening.

The morning was passed, principally, in a review of the objects of interest which had occupied our attention yesterday.

Learning, from the exhibition of a number of warriors, that a neighbouring precipice was accessible, and afforded a descent on the opposite side into the valley of the neutral ground, I determined to make the trip to Hakahaa by land, and join the boats at

the beach in the central bay. Midshipmen Wurts and Maury volunteered for the same route, and, accompanied by Te Ipu, the warrior of the deputation from Taiohae, with Morrison as a guide, when the rest of our companions embarked in the boats, we took a kind leave of the chief and the people of the valley, and commenced the undertaking.

The hill is one of the steepest I ever ascended, in many places almost entirely perpendicular, and mounted only by clinging from one point of rock to another, and laying hold on the branches of the trees and shrubs with which it is heavily clothed. Cut off, by the cliffs above, from the refreshing influence of the trade-wind, with the heat of an afternoon sun beating directly upon us, it was necessary to stop every few moments to regain our breath; but the necessity soon became a delight, from the varied and beautiful views afforded at every turn of the little valley, its humble cots, and untutored inmates, strolling slowly along the margin of its streams, or reclining listlessly, after the excitement of our visit, beneath the shade of the palmy groves, whose plume-like tops were already waving gracefully at our feet.

When about midway up the face of the hill, after gaining the summit of one of the boldest of the projecting ledges of rock, I turned for a moment, and was at once riveted in admiration, at a new, but distant object of wild beauty, a second waterfall, at the head of a deep ravine, branching off on the west from the beautiful valley. It was directly opposite, perhaps half a mile distant, and a hundred and fifty or two hundred feet below the level of the rock on which I stood. Tempe itself can scarce boast any thing of the kind in equal beauty. A heavy mountain torrent, in a thickly-wooded dell, bursts upon the eye from a rich bed of overhanging foliage, and, in one broad, bright, and unbroken sheet of seeming

silver, pours itself over the cliff a hundred feet below. The pool into which it falls is a beautiful circular basin, thickly enclosed by clumps of trees, of such rich and varied foliage, from that of the conical and dark-shaded ironwood, to the white leaves and flowers of the more spreading and tufted candle-tree, as to seem the planting of a cultivated taste, rather than an irregular growth of nature. We looked down upon its quiet and deeply-shaded surface, over the tops of the trees; and, had I been a heathen Greek, I should certainly have pictured, in its cool recesses, the figures of the muses, as alone worthy such a haunt.

A considerable number of the inhabitants of the village had attached themselves to our party, and added no little to the romance of the picture, as seen—some, still below us, toiling up the zigzag acclivities; others, at different distances above, slowly ascending, or, like ourselves, occupying the top of an overhanging cliff, in momentary rest; and others again, their task accomplished, standing on the highest ridge, in strong profile against the sky, waving their mantles in kind encouragement to us below, or beginning on their part to brandish war-clubs and battle-axes over the Taipiis in the neutral ground, and making the heavens ring with shouts of contempt and daring.

Our boats were, at the same time, seen pulling round the promontory into the central inlet; and all the hills around the little valley we had left, were spotted here and there with the white garments of islanders dwelling inland, who had been attracted to the sea-side by our visit, and were now slowly retiring to their lowly cabins, seen peeping in solitude from various points of the mountains.

From the summit, which we at length gained, the view of both the valleys, the surrounding mountains, and of the wide-spread sea, is exceedingly fine:

particularly that of the neutral ground stretching far in the interior, through

“ Blooming wilds

And fruitful deserts, worlds of solitude,

Where the sun smiles, and seasons teem, in vain,

Unheeded, unenjoyed.”

This ridge of the promontory is clothed only with grass, and commands an unobstructed sight in every direction. I walked along it, a mile and more up the country, examining minutely, with a glass, the whole extent of the territories both of the Hapas and Taipiis, and satisfying myself fully of their richness and susceptibility of improvement. I should think them capable of sustaining tenfold the population now occupying them; a number probably less than eight thousand. I regretted that the day was not before me, to allow of extending the excursion to the mountain's top; but perceiving the boats to have arrived at the beach at Hakahaa, and fearing that our companions might be impatient for our arrival, I gave one farewell glance over these lovely scenes, and hastened below, with a curiosity unsatisfied, and an admiration far from satiated.

The descent was almost as precipitous and difficult as the ascent on the other side; but we made it in safety. There was much confusion and turbulence among the Taipiis collected on the banks fronting the bay, and some indications of a mischievous disposition. Several of the gentlemen had been slyly divested of different articles; a dirk from the belt and sheath of one, a pocket-handkerchief from another, &c. Heated and weary, I stopped but a moment amidst the noise and throng, but, mounting the back of one of our boat's crew, was carried through the surf to a cutter; not, however, without having felt two or three noble jerks at my handkerchief, which I had learned too well, at

the Sandwich Islands, to secure at a button-hole, to forget to do the same among our good friends here.

The whole company soon joined me; and, after a delightful row, at even-tide we again reached the Vincennes without accident.

## LETTER XXXIV.

### DEPARTURE FROM NUKUHIVA.

U. S. Ship Vincennes. at Sea,  
August 13th, 1829.

It could scarce be expected, dear H——, that a voyage of the world should be made without accidents and danger; and on the morning of the 11th instant, our beautiful ship narrowly escaped utter destruction.

In endeavouring to get from the bay of Oomi, we were becalmed, while under the influence of a tremendous current setting dead on shore, in water too deep to let go an anchor. The ship was carried irresistibly, by the swell of the sea, against the cliffs at the base of Tower Bluff, till it can only be said that her keel did not touch the rocks. She went stern-foremost into the very breakers; and was prevented striking, only by spars thrust from the poop deck against the cliffs. To have touched must have been inevitable shipwreck, against a barefaced rock, several hundred feet in height, with a depth of water below, which must have left the mast-heads alone above the surface.

For several minutes, each heave of the sea was expected to be followed by the tremendous concussion; while every face was pale with agitation, and the silence of the grave hung over the ship. The chiefs from Taiohae were in great consternation; and Te Ipu, the warrior, catching the young prince Moana in his arms, with tears in his eyes burst into

the exclamation, "*Mate! mate oa! he pahi nuu mānawa!*" "Destroyed! utterly destroyed! is the great man-of-war canoe!" adding a doleful foreboding, that we should all be devoured by the Taipiis. And when by a breath of air from the land our topsails were filled for a moment, and we carried once more to a situation of hope, and soon afterwards, by taking the trade-wind, triumphantly borne to the open sea, he said to Captain Finch, with much feeling, "If the man-of-war had been lost, oh! what a day of weeping this would have been!"

We reached our former anchorage in Taiohae at twelve o'clock the same morning; and spent yesterday principally in replenishing our stock of wood and water for sea.

I did not go on shore till the afternoon; when Mr. Stribling and myself took a stroll up the western side of the valley, following one of the glens to its head, and returning through another; and thus, with former excursions, completing a survey of the whole territory of this tribe. Of our ramble, however, I can at present only say, that it truly was, upon

"The craggy hill, where rocks with wild flowers crown'd,  
Burst from the shady copse and verdant ground;  
Where sportive nature every form assumes,  
And, sweetly lavish, spreads a thousand blooms."

We did not reach the ship till nightfall, but in time to join Captain Finch and our fellow-officers in distributing a few last presents to the chiefs, and in bidding them farewell, as they left the Vincennes for the last time, clad in full suits of our own apparel, and bearing with them new injunctions not to forget all the advice given them, nor to fail in promoting and maintaining a general peace throughout the island.

At eight o'clock, an exhibition of fire-works, rockets, blue lights, &c. took place on board, for the gratification of the natives on shore: and at day-break this



morning, we once more weighed anchor, and are now safely at sea, with a fine breeze bearing us away to Tahiti.

Thus, dear H——, you have the outline of a fortnight at Washington Islands; and, from the hasty sketches I have furnished, will be enabled, I think, to form some just conception of the character of the natural scenery found in them; and of the personal appearance, manners, habits, morals, religion, and general state of the fifty thousand of immortal beings who may constitute the population of the group.

In every observation I have made on the genius and condition of the people, I have endeavoured to free myself from any bias, that might interfere with a candid exposition of their true character. There is a double danger to be guarded against on this point. A man of nice moral sensibility, and one alive to the purity of affection essential to genuine piety, is exposed, in a disgust at the licentiousness unavoidably obtruded on his notice, to lose sight of all that is pleasing and praiseworthy in the nature and condition of the inhabitants, and to think and speak of them only, as associated, in his mind, with a moral deformity and vileness, that in some respects can scarce be equalled. On the other hand, the depraved and the guilty, regarding such traits with a lenient eye, or screening them from view with a mantle of brotherly kindness, are in hazard of imposing on the world a belief that none are so happy—that the islands themselves are an elysium, and their inhabitants a race exempt from the ordinary ills of life, who pass their time in uninterrupted joys, ignorant of sorrow, and strangers to anxiety and every care.

Both these extremes I would avoid; and have given you undisguised facts, so far as they could with propriety be presented; by which to prove, on the one hand, that, while of the natural scenery, it may with truth be said that “every prospect pleases,” the

islanders both physically and mentally possess advantages surpassed by their fellows in no section of the world; and that in general they appear amiable and kind in their domestic and social relations, and in their intercourse with those who visit their distant shores. But, on the other, that they are far from being exempt from many of the various degrading and deplorable evils of heathenism.

The devices of darkness which constitute their religious creed, and the cruelty of practice which it inculcates and approves, cause them literally to spend their lives in a bondage of fear; while an utter ignorance of the true principles of moral good and evil betrays them into unbounded licentiousness and almost every sin. In addition to other polluting qualities, they most unquestionably are, deceitful and treacherous, vindictive and bloodthirsty, delighting in devastation and war, and accustomed to riot on the flesh of their fellows. Child-murder and parricide, so far as we can learn, seem to be the only curses of paganism that they have been spared. If so, of the philanthropist and the christian I would ask, Do they not stand in need of some enlightening, some redeeming power? Do they not stand in need of a preparation for the purity and blessedness of the world to come? And whence shall they derive that needed power, and what means shall secure to them that desired preparation?

In the observations yet to be made by us in the South Seas, I am persuaded that facts will be presented, demonstrating beyond the possibility of a doubt, that the REVEALED WORD OF GOD and the PREACHING OF THE EVERLASTING GOSPEL are the only sure and effectual, as they are the only appointed, means of accomplishing this benevolent object and this glorious end. Firmly believing, from history as well as scripture, that a knowledge of the "light of life" is the most direct and sure means of

meliorating the condition of man, as it alone can secure the salvation of the soul, the only appeal I would make, and the only one necessary to be addressed to the christian heart, in behalf of this interesting but polluted race, is in the language of Heber's missionary hymn—

“ Shall we whose souls are lighted,  
With wisdom from on high ;  
Shall we to men benighted,  
‘The lamp of life deny’  
Salvation ! O salvation !  
‘The joyful sound proclaim,  
Till earth’s remotest nation  
Shall learn Messiah’s name.

## The Georgian and Society Islands.

### LETTER XXXV.

#### ARRIVAL AT TAHITI.

Matavai Bay, at Tahiti,  
August 17, 1829.

A NUMBER of low islands and coral reefs lie about midway between the Washington and Georgian groups, rendering the navigation intricate and dangerous. From a supposition that we might be obliged to lie-to at night, when in that vicinity, we did not expect to accomplish the passage from Nukuhiva to Tahiti, a distance of seven hundred miles, in much less time than a week.

In this, however, we were favourably disappointed. The trade-wind proved unusually fine; and having made the first of the low islands early on the 14th instant, the second day from Taiohae, we succeeded in running by the whole chain the same evening, and, with an open sea before us, hastened on our course with unchecked speed.

Five of the low islands, the Tikoas, the Palliser, and Elizabeth island, were passed by us within two or three miles of their shores. Elevated a few feet only above the water, scarce in sight at the distance of six or eight miles, and but scantily tufted with groves of the cocoa-nut and pandanus, they present a strong contrast to the loftiness and magnificent scenery of the groups between which they lie. Though small, some fifteen or twenty miles only in circumference, they are inhabited: but the subsist-

ence they afford is scanty and miserable, consisting almost exclusively, besides fish from the sea, of cocoa-nuts and the berry of the pandanus.

Happily for the race dwelling upon them, though reduced in their outward circumstances almost to the condition of the brute, the rich blessing of the gospel has reached their desolate shores. Through the influence of native missionaries from Tahiti, they have, within a few years, forsaken their idols, and embraced the religion of the cross, have learned to read, possess the scriptures in the Tahitian version, and daily pay their vows to God, by hymns and prayer, in neat and humble chapels of their own workmanship.

On Saturday, the 15th instant, at twelve o'clock, we descried Matea, or the Island of Osnaburgh, having run some distance from our course to make it. Perceiving it to be only a lofty volcanic rock, rising abruptly from the water in a truncated cone, once evidently a burning funnel, we did not approach nearer than twelve or fifteen miles; and bore away for Tahiti, the principal of the Georgian Islands, of which we gained an indistinct view, forty miles distant, at sunset, the same evening.

While two or three miles from Point Venus, we were boarded by a boat containing one of the inferior magistrates of the district, in a dress of nankeen pantaloons, round jacket of blue silk, white shirt, and black cravat, with a Guayaquil hat. He introduced himself with great civility, and tendered his services to pilot the ship into the bay; but Captain Finch, learning from him that there was a regular pilot appointed by the government, declined the offer till he should come off, and till Mr. Lardner, our sailing master, should go in with a cutter, and make some observation for himself, as to the best anchorage.

In the mean time, a boat was lowered, and Lien-

tenant Dornin despatched on a visit to the Rev. Mr. Wilson, the resident missionary at Matavai. Having a slight personal acquaintance with Mr. Wilson, I accompanied him. We were received very kindly by this gentleman on the beach, and accompanied him to his cottage, a few rods distant, on the bank of a considerable river, running from the mountains through this part of the district. Finding him at leisure to go off to the ship, and knowing that our return would be looked for with impatience; after an introduction to Mrs. Wilson and her daughters, and a few moments' conversation, we took our leave till the Vincennes should be at anchor.

Mr. Wilson remained to dinner with the captain and then landed, to secure permission from the proper authorities, for the interment of a lad who had died on board, the night previous, of a consumption. Some objection was at first made by the natives, lest the disease, with which he had died, might have been contagious; but when assured that this was not the case, a grave was prepared in the burial-ground of the chapel; in which, at sunset, with slow procession and an admonitory service, we deposited the body, there to rest till "time shall be no longer."

From an early hour in the morning till noon to-day, the Vincennes was crowded with people from the shore, bringing various articles of refreshment and curiosity, for trade and barter. Ignorance of the comparative value of the articles they have to dispose of, and those they wish to secure, and anxious to make the exchange at the highest rate of gain on their part, the exorbitance of their demands, and their seeming cupidity, are in some cases such as to be exceedingly vexatious to those attempting to deal with them; but there is nothing of the wild, shouting, rudeness, and nakedness, so annoying at Nukuhiva, nor any thing in their whole appearance

that is offensive, or indicative of any trait of character not to be found in every market-place in a civilized and christian country.

The effect produced on them by our band, in comparison with that on the Nukuhivans, was striking. It is long since they have acquired a taste for the combination of sounds characterizing the music of European countries, and since they have learned themselves to sing various parts in sacred music with correctness and some degree of taste. Though the Nukuhivans would listen to the band for a first time with a kind of wonder and momentary gratification, it was evident they had no particular relish for the style of music or harmony of sounds produced by it; but here, when the musicians were ordered on deck, hundreds clustered round, in the manifest expectation of a rich enjoyment; and the moment they commenced playing, they hung in the rigging and upon the guns in a silent delight which none could help observing; while many evidently drank in the strains of varied harmony with all the luxury of high enjoyment.

---

## LETTER XXXVI.

### HARBOUR OF PAPEETE.

Matavai Bay, at Tahiti,  
August 26th, 1829.

MR. and Mrs. Wilson and daughters dined with Captain Finch on Monday; and on Tuesday, a party from the ward-room and steerage, including myself, visited the harbour of Papeet , six or seven miles westward of Matavai.

The scenery along the intervening shore, beautiful by nature, is now doubly so, from the neat cottages and chapels which, at the short intervals of two and three miles, insensibly blend thoughts of civilization and piety with the impressions made on the mind by

the luxuriance and grandeur of the natural imagery. We sailed the whole distance within a coral reef, which, shortly after leaving Matavai, lines the coast, at half a mile from the beach to the entrance of the harbour, and arrived at Papeeté at eleven o'clock.

Our party was welcomed on the beach by Mr. Ma-renhaut, a Dutch gentleman temporarily at Tahiti, and by Captain Brock, late commander of an English vessel wrecked on the eastern side of the island, both of whom had visited the Vincennes the first day of her arrival. Learning from them, that the Rev. Mr. Pritchard, the missionary at this station, was ill, we accompanied them to their cottage, before calling at the mission house.

At twelve o'clock we paid our respects to Mr. and Mrs. Pritchard, and were delighted with the neatness of their humble dwelling. Mr. Pritchard, a well-educated and intelligent man, though much indisposed, received us with great kindness; and in Mrs. Pritchard we were pleased to meet, in this happy and honourable exile, an excellent woman. Their little parlour, though furnished with a plainness and simplicity appropriate to the situation and character of the occupants, wore an aspect of refinement and cultivation, that bespoke a familiarity with more polished scenes than those in which they are now found. Two fine, healthful, and neatly dressed children, beside their mother on a sofa, added greatly to the charm of a home-scene, so welcome to us, after the exhibition of heathenism with which we had been conversant at Nukuhiva. An hour passed rapidly away under such circumstances; when we took leave, to pass over the bay to the islet in front of the harbour, where we had made arrangements for a repast, furnished from the stores of the Vincennes.

This is a delightful little spot; a few rods only in circumference, but covered with groves, in miniature, of almost every variety of growth found on the main-



land. In returning, we called at a point two miles above, occupied by Mr. Bicknell, an English planter, and at the missionary station, under the superintendence of the Rev. Mr. Nott, in sight of Matavai.

The habitation of Mr. Bicknell is a respectable new frame building, weather boarded at the sides and end with a roof of thatch in the native style, the wooden part being neatly painted in cream colour, with doors, Venetian blinds, and a covered veranda in green. Within, the arrangement, finish, and furniture, correspond with the neatness, and even elegance, for this part of the world, of the exterior; while horses and mules, herds of cattle, and flocks of goats, in the adjoining enclosures, a sugar-mill and boilers, and a warehouse filled with beautifully-grained sugar, molasses, and rum, testify to the resources, and promising circumstances, of the proprietor. On landing in front of the establishment, we were received at the gate, and very kindly welcomed, by Mr. Bicknell, introduced to Mrs. Bicknell, and welcomed to the hospitality of his house.

From this point, a part of our number walked along the beach to the residence of Mr. Nott. It was quite dark before we reached his grounds, and we called with the intention of stopping a moment only; but the kindness and hospitality of himself and wife obliged us to remain to a cup of tea; and it was late in the evening before, much gratified with our visit, we rejoined our barge, and rowed in safety, beneath a lovely sky, the remaining distance to the Vincennes.

On Thursday I made a second visit to Papeeté, and, in returning, young Anthony and myself took a turnpike, which has been constructed almost entirely around the island, a distance of near a hundred miles, as far as Mr. Nott's, at Pare. This road is a fine and praiseworthy work for such a people, the labour principally of convicts proved guilty of various breaches of the laws. It is a broad gravel-way, extending,

for the most part, in a direct line from point to point along the coast, smoothly and well finished, and provided with narrow bridges of plank over the water-courses from the mountains to the sea.

On a following day, I made the same excursion, for a third time, with Captain Finch and a small party. The only incident of interest, varying this from the preceding visits, was the attendance of an hour at a school under the charge of Mr. Pritchard. The number of scholars was about one hundred and fifty, of both sexes, from six to ten or twelve years of age. It is established on the monitorial system; and the exhibition made by the pupils, of native intelligence, and their proficiency in reading and writing, in rehearsing hymns and portions of scripture, in answering catechetical questions, and in singing, were such as greatly to interest and gratify us; and to elicit from Captain Finch, in an address to the scholars, interpreted by Mr. Pritchard, high encomiums on the attainments they had already made, and warm encouragement to a persevering attention to the means of improvement and intelligence with which they are favoured.

The hand-writing of many was quite equal to that of children of the same age, in schools in America; and the elder scholars are pursuing an elementary course in arithmetic, geography, and history. Very few district schools in the interior of our own country are accommodated with so pleasant, convenient, and spacious a school-house; and no school that could be visited, would present an appearance of greater neatness in the children, more happiness of look, modesty of apparel, and order and propriety of deportment. Schools of a similar kind are under the daily superintendence of the missionaries at every station; and facilities for securing the arts of reading and writing, at least, are thus afforded to the whole population.

## LETTER XXXVII.

## A TAHITIAN SABBATH.

Matavai Bay at Taniti,  
August 22d, 1829.

THE first missionaries to the Georgian Islands, having made the voyage from England by the Cape of Good Hope, without an allowance for the gain of time in sailing eastward, were, on their arrival at Tahiti, a half day and more in advance of visitors coming to the islands by Cape Horn. This difference still continues; and consequently, to-day, though only Saturday the 22d in the record on board the *Vincennes*, is Sunday the 23d on shore.

A number of the officers and crew attended the services of Mr. Wilson's chapel, both in the morning and afternoon. The exercises on each occasion were, so similar, that I shall speak only of those of the morning worship, which I witnessed, in company with Captain Finch and a party from the ward-room and steerage.

We landed at nine o'clock; previously to which, we had seen the people, in large numbers, going to and returning from, a prayer-meeting at sun-rise. Hearing the sound of recitations in the school-house, a neat and comfortable building between the cottage of Mr. Wilson and the chapel, we directed our course to it. A sabbath-school, consisting of about one hundred and fifty boys and girls, from the ages of three and four years to fifteen and seventeen, was here assembled, in which several respectable middle-aged men acted as teachers and superintendents while others, of the same age and character, walked along the passages at the sides and centre of the building, holding long slender rods of the light hibiscus, with which to touch any of the younger scholars when disposed to be mischievous and trou-

blesome. Many of the parents and friends were also present as spectators.

When we entered, the whole school was repeating the answers of a catechism simultaneously, with great promptitude and correctness. This was followed by a recitation from the Bible, in which one scholar would rehearse a section of a chapter, and another that succeeding, thus alternating from individual to individual, and from class to class, with the greatest readiness; and manifesting, by the unhesitating manner in which they continued the exercise from verse to verse, and chapter to chapter, no ordinary tenacity and strength of memory. A hymn was then sung, in which all joined; when the school was closed with an appropriate prayer by the superintendent. Mrs. Wilson and her daughters were present as teachers and managers of the female scholars; and in the whole aspect of the school, there was a cleanliness and propriety of dress, and personal appearance, and an intelligence and order, equal to those found in any of the kind in our own country.

While at prayer,

"The sound of the church-going bell,"

with its sweet and elevating associations in the pious mind, began to reach us from a neighbouring grove; and shortly after, the scholars, in a procession of two and two—the boys led by a native superintendent, and the girls by Mrs. Wilson and her daughters—quietly made their way to a temple of God, founded, within the last fifteen years, on the ruins of altars which for time unknown had been steeped in blood. Crowds of islanders, of every grade, were also seen gathering beneath the thick shade of the trees covering the point, to the same spot, all clad in neat and modest apparel, principally white, of their own or foreign manufacture; and exhibiting, in their whole aspect, a dignity and respectability of charac-

ter becoming a christian people. Almost every individual had in his hand a copy of the portions of the scripture translated into the language of the group, and a book of hymns.

The chapel is a large and neat building, one hundred and ten feet long, and forty broad ; lofty, airy, and well finished in all its parts, and wholly of native workmanship. The number of worshippers amounted to about four hundred, the usual congregation at this place, including almost entirely the population of the vicinity. The whole appearance of the people, their attention and seeming devotion during the exercises of reading the scriptures, singing, prayer, and preaching, was as markedly decorous as would be expected, or seen, in America or England ; and such as to make a deep impression on my own mind. A single glance around was sufficient to convince the most sceptical observer, of the success and benefit of missions to the heathen ; for it could not be made, without meeting the plainest demonstration, that such can be rescued from all the rudeness and wildness of their original condition, can be brought to a state of cleanliness and modesty in their personal appearance, can be taught to read and to write, (for many, besides the intelligent and familiar use of the scriptures and their hymn-book, took notes in pencil of the sermon delivered,) in a word, can be transformed into what civilization and christianity vouchsafes to man.

After worship, we perceived a large portion of the middle-aged and elderly men, and many of the younger, to remain in the chapel, while an equal proportion of the females repaired to the school-house. On inquiring the object of this, we learned that it was customary for the members of the church, and persons so disposed, to spend a half hour or more after service, in conversation on the subject of the discourse of the missionary, and in prayer for a

blessing upon its truth to themselves, and to all who heard it.

Between the hours of public worship, I joined the mission family in an English service of singing, reading, and prayer, in Mr. Wilson's parlour. The greatest quietude reigned around; and the whole external observance of the day by the natives, in a suspension of all ordinary occupations and amusements, was such as to be worthy the imitation of older and more enlightened christian nations.

## LETTER XXXVIII.

### VISIT TO EIMEO, AND ARRIVAL AT THE SOCIETY ISLANDS.

Island of Paitea.  
Sept. 1st, 1829.

ON the morning of the 26th ult., a party, of which I made one, sailed in two boats for the island of Eimeo, or Moorea, twelve or fifteen miles west of Tahiti. The Rev. Mr. Wilson kindly accompanied us in the excursion. On reaching the north end of the island, for which we steered on leaving Matavai, we entered within a reef skirting it at a distance of a quarter of a mile, and passing by the mouth of the bay of Paopao, or Cook's harbour, at present uninhabited, reached the missionary settlement at Pape-toai, at the bay of Opunohu, or Taloo, a few miles farther west, early in the afternoon.

The scenery along the northern shore is delightful, both bays lying cradled, like lakes, in the midst of mountains of the most picturesque wildness, and of the richest verdure. The whole surface of Eimeo is much more broken than that of Tahiti; and from whatever point viewed, its contour abounds in lofty pinnacles and shafts of wooded rock and mountain. We were received on the beach by the Rev. Mr. Simpson, and most hospitably entertained.

Papetoai does not differ materially from Matavai and Papeet , in the evidences of civilization and piety it presents. The chapel is very superior, and more substantial than any other building yet erected in the South Seas, being of hewn coral, not dissimilar in its appearance to a light freestone or marble. It is an octagon, sixty or seventy feet in diameter, well plastered and whitewashed within, and furnished with convenient seats constructed of the timber of the bread-fruit tree. The gallery, and a handsome pulpit, are of the same material.

Early the next morning we left for Afareaitu, returning to the north-east point inside of the reef, and then coasting along the eastern shore, eight or ten miles, to a little islet marking the entrance of the harbour. Afareaitu is a lovely spot, surrounded by magnificent and beautiful objects. The South Sea academy, chapel, and cottages of the natives, stretching in a long line of whiteness around the bay, at the water's edge, beneath mountains springing almost perpendicularly more than three thousand feet high, present a delightful scene as you row in from the sea, and show what additional beauty the hand of art and civilization can scatter over the splendours of natural scenery.

On the subject of the South Sea Academy, the cotton manufactory, and others of a similar kind, I must refer to the "Polynesian Researches" of our friend Ellis, in which you will find every desirable information respecting them.

During the afternoon of Thursday, we made a water party for the missionaries and children of the academy, and visited the islet on the reef in front of the settlement. It commands a beautiful view of bay and mountains; and I occupied the time we were upon it, principally in taking a sketch, to add to the collection already in my portfolio.

Our kind friends furnished us with a repast before

dawn on the morning of the 28th; and immediately after, bidding them farewell, with grateful feelings for the hospitality with which we had been entertained, we left the harbour, on our return to the ship, while the stars were yet twinkling in the sky.

On the first Sabbath we were at Matavai, Mr. Pritchard preached on board the Vincennes, and with the Rev. Mr. Crook, from a distant station on the southern side of the island, spent the day with us; and on the last, Mr. Pritchard, Mr. Wilson, Mr. Marenhaut, and Captain Brock, were at worship, and dined on board. In the evening Mr. Stribling and myself went on shore, to take leave of Mrs. Wilson and her daughters; and at ten o'clock on Monday, the Vincennes took her anchor, and bore away for the Society Islands, a hundred miles distant.

It was the intention of Captain Finch to have touched at Huahine, the most eastern of this group; and last evening, after passing Tabuæ-manu, at too great a distance to discern it distinctly, I retired to my cot, with the pleasing anticipation of making an early visit on shore at Fare, the station and settlement in pastoral charge of the Rev. Mr. Barff, long the colleague, and still the intimate friend, of Mr. Ellis. The wind, however, was light and unfavourable during the night, and by morning we had fallen so much to the leeward of the whole island, that it was determined to proceed without delay to Raiatea, also in sight.

By twelve o'clock we had approached so near the northern end of Raiatea, as to distinguish the chapel and cottages of the settlement, with a flag-staff and the banner of the nation, a broad horizontal stripe of white between two of red, flying from its top. At the same time a native pilot boarded us, and, carrying the ship through a narrow opening in the reef, with a small island on either hand, brought us safely to anchor opposite the village, a mile and a half north



of the entrance by which we had passed within the reef.

We are in the midst of another varied and beautiful panorama. The ship lies within a short distance of the shore, which is richly edged with groves and single trees, and a fine undergrowth of the banana, sugar-cane, and various shrubbery, surrounding and overhanging the white cottages of the inhabitants. These stand thickly, in regular lines, along a single street, two miles or more in length, and are backed by abrupt hills, covered with grass and bushes, till they rise into a bold cliff with a flattened top, standing high above the settlement, and forming a striking land-mark in approaching the island on the eastern side.

Our arrival attracted little attention ; not a canoe came off, nor did any collection of persons on the shore, or other appearance, indicate the childish excitement usual among uncivilized people, on such occasions. From the pilot we learned, that Tamatoa, the king of Raiatea, and the whole royal party from Tahiti, were at the adjoining island of Tahaa ; and it was not till the cool of the evening, that any of the ship's company landed. I then went on shore, with several gentlemen of the ward-room.

The landing is on a substantially-laid quay of coral, where we met an intelligent lad of twelve years, the son of the Rev. Mr. Williams, the missionary of the station. He informed us that his father was at the chapel, delivering a customary weekly lecture ; and, on directing our walk up the street, we met, and returned with him to the mission-house, and were introduced to Mrs. Williams and her family. Their establishment is more neat and rural, and more comfortable in its whole arrangement, than any we have before seen. The house is large and convenient, having three pleasant rooms in front, opening by

length of the building, and commands, across an enclosure filled with shrubbery, fruit, and flowers, a fine view of the ocean. Every thing around looked neat and prosperous; and, on taking a walk through the village, we found the same features marked, in a greater or less degree, on the habitations and appearance of the people every where. Still, we are told that the evidences of improvement in the arts and manner of life here, are not equal to those exhibited at the neighbouring island of Huahine.

### LETTER XXXIX.

#### INTERVIEW WITH THE KING TAMATOA, AND A SABBATH AT RAIATEA. \*

Island of Raiatea,  
Sept. 5th, 1839.

MR. Williams called upon Captain Finch and the officers of the ship, early on the morning after our arrival, and there has been since a daily and almost hourly interchange of civility and kindness between the Vincennes and mission-house. Some of our number spend every evening on shore; and Mr. and Mrs. Williams and family, and Mrs. Hunter, the wife of a Captain Hunter, at present on the South American coast, have passed a day with us on ship-board.

Learning that the wife of the king had not accompanied him to Tahaa, Captain Finch and myself paid her a visit on the morning of the 3d instant. The king's house is a respectable building, of frame, wattle, plastered, and whitewashed, in the manner now extensively introduced throughout the Georgian and Society Islands. It is in the cottage style of one story, with a roof of thatch, and has four rooms on the floor; one large and airy, used as a reception-hall, and the others smaller, appropriated as sleeping and dressing apartments. The former has four glazed windows and two large doors, one in panels

of wood opening on the street, and the other of glass, towards the sea, from which it is separated by a small enclosure of grass and shrubbery.

We were shown into this, while the queen, who was at another residence, was informed of our wish to see her. The wood work is neatly painted, the floors covered with fine mats, and the walls lined with settees of native workmanship, from the timber of the bread-fruit, with seats and backs of beautifully braided cord of the fibre of the cocoa-nut husk. We took the liberty of opening the doors of the adjoining rooms, and found them all furnished with well-made bedsteads, covered with several thicknesses of soft mats in place of mattresses, and spread with counterpanes of India print. A drapery of white tapa, or native cloth, around the windows, and on canopies over the beds, gave an air of great neatness and comfort to the whole. Many of the cottages of the common people, into which we looked, bear, both within and without, similar marks of order and respectability.

The queen soon arrived. She is fifty or sixty years of age, and highly respectable in her appearance, with traces of early beauty still discoverable in her features and expression of countenance. Her dress was a loose slip of white cambric, with a pau, or native petticoat, of blue and white in cross-bar over it; and a long shawl and straw bounet. Immediately after the arrival of the Vincennes, an express had been despatched for the king; and she informed us, that he would probably reach Raiatea early the same evening.

This was the case; and yesterday morning Captain Finch, accompanied by the surgeon and Lieutenants Dornin, Magruder, Lardner, and myself, waited upon him. We were received in the same room as on the preceding day; and the interview with Mr. Williams, as interpreter, was interesting and pleasant. Tama-

toa, without being corpulent, is one of the tallest and largest men I ever saw. Standing, when he rises, in gigantic proportions of limb and muscle, fully a head and shoulders above all around him. He is dignified in his manner, and converses with much good sense and intelligence. The captain informed him of the general objects of the visit of the Vincennes to the South Seas; of the policy he was instructed by our government, and desirous himself, to pursue; and tendered the services of the ship, in any manner he might wish, during the period of our stay. He expressed himself much gratified, and thankful for the kindness of the government, and the politeness of the commander of the man-of-war.

On our way to the mission-house, afterwards, we made a second call upon his wife, at a house occupied by her during the visit of the queen of Tahiti, to whom she has relinquished the use of the principal royal establishment.

We found the queen, like those of "olden time," in the midst of her maidens, at work, not at the loom or embroidering frame, but in weaving the more beautiful of the mats manufactured at the islands. That which she was herself platting not being so fine as some of the rest, she apologized for it, by remarking, that when young, no one excelled her in the art, but, now that she was old, she was incapable of rivaling others. The example of occupation and industry thus presented, in the household of the first female in the nation, was pleasing and praiseworthy; and she seemed gratified by the commendation it called from our party. Both the king and queen are very decidedly and sincerely pious; and I observed, with pleasure, a Testament and hymn-book lying within reach of each of the females at work, evidently for use and not display, as our visit was entirely unexpected to them, and not intended by ourselves till at the door of the house.

In the evening, Tamatoa took tea with Lieutenant Stribling and myself, at the mission-house; and is manifestly a sensible, dignified, and truly christian ruler.

To-day has been the sabbath, on shore. The chapel here, like all we saw at the windward group, is large, well built, and a noble edifice for such a people. It is not less than a hundred and twenty feet in length, and proportionably wide, calculated to seat two thousand hearers. The usual congregation varies from a thousand to twelve hundred. The number assembled to-day amounted to about eleven hundred; all well and neatly clad, and exhibiting, in their whole appearance, and manner of attending the service, every characteristic of civilization, respectability and piety, found in any common congregation in the United States. But for the colour of the audience, indeed, it would have been difficult for any one to believe himself worshipping with those who, till within a few years, had been lost in all the gross vice, licentiousness, and wildness of paganism. The sight was at once delightful and affecting.

The old queen was conspicuous, in a white India muslin, handsomely made, with yellow silk handkerchief, fine ruff, satin sash, and modish straw hat and trimmings, a present from the governor of New South Wales. In many accidents of feature and manners, this individual is uncommonly like one of the most distinguished of our elderly female friends.

Capt. Finch, and a dozen of the officers, attended the chapel in the morning. Arrangements had been made to take the band along, to play a few pieces of sacred music, at intervals in the service, for the gratification of many, who would have no other opportunity of witnessing the performance of the musicians. The exercises began, as on board ship, with the Portuguese hymn. I was fearful that the novelty might occasion some confusion; but it did not in the least.

There was not the slightest unbecoming excitement ; not even among the children, who took their seats together, as they entered in long procession from the sabbath-school.

It was the day of the communion ; and, after the general congregation had been dismissed, about three hundred of both sexes, and of a variety of ages, with solemnity, and seemingly deep interest, partook of the emblems of the broken body and shed blood of Him who gave his life a ransom for many. Much as the sincerity and piety of the church members in the Islands have been doubted by the calumniators of the mission, from all I have observed and known, and from all passing before me on this occasion, I was led to the fervent prayer, that I might myself, at last, be equally worthy, with many of these, of a seat at the marriage supper of the Lamb.

Mr. Stribling and myself spent the evening with Mr. and Mrs. Williams. This we almost invariably do ; and never without being deeply impressed by hearing, in the stillness of the night, the melody of the native hymn falling on the ear in various directions, from the little cottages of islanders, as they engage in their evening devotions. Family worship, consisting of the reading of a portion of scripture, of a hymn, and of prayer, is generally practised.

## LETTER XL.

### AUDIENCE WITH THE QUEEN OF TAHITI, AND VISIT OF THE CHIEFS ON BOARD.

Island of Raiatea,  
Sept. 8, 1829.

ON the evening of the sixth instant, the queen of Tahiti, the dowager her mother, an aunt holding the office of regent, with a train of inferior chieftains, and a suite of followers, said to be the most lawless company in the two groups, arrived in two small

vessels from Tahaa; and, on the succeeding morning, a visit of ceremony was paid to the party, by Capt. Finch, and a number of the officers of the Vincennes.

The reputation of the Tahitian chieftains is far from being unspotted. The regent and dowager are both excommunicated members of the church; and the young queen's character, according to common report, is not *sans reproche*. Their whole appearance, however, was most decorous; and surpassed, in respectability, every anticipation we had been led to entertain. The interview took place in the apartment already described, in the residence of king Tamatoa, the only alteration consisting in new mats on all the sofas, and in the introduction of two armed chairs, at the upper end, as seats of honour, for the young queen, Pomaré, and her aunt the regent.

We were introduced in the order of rank; and found *the court* to consist of Pomare Vahine I., Ariipaea regent, Tereomoëmoë queen dowager, (both daughters of the king of Raiatea,) the governess of Huahine, also his daughter, with their husbands, king Tamatoa and his wife, the governor of Tahaa, and several inferior chieftains, with four or five children, male and female, descendants of Tamatoa. Indeed, he is the partriarch of the whole number, being either the father, grandfather, uncle, or grand-uncle, by blood or marriage, of every chief person present. They were all dressed in European costume, varying in the expensiveness of the materials; and more or less complete, in the articles constituting a full suite.

Mr. Williams, at the request of Captain Finch, attended as interpreter, and gave a full exposition of the nature and object of the visit of the Vincennes. The regent presided, the young queen saying nothing except through her, and then only in monosyllables. She is still young, only seventeen, of good figure and agreeable face, especially when smiling or in conver-

sation, when she is better-looking than most females we have seen since leaving the Washington Islands.

While at Tahiti, a complaint, well founded, as we ascertained, had been made to Captain Finch, of the conduct of the queen and regent, in reference to some deserters from an American whale-ship, natives of the Sandwich Islands, but regularly shipped members of the crew; which he thought necessary and desirable to bring forward. The subject evidently was not an agreeable one to the persons principally concerned; and we were quite amused at the adroit manner in which the regent attempted to screen herself and the queen from the censure to which she perceived they were exposed. After having placed the subject in a light calculated to prevent a recurrence of similar conduct, the matter was pleasantly dismissed by the captain; and the official part of the audience closed, by an invitation to the whole company to visit the ship next day.

The conference being thus ended, the king of Raiatea and his queen, accompanied by the dowager and regent of Tahiti, retired to one of the inner apartments, and returned shortly after, laden with beautiful mats and native cloth, which they placed, as a present, at the feet of the captain: the regent giving that which she bore in the name of the young queen. At the same time, the street door was thrown open, and the steward of the queen's household stepping in, with an oratorical attitude and loud voice, pointed to a large quantity of provisions, cocoa-nuts, bananas, taro, potatoes, &c., with several hogs, placed in full view; and enumerating the whole in order, submitted them to the disposal of the captain, as a gift from his mistress to himself and officers.

When about taking leave, we were informed that a regular monthly meeting of the secondary chiefs, or land-holders, for the discussion of topics of public importance, was then taking place in the chapel;



and, that a messenger had arrived, inviting our attendance.

This class of chiefs in Raiatea consists of eight or ten individuals, tall and largely-framed men, without an excess of corpulence, and dignified and highly respectable in their appearance and whole deportment. They are the stanch friends and supporters of all the institutions of civilization and piety, and evidently the very bones and sinews of the land. After being seated among them, several of the number, in short but animated and appropriate speeches, expressed the great pleasure it gave them to see a ship from the government of the United States at their island, and the happiness they had experienced in learning the kind sentiments, and in observing the amiable and condescending deportment, of Captain Finch; asking, in conclusion, any advice he might think proper to address to them. In return, he assured them of every kind feeling towards themselves and people, testified to the interest and satisfaction with which he regarded the improvements and advances in civilization they had made, and encouraged them to unwearied attention, both in themselves and in their children, to the means of knowledge with which they were favoured, and to the enactment and enforcement of wholesome laws. On which Uaeva, one of the most distinguished of the number, made the following reply :

“ CHIEFTAIN AND FRIEND,

“ This is my speech to you. Great has been the joy of our hearts since your arrival among us, because of the kindness of your object in this visit. We greatly rejoiced on the sabbath-day, for your presence with us in worshipping the Lord; and in bringing your band of beautiful music to unite with us in praise. This made our hearts very glad.

“ You are now advising us, and strengthening us

in our small and feeble government; you are encouraging us in the acquisition of letters, and in the formation of laws: this is good. Should any thing prevent the benefit of this encouragement in the affairs of our government, still may your great nation countenance and promote the work of God among us, and patronize our teachers in doing their good work.

“ Health and salvation to yourself, chieftain, and to all the nobles and christians of America !”

At the request of the queen, the band was sent on shore for an hour or two in the afternoon; and a kind of concert and oratorio given in the chapel, attended by the missionaries, many of the officers of the Vincennes, and a large concourse of royalty and plebeianism. The entertainment seemed highly gratifying to all: and as it had been a kind of gala-day, rockets and fireworks were set off on board ship in the evening; a novelty to all on shore, except the Tahitians.

Early this morning, the ship was in order to receive our guests, and boats despatched, at ten o'clock, to fetch them on board. The queen of Tahiti was handed over the side by the captain, the guard of marines presenting arms, and the band playing “ Hail, Columbia.” After the whole number had been escorted to the poop-deck, a salute of fifteen guns was fired, during which we had proof that delicate nerves are not confined to the polished side of the globe. Many of the female noblesse of the party were greatly agitated; the good old queen of Raiatea sank to the deck, and I believe actually went to prayer; while her majesty of Tahiti, hanging on the captain's arm, in front of the rest, stood the first two or three guns forward very well; but as the gunners touched off the battery farther and farther aft, she began to retreat with a finger in each ear, but laughing, and exclaiming, “ *Maitai! maitai!*” — “ Good! good!” with a tremulous and terrified voice.

In a fashionable black satin dress, with deep ruff of thin muslin, a golden girdle and clasp, and a handsome round hat of fine straw trimmed with ribbons and flowers, she made quite a genteel appearance. Most of the others were equally well dressed.

The governess of Huahine I found to be one of the most intelligent of the company. We had quite an animated conversation before dinner, in which she exhibited a greater degree of information than I had expected. She appeared fully to understand the difference of government in the United States and at the islands, knew the elective nature of the presidential office, inquired the name of the present incumbent, and asked whether it was probable he would be chosen for another term, &c. &c. The general state of the Sandwich Islands is also familiar to her, as she corresponds with some of the chiefs there.

## LETTER XLI.

### COMMUNICATION OF POMARE VAHINE I., TO THE PRESIDENT.

*Island of Raiatea, Sept. 16th, 1827.*

THE queen of Tahiti and party called on board this morning, after having embarked on their return to Tahaa. The appearance of the rabble, constituting a principle part of her train, in contrast with that of most of the islanders we have seen, either at the Georgian group or at this place, goes far to prove the reputed licentiousness of her household; and detracts greatly from the good impression made by the respectability and propriety of her personal deportment.

A principal object in visiting the Vincennes, was to commit to Captain Finch a letter she has written to the President. Of this, Mr. Williams has furnished the following translation:

" Raiatea, September 26th, 1829:

" PRESIDENT,

" In consequence of your kindness, I write a letter to you. You sent a man-of-war formerly to our land, commanded by Captain Jones: he treated us with great kindness. You have now sent another man-of-war, commanded by Captain Finch; his kindness to us has also been great: we are highly pleased with his visit. I now write to you to express my gratitude; also to inform you of our present state.

" I am a female, the first queen of Tahiti, Queen Pomaré I. is my name. I am daughter to Pomaré II. When he died, the government devolved on my little brother. He died; the government then became mine. I am young and inexperienced.

" We have cast away the worship of idols, and have embraced the worship of our common Lord. In the year 1814, we embraced christianity.

" We have missionaries on the island, who are diligent in teaching us that which will promote our welfare. Some have been with us upwards of thirty years.

" We have laws by which we are governed. I cannot send you a copy, I being on a visit to my grandfather at Raiatea.

" Tahiti and Eimeo are the largest islands in my government. We have not many people; perhaps ten thousand.

" There is not much property at my island; arrow-root and cocoa-nut oil are the principal. We have abundance of food, and excellent harbours for ships. Many American vessels call at Tahiti: tell them to continue to call, and we will treat them well.

" All kinds of cotton cloth are in demand here for barter; white, printed, blue, shawls, ribbons, axes, are all good property to bring, to procure refreshments.

" We have a new flag given us by Captain Lawes, of the Satellite, British man-of-war; will you kindly

acknowledge it, in traversing the seas, and in visiting you, as yours is by us, should that be the case at a distant period.

“ Captain Finch has made myself, and mother, and aunt, with others, some handsome presents in your name, for which receive my gratitude. We are always glad to see American vessels at Tahiti. Continue to sail your vessels without suspicion. Our harbours are good, and our refreshments abundant.

“ Prosperity attend you, President of the United States of America : may your good government be of long duration. “ QUEEN POMARE I.”

Tamatoa, the king of Raiatea, has also prepared a communication of similar import, to be transmitted to the president by Captain Finch.

Lieutenant Stribling and myself attended a meeting this afternoon, held weekly by Mr. Williams, with those of his congregation who have been baptized. It is the intention of this gentleman, in the course of a few months, to make an extensive voyage among the islands west of the Georgian and Society groups, and to carry with him a number of the natives of Raiatea, of established piety, to be left as teachers, wherever it may be found practicable. Eight of his parishioners have given their names to him, in view of this enterprise ; and he chose this opportunity to communicate the fact to the members of the church ; and to ask their opinion of the fitness of the individuals for the undertaking, and the propriety of their entering upon it.

The introduction of the subject led to a number of sensible and excellent speeches. One of them contained a very pretty allusion to the visit of the Vincennes, and the policy of Captain Finch, with an application to the contemplated voyage of Mr. Williams. It was much as follows : “ A large man-of-war is now with us. She has come from afar with kind mo-

tives and designs of good to ourselves and those like us. Her object is to learn our condition, and to encourage us to seek our own welfare. Her officers have their reward: they are covered and crowned with gold—they wear gold on their shoulders and gold on their heads, (alluding to the lace and epaulets of their uniform,) it is their reward. My sentiment is, that we, too, send out a vessel to those more ignorant and poorer than ourselves, to do them good. Those of us who go on this expedition will not, like these our friends, be crowned with gold for their reward. No! they will receive nothing in this world, perhaps: still they shall be crowned. Yes! theirs shall be the crown of eternal life, to be given them, at last, by their Lord and Master Jesus Christ!"

The evening has been spent, as usual, at the mission-house. I have become much attached both to Mr. and Mrs. Williams. Mrs. Williams is an amiable and intelligent woman, well educated, and of good manners; and Mr. Williams is admirably fitted in every respect for a missionary, and long has been, and still is, the instrument of immense good among his people.

---

## LETTER XLII. \

### DEPARTURE FOR THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, at Sea, Sept. 14th, 1822. "

YESTERDAY morning, we hoisted short before breakfast; and at nine o'clock took our anchor, to bid farewell to the Society Islands. A native pilot, a fine-looking and respectable man, conducted the ship to the open sea. Mr. Williams also politely accompanied us beyond the reef.

From the outline of our visit at the Georgian and Society Islands, which I have thus given, you will perceive, dear H——, that I have left you to consult the recent publication of Mr. Ellis for all that is most

important, in the history, present state, and prospects of their inhabitants. In the letters I have written, however, there is sufficient evidence, I trust, to prove them decidedly and interestingly a civilized and christian people; and to present a conclusive and delightful demonstration of the power of the gospel on the nature, habits, and life of untutored man.

If the aspect of the people in general, and the animated declaration and lively sensibility, even to tears seemingly of deep feeling, of those who have a full remembrance, and who largely shared in their own experience of the evils of heathenism, are to be accredited, the islanders themselves are far from being insensible to the benefit and blessing of the change they have experienced; and would not for worlds be deprived of the light and mercy they have received, or again be subjected to the mental and moral darkness, and various degradation, from which they have escaped.

Yet there are those, who have visited the South Seas, men bearing the christian name, with a reputation for science, and holding stations of honour, who have affected to discover a greater degree of depravity, and more wretchedness, at Tahiti and Raiatea, than was known in the reign and terror of idolatry; and have ventured to proclaim to the world, that christianity has here, for the first time in eighteen hundred years, had the effect of rendering the inhabitants vindictive and hateful, indolent and corrupt, superstitious and unhappy, and more pitiable, in all their circumstances, than when fully in a pagan state! and that the wars, introduced and encouraged by the MESSENGERS OF PEACE, have nearly exterminated the race!

Whence the data for such a sentiment could have been drawn, must for ever remain a mystery, at least to all who, like ourselves, have had the advantage of a personal observation in the case.

The last wars in the islands were previous to any influence gained, by the missionaries, over either chiefs or people. Since the establishment of christianity, there has been an uninterrupted peace; and as to other bloodshed, the Rev. Mr. Nott assured me, that he had not heard of a murder among the natives for fifteen years.

Theft is occasionally known, though we met with no evidence of it; and instances of secret vice and licentiousness doubtless occur; and may, when diligently sought, be found, though not honourably boasted of, by foreign visitors: but do these facts justify the assertion of a general and utter depravity? and do they forfeit the claim of the nation to the epithet, pure morals, and genuine piety, of a christian people? As well might the traveller, in visiting New York or London, because he has suffered from a thief, or discovers a haunt of debauchery, gravely state in his journal, that there is not an honest man or a virtuous woman in the United States or in Great Britain, (an assertion which I have heard made of the Society Islands;) and that the state of the one nation is worse than in the time of the druids; and of the other, than when the red man alone prowled in her forests.

Such a presentation of the state of this people can arise only from gross ignorance of their original condition, and from a very limited personal experience of the high happiness connected with the moral habits and spiritual affections of sincere piety. What were the characteristics, I would ask, not now discoverable in the islanders, to be seen when they were in a state of heathenism? Only such, as would be exhibited in connection with facts, such as the following facts to which I have, at the Sandwich Islands, when they were in a similar condition, myself been an eye-witness. A vessel would scarce have dropped her anchor, before she would have been surrounded and



boarded by crowds of hooting and shouting savages, men and women, almost, if not entirely, in the nakedness of nature, testifying their joy, in a prospect of gain from the visitor, by every variety of rude noise, and levity; and this only in prelude to a licentiousness of intercourse, extending frequently from the cabin to the fore-castle, too gross to be named; while pilfering and dishonesty in every form, filth, vermin, and disease, followed in the train. Such would be the exhibitions on ship-board; and what would be the character of those on shore?

No neatly-whitened European cottage would meet the view beneath the foliage of their groves, nor lofty temple invite the admiration of the eye, while it raised the thoughts to heaven; the hum of no thriving school would come like music on the intelligent ear, nor the hymn of devotion be heard floating on the breeze: but the putridity of a corpse, lying in cruel sacrifice before an idol of wood or stone, would direct to the altar of their gods, while the shouts and wild sounds of the song and dance, and the beating of drums, would proclaim a scene of revelry and sin.

And, could the veil be removed from all the iniquity of the system under which they dwelt, besides the terrors of superstition by which they were burdened, and the many goading evils, arising from a slavery both of mind and soul, abominations would be disclosed, against which the eye would revolt in involuntary disgust, while the shrieks of victims torn from their midnight slumbers, to be hurried to a terrific death, and the plaintive moanings of infants writhing in the agonies of dissolution beneath the murderous grasp of an inhuman parent, would

"Wake the nerve where agonies are born."

and fill the soul with a horror not readily to be forgotten!

## Sandwich Islands.

---

### LETTER XLIII.

#### ARRIVAL AT THE ISLAND OF HAWAII.

U. S. ship Vincennes, off Hawaii,  
October 2d, 1829.

AFTER a passage of eighteen days from Raiatea, including four of a dead calm, previously to taking the north-east trade-wind, yesterday afternoon, at five o'clock, "Land ho!" was called from the mast-head.

Before the call from aloft was made, my eyes had been fixed for some minutes on what I believed to be the summit of Mounakea; but I dared not assert it, lest I might be deceived: I was correct, however, though a thick haze prevented any more distinct sight of it. The south-east point, in the neighbourhood of Kearakomo, was the only part clearly in view before dark, and that at a distance of forty or fifty miles.

For the last two hours, we have been running along the coast, which momentarily increases in richness. I am happy that the ship's company thus have an opportunity of seeing this section of the country, so widely different from every thing on the leeward sides. Hawaii is, without hesitation, pronounced by them the finest and most important island we have yet seen; and evidently rich in its capacities for improvement.

We are now so near the entrance of the bay, that orders are given for two boats to be in readiness for lowering; one to carry me to the mission-house, and the other to enable the sailing-master to take a view

of the harbour, that we may have it in our power to speak from observation of its advantages and disadvantages. I must, therefore, drop my pen, only to resume it, I trust, with good news from "a far country."

---

## LETTER XLIV.

### VISIT ON SHORE, AND DESCRIPTION OF THE SCENERY.

Mission-House, at Byron's Bay,  
October 31, 1849.

You will be as much surprised, dear H——, at the place of my present date, as I am at the opportunity I enjoy of making it. When I wrote yesterday morning, I little thought of spending the night under this roof; but such I am most happy and thankful to say is the fact.

At eleven o'clock, I left the ship. A tremendous swell was setting towards the land, and it was almost as much as one's life was worth, to attempt getting into the boats, as they rose and fell, apparently ten or twelve feet, with every returning billow. We got off safely, however, and, as the sea did not break, did very well, with the exception of the long pull to the bottom of the bay. The ship was farther off the land than we thought, not less than eight or nine miles, and it was half-past twelve o'clock before we got into the harbour.

An immense thatched building, beautifully finished, on the western side of the bay, near the river of Wai-ruku, I rightly judged to be the chapel; and we steered for it, knowing that the mission-house would be found near. While still a considerable distance from the beach, I recognized Mr. Goodrich among a crowd of natives, beckoning us to the best spot for landing: shortly afterwards, our boat touched the Hawaiian shore. A thousand varied thoughts and

emotions rushed upon my mind and heart, and I was incapable of lifting up my head, lest I should betray what might be interpreted into a weakness by my companions, till I found myself in the strong grasp of a missionary friend and brother. Our meeting was the more impressive and affecting to Mr. Goodrich, from its being entirely unexpected.

After introducing my fellow-officers, a few minutes walk inland brought us to the mission-house, where I was happy to meet Mrs. Goodrich and two little daughters, in good health. Mr. Goodrich is at present without an associate.

The captain had felt it necessary to limit our stay on shore to half an hour, and consequently all was hurry and excitement. After ascertaining that all the missionaries were well, every thing in a most promising and prosperous state, and a great deal else of gratifying intelligence, we took a turn in the garden, where there is much to admire in the variety and luxuriance of the productions of this part of the islands.

Every thing, except the bread-fruit, within the enclosure, is the growth of little more than two years; yet, besides fine hedges of a native tree very similar in appearance to the mountain ash, of the *ti*, *dracæna*, damask-rose, and cape gooseberry, there are many fine coffee-plants, covered with berries of an uncommonly large size, exhibiting a vigour and rankness unequalled by any I saw at Rio de Janeiro; a fine vineyard, with vines trained into arbours; tamarind, fig, lime, lemon, orange, and mango trees, strawberries, &c. In the shrubbery, I observed the pride of Barbadoes, *cæsalpinia coriaria*, the seeds of which I believe I brought to the island, thriving finely; and by its rich blossoms of crimson and orange, imparting an air of gaiety to every thing near. The strawberry bed, too, is from seeds sent to me, and received after our return to America.

The news of my arrival spread rapidly among the people; and the house soon began to be thronged with those who had a recollection of me, but whom, principally, I had forgotten. Many of them shed tears, as they embraced and kissed my hands, or sank at my feet, manifesting a degree of sensibility and affection, considering their slight personal knowledge of me, that was surprising, till informed of the happy fact, that a period of deep seriousness and religious feeling has long existed at this place, and that many of these are still under the influence of the lively affections of recent conversion; of a conversion not only from the follies and sins of a worldly life, but from the ignorance, superstition, and prejudices of heathenism, to the love and services of true piety.

Our limited half hour was gone before we seemed to have been fifteen minutes on shore; and we felt ourselves obliged even to decline the refreshments which Mrs. Goodrich had kindly prepared, and to take a hasty leave.

After a hard row of two hours, we gained the ship; and as soon as the boats were secured, stood away, as we thought, for Maui. But the wind had already become light and baffling. A heavy swell and current were setting us within the points forming the bay, and our prospects of making much progress for the night were very uncertain: so much so, that after a moment's debate, to my surprise, but equally to my satisfaction, the captain determined upon running into the harbour, before the land-breeze should come off; and, by five o'clock, we were snugly at anchor abreast of the river and waterfall, and of course in the immediate vicinity of this place. Mr. Goodrich, perceiving our design, boarded us in his canoe, in time to point out the best anchorage for a vessel of our class.

I early took leave of the ship, to spend the even

ing and night on shore, and kept my friends from their rest long beyond their accustomed hour. •

As is almost invariably the case in this district, heavy showers of rain fell during the latter part of the night and morning, and every thing without became so perfectly drenched, that I was kept within doors till a late hour. I felt no disposition, however, to complain of the cause, for the pattering of the rain on the thatch of the roof and sides of the house, proved a lullaby so soothing, as to make my repose of the kind that

“delight<sup>d</sup>

Above the luxury of common sleep.”

## LETTER XLV.

### A WORSHIPPING ASSEMBLY AT HIDO.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Byron's Bay,  
October 4th, 1829.

THE scenes of the sabbath have been such, dear H——, that a review of them, in my own mind, will not be an abuse of sacred time, nor will their perusal give rise to thoughts and affections unsuited to a day of God.

At an early hour of the morning, even before we had taken our breakfast on board ship, a single islander here or there, or a group of three or four, wrapped in their large mantles of various hues, might be seen winding their way among the groves fringing the bay on the east, or descending from the hills and ravine on the north, towards the chapel; and by degrees their numbers increased, till, in a short time, every path along the beach, and over the uplands, presented an almost uninterrupted procession of both sexes and of every age, all pressing to the house of God. So few canoes were round the ship yesterday, and the landing-place had been so little thronged as our boats passed to and fro, that one might have thought the district but thinly inhabited;

but now, such multitudes were seen gathering from various directions, that the exclamation, "What crowds of people! what crowds of people!" was heard from the quarter-deck to the fore-castle.

Even to myself, it was a sight of surprise: surprise, not at the magnitude of the population, but that the object for which they were evidently assembling, should bring together so great a multitude. And as my thoughts re-echoed the words "What crowds of people!" remembrances and affections of deep power came over me; and the silent musings of my heart were "What a change—what a happy change!" when at this very place, only four years ago, the known wishes and example of chiefs of high authority, the daily persuasion of teachers, added to motives of curiosity and novelty, could scarce induce a hundred of the inhabitants to give an irregular, careless, and impatient attendance on the services of the sanctuary: but now,

" Like mountain torrents pouring to the main,  
From every glen a living stream came forth;  
From every hill in crowds they hastened down,  
To worship Him, who deigns in humblest fane,  
On wildest shore, to meet th' upright in heart."

The scene, as looked on from our ship, in the stillness of a brightly-beaming sabbath morning, was well calculated, with its associations, to prepare the mind for strong impressions on a nearer view, when the conclusion of our own public worship should allow us to go on shore. Mr. Goodrich had apprised us, that he had found it expedient to hold the services of the sabbath, usually attended at all the other stations at nine o'clock in the morning, and at four in the afternoon, both in the forepart of the day, that all might have the benefit of two sermons, and still reach their abodes before nightfall: for

" Numbers dwell remote,  
And first must traverse many a weary mile,  
To reach the altar of the God they love."

And it was arranged that, on this occasion, the second service should be postponed till the officers should be at liberty to leave the ship. It was near twelve o'clock when we went on shore; the captain and first lieutenant, the purser, surgeon, several of the midshipmen, and myself. Though the services had commenced when we landed, large numbers were seen circling the doors without; but, as we afterwards found, only from the impracticability of obtaining places within. The house is an immense structure, every part of which was filled, except a small area in front of the pulpit, where seats were reserved for us, and to which we made our way in slow and tedious procession, from the difficulty of finding a spot to place even our footsteps without treading on limbs of the people, seated on their feet, as closely almost as they could be stowed.

As we entered, Mr. Goodrich paused in his sermon till we should be seated. I ascended the pulpit beside him, from which I had a full view of the congregation. The suspense of attention in the people was only momentary, notwithstanding the entire novelty to them of the laced coats and other appendages of naval uniform. I can scarce describe the emotions experienced, in glancing an eye over the immense number, seated so thickly on the matted floor as to seem literally one mass of heads, covering an area of more than nine thousand square feet. The sight was most striking, and soon became, not only to myself, but to some of my fellow-officers, deeply affecting.

I have gazed on many worshipping assemblies, and of every variety of character, from those formed of the high and the princely, with a splendour and pageantry of train befitting the magnificence of the cathedrals in which they bowed, to the humblest "two or three" who ever came together at a place "where prayer is wont to be made." I have listened



with delighted attention to some of the highest eloquence the pulpits of America and England of the present day can boast, and have watched with sympathetic excitement the effect produced by it, till all who heard were wrapt into an enthusiasm of high-toned feeling, at the sublimity of the theme presented. I have seen tears of conviction and of penitence flow freely as if to the breaking of the heart, under the sterner truths of the word of God; and not unfrequently, too, have witnessed, as the annunciation of "Peace; be of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven thee," has fallen on the soul, smiles of hope and joy rapidly take their place: but it was left for a worshipping assembly at Hido, the most obscure corner of these distant islands, to excite the liveliest emotions ever experienced, and leave the deepest impressions of the extent and unsearchable riches of the gospel, which I have ever known—emotions and impressions derived simply from an ocular demonstration of the power of the word of God on untutored man, which is without a parallel in existing events, if not in the records of history.

The depth of the impression arose from the irresistible conviction, that the SPIRIT OF GOD was there: it could have been nothing else. With the exception of the inferior chiefs having charge of the district, and their dependants, of two or three native members of the church and of the mission family, scarce one of the whole multitude was in other than the native dress, the *maro* and the *kihei*, the simple garments of their primitive state. In this respect, and in the attitude of sitting, the assembly was purely pagan, totally unlike those of the Society Islands already described, as unlike as to one at home. But the breathless silence, the eager attention, the half-suppressed sigh, the tear, the various feeling, sad, peaceful, joyous, discoverable in the faces of many, all spoke the presence of an invisible but omnipotent

power, the power that can alone melt and renew the heart of man, even as it alone first brought it into existence.

From the thousands present, I might select many individuals whose appearance was such as to stamp these impressions indelibly on my heart. The aspect of one, at least, I can never forget; and will attempt to describe. It was a diminutive woman, shrivelled by age till little more of her figure, with an appearance of health, was left, than skin and bone. The style of her features, however, was of the regular and more pleasing character found among the islanders, with an amiable and benignant expression, which, in connexion with an entirely whitened head, exacted from the observer a look of kindness in return. Folded in a large mantle of black tapa, she was leaning, when my eyes first fell upon her, against a pillar near the pulpit, beside which she was sitting, with her head inclined upwards, and her eyes fixed upon the preacher. There was not only a seriousness, but a deep pensiveness in her whole aspect, that riveted my attention: and as Mr. Goodrich proceeded in his discourse, more than one tear made its way down her deeply wrinkled cheeks.

I had not, in my long absence, so entirely forgotten the native language, as not to understand much that was said. After some time, this sentence was uttered: "We are all sinners, but we have a God and Saviour, who will forgive us our sins, if we ask it of him. It is our duty to pray for this to God, and he hears the prayers of ~~all~~ who approach him in sincerity." I happened, at the moment, to look again upon this object; her lips moved in the evident and almost audible repetition of the sentence. She again repeated it, as if to be certain that she heard and understood it correctly; and, as she did so, a peaceful smile spread over every feature, tears gushed rapidly from her eyes, and she hid her face in the

folds of her garment, Could I be deceived in the interpretation of this case? could I be mistaken in the causes and the nature of those varied emotions, under the circumstances in which they were beheld; and in one, of whom I had never heard, and whom I had never before seen? No, I could not: and if so, what is the language they speak? they plainly say that this poor woman, grown gray in the ignorance and varied degradation of heathenism, by "the lamp let down from heaven" sees herself to be a sinner, and is oppressed to sadness under a sense of her guilt. But she hears of pardon and salvation, freely given, to all who will freely receive; hears of the glorious liberty of the gospel, and of all the rich privileges it confers, even to high access and intimate communion with the Father of spirits; hears—and believes, and sinks before her God in tears of gratitude and of joy.

The simple appearance and every deportment of that obscure congregation, whom I had once known, and at no remote period, only as a set of rude, licentious, and wild pagans, did more to rivet the conviction of the divine origin of the Bible, and of the holy influences by which it is accompanied to the hearts of men, than all the arguments, and apologies, and defences of Christianity I ever read.

Towards evening, Mr. Stribling and myself went again on shore, and remained till late, learning from our missionary friends the most gratifying intelligence, in corroboration of the opinion formed, in the morning, of the state of the people. An entire moral reformation has taken place in the vicinity of this station. Though lately established, and long far behind others in success and interest, it bids fair, now, to be not a whit behind the very chiefest in its moral and religious achievements. Instruction of every kind is eagerly and universally sought; and only last week, not less than ten thousand people

were assembled at an examination of schools. The mission-house is daily crowded with earnest inquirers in every right way ; evil customs and atrocious vices are abandoned ; a strict outward conformity to good morals observed ; and numbers, it is hoped and confidently believed, have yielded, and are yielding, themselves to all the charities and affections of genuine piety. From many an humble dwelling, now,

" Is daily heard  
The voice of prayer and praise to Jacob's God ;  
And many a heart in secret heaves the sigh  
To Him who hears well pleased the sigh contrite.

Even in the hut of the child-murderer,

" The father, with his offspring dear,  
Now bends the knee to God, and humbly asks  
'That he would bless them with a parent's love—  
With heavenly manna feed their hungry souls,  
And on their hearts, as Hermon's dew, descend."

## LETTER XLVI.

### JOURNEY TO THE VOLCANO OF KIRAUUA, AND AN ACCOUNT OF ITS PRESENT STATE.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Byron's Bay,  
October 9th, 1829.

THE planning of a trip to the volcano at the base of the mountain Mounaroa, thirty-five miles inland from this harbour, was a first subject of attention, after being safely moored on Friday. A party, of which you will not be surprised to hear that I made one, was immediately formed ; and Maaro, the head man of the district, engaged to furnish us with twenty stout men, of whom John Honorii was to be manager, to carry our provisions and luggage.

Accordingly, early on Monday morning, we were found in all the bustle of a hasty preparation for the excursion ; and, after a general overhauling of wardrobes for old hats, old coats, and old clothes of every description, except old shoes, exhibited, on

mustering on the quarter-deck, after breakfast, a party in costume as appropriate to a pedestrian journey at Hawaii, as at variance with the prescribed dress of the service on board ship.

By nine o'clock, we were all stowed in the first cutter, which was to take us to Maaro's house, at the fish-ponds, to meet the men hired of him; and, shortly after, well pleased to be off, we waved farewell to those who, reluctantly, stayed behind,

“ to walk the deck,

“ And guard the ship from foe or wreck.”

We soon, however, met with a damper to our buoyancy, in a genuine Hido shower, which detained us a long time at Maaro's; and, by filling every thing in our way with water, effectually rendered the precaution we had taken against the morning wetness of the grass and bushes, in determining not to start till after breakfast, of no avail. Before eleven o'clock, all again was brightness; and, after seeing our various luggage distributed among the islanders, we set off. The whole route is so minutely, and, from second observation, I can confidently add, so correctly, described in the published account of our residence in this nation, that, in place of repetition, with the privilege of an author, I will say—see “Stewart, on the Sandwich Islands.”

We accomplished fourteen miles just after four o'clock; and finding excellent accommodations for the night, at that distance, determined to sleep before proceeding farther.

Here we were quickly made sensible, that the improvements and advancement of the people are not limited to the sea-ports or to the coast. The house of Kinai was divided into separate rooms by screens of native cloth and mats, furnishing distinct sleeping places for the inmates, besides one large and airy apartment, evidently kept as a better and principal room.

Our party in general, hailed with most pleasure a fine lounge, or divan, eight or ten feet in width, extending the whole length of the apartment. It was composed of a great number of thicknesses of mats, on a platform of wood, elevated about two feet from the floor; and, surrounded by curtains of neat furniture chintz, afforded a couch for the whole of our number, which we might have coveted under circumstances of much less fatigue.

Indeed, the comfort of the accommodations, a refreshing cup of tea and a substantial supper, the novelty of every thing around, freedom from the confinement of the vessel, and, with it, from the tedium of the night-watch, &c., gave such a flow to the lively spirits of some of our younger companions, as to make it a late hour before we were composed to quietude and to sleep.

The smoke ascending from the volcano was discerned next day at a much greater distance, ten or twelve miles, than on my former visit, and was so massive in its columns as to promise a high state of action.

Our arrival was more sudden than I had expected it to be. I had been looking for some more abrupt descent than any we had yet made, and was straining my eyes into the vast body of thick and heated smoke, rising high to heaven, and spreading widely over the whole hemisphere to the south, for at least a glimpse of the tremendous gulf from whence it issued, when, scarce without warning, we found ourselves entering heavy currents of steam, rising rapidly from crevices and deep fissures about our path, and extending, at intervals, on one side, to the smoke from the crater, and, on the other, to a low precipice flanking our right. This, on turning towards it, was seen itself, in many places, even to its very top, to smoke like a coal-kiln. The whole surface of the level on which we were, a plain a mile in length and half a mile in breadth, enclosed on the edge of the

crater by a sweep of the precipice, exhibited, in a greater or less degree, the same evidences of widespread subterranean burnings.

The trade-wind blew freshly, and swept the dense steam and highly-heated air, bursting from the ground, in strong currents and whirling eddies across our path; and, at the same time, bore before it above, a thick and gloomy scud from the sea, flying so low as to brush swiftly through the trees on the top of the precipice, and, at times, to be scarce above our heads. Every thing wore a foreboding and saddening aspect: and, whatever I felt I had lost in a clear and distant view, like that enjoyed when with Lord Byron, the sight of the hut which was to be our sleeping-place, still far ahead, and, seemingly, in the midst of these admonitory signs of a dangerous substratum, gave rise to a sense of exposure, and to apprehensions, not experienced on the former occasion.

The rude lodge we were to occupy, open in front, and only slightly thatched on the side next the wind, stands two or three hundred yards from the edge of the crater on the north end, but does not command a view below; we therefore scarce stopped at it, but, with impatient eagerness, hurried to the brink. It was, however, only to meet with disappointment: the smoke, in the whole chasm, was so dense as to be utterly impenetrable; a flickering flame, here and there, was only occasionally to be seen through its thickness; and, now and then, a sudden flash sending an illuminated column high towards the summit. Still the sight was deeply impressive. It was evident that the perpendicular depth, from our very footsteps down, was tremendous, and seemingly unfathomable; and the obscure outline of the upper edges, sweeping off on either hand, till lost to the eye in the smoke, gave an impression of awful immensity, disposing one to shrink back from the proximity already adventured.

Another cause of disappointment was the absence of those terrific noises which, on my first visit, were constantly bursting upon the ear: now, scarce a sound was to be heard, except the rushing of the wind, as it swept over the edges of the cliffs to the more rarefied atmosphere within, now and then, as a lull or eddy of the wind rendered the hearing from that direction more distinct, the hiss of escaping steam, and something like the summer and the bubbling of a mighty cauldron, mingled with the distant sound of a surf rolling on a pebbly beach.

There was, in this assemblage of images, in the lowery sky and driving wind, in the riven and steaming ground, in the heavy masses of smoke rising from the hideous chasm beneath, as if from a bottomless pit, and in the oppressive and saddening sounds occasionally coming to the ear, that which was well suited to the recollection of years gone by, and of friends afar, who had once shared with me in the enthusiasm of high-wrought admiration, excited by the same object; and in the indulgence of

“a mood of mind we all have known,”

thus induced by circumstances and by scene, I lingered on the brink till completely chilled by the increasing coolness and dampness of the breeze.

The rude hut, or rather screen against the wind, consisting of poles propt in a slanting position, and covered on one side only with a few leaves of the sugar-cane, and bushes slightly placed upon them, we thought, for a time, very comfortable, and wisely fixed as to temperature; being on a spot of ground of such grateful heat, compared with the rawness of the mountain air, as to lead us to congratulate ourselves in the advantage it afforded, as we sat on our various packages in front, and partook of an evening repast, within a foot of a crevice from which steam issued, of such power as to cook our potatoes in a short time without the aid of fire. But when we



came to take possession of the mats strewn inside of it; for beds, we found ourselves in quarters considerably hotter than those in which Coleman, the poet, puts his lodger over the bake-shop. You will scarce believe that we all slept on a temperature of  $120^{\circ}$  Fahrenheit; but such is the fact: and it was well the air above was as low as  $56^{\circ}$  or  $60^{\circ}$ ; so that, by frequent turnings, we could let one side cool, and thus preserve, in a degree, an equilibrium of temperature. There was no alternative, however; it was the only shelter, and, as there were dashes of rain through the night, it would have been almost death to have slept in the open air on any cooler bed. We, therefore, made the best of our necessity: and in spite of forebodings, from one part of our bower or another, that we should be steamed to skeletons before morning, we made out a tolerable night's rest; and were quite in good humour with our dormitory, to find, on rising, that the continued vapour-bath had dissipated, almost entirely, the stiffness of limb which most of us had suffered from the length and rapidity of our walk.

I rose at midnight, and went to the crater. The steam from above was still driving, in thick volumes, over the cliffs, and, with the smoke from below, rendered every thing obscure; but various seats of fire, in tremendous action, sent up flashes of light through the dimness, to the highest clouds, and, at times, converted the whole body of smoke into one lurid mass. Some of the spots, apparently most liquid and most agitated, were immediately below the place where I stood; and, now and then, fiery streams in them, circling widely and swiftly in different directions, glared on the eye. But as these exhibitions were but fitful and obscure, compared with what I had on a former occasion beheld, and the wind bleak and piercing, I was glad to make a hasty and shivering return to the warmth of my couch.

The morning was bright and beautiful, affording

us, with a sky as purely blue as any ever looked on, splendid views in purple of Mounaroa, seemingly close at hand, and of Mounakea far behind us in the distance. I was at the crater again, before sunrise; and followed its brink a half mile and more, westward, with an opportunity of distinguishing, for the first time, its characteristic features. But the light of the day had extinguished the fires where, in the night, the principal action had been; nothing could now be discerned but smoking lakes, or black cones, tipped with pale sulphureous flames.

Abundance of delightful strawberries were found, principally in an open meadow-like place, skirting a wood of noble trees of the eugenia and acacia.

Soon after breakfast we began to prepare for a descent below, and, before long, were all marshalled and equipped with long canes, water-flasks, &c., for the undertaking. Directly in front of our sleeping place, and entirely round the western side, the descent to the ledge, or offset, is a perpendicular wall of nine hundred feet; we, therefore, went some quarter or half mile to the east, by the direction of our attendants, many of whom had, within the last two or three years, been here, with several successive parties. On coming to the path leading down, I was quite surprised to find the commencement of it so different from that of my former descent. Indeed, I did not know, till then, that any part within the upper circumference presented such an aspect; at a single view affording the most conclusive proof of the kind of process going on, in the undermining of the surrounding mountain; and of the manner in which the enormous fires beneath are fed, when old masses of matter upon which they have been acting become utterly reduced to scoria and ashes.

After an almost perpendicular descent of eighty or a hundred feet, in accomplishing which, we at times hung from rock to rock, the path led to an extent of

ground, half a mile in length and a quarter broad, broken into abrupt hills and deep glens, and covered with grass, shrubbery, and small trees. The whole declines gradually several hundred feet towards the crater, and constitutes a little valley, separated from it by a succession of barren hills of volcanic rock and sand. It had evidently been shattered into its present forms, and sunk from the level above, at no very remote period, in some convulsion, after its foundations had been sapped by the element still raging beneath. And it is not improbable that, even now, the whole is suspended on some comparatively slender base, till another throe shall open for it a descent into a fiery abyss, to be converted, in its turn, into a mass of liquid fire.

The scenery here was strikingly unique and romantic; consisting, above and behind us, of the bare and perpendicular face of rocks, from which this section had been rent as it came down; and of a succession of miniature mountains and ravines, thrown into every wild form, and still beautifully verdant with various growth. The path winding over and through these, though plain, and seemingly safe, is, in truth, the most dangerous that I have met in the whole region. In many places the bushes and grass skirting it, either partially or entirely conceal the most horrible pits and fissures, into which, almost without knowing it, a single false step, or a slip, might plunge one, to be heard of no more. In several instances, when least dreaming of danger, I have come upon some of these, with a suddenness and want of caution, that have made my blood curdle, as I ventured a gaze into their yawning and unfathomable mouths. Once, in particular, the first intimation I had of being near any thing of the kind, was the heat against my face, of the steam issuing from it; my feet being already on the very brink: it was sufficiently large to admit the stoutest man entire; of a depth to which the eye

could not reach; and filled with vapour scalding hot! To have fallen into it must have been instant and irrecoverable destruction. In another place, the path led over a crack, to all appearance without bottom, several feet in width, and extending on either hand as far as we could distinguish, by a single narrow arch of a foot's breadth only, in the manner of a natural bridge, from which to have stepped would have been for eternity!

After traversing this singular glen, we found ourselves still four or five hundred feet above the ledge, within the crater; and the descent to it very abrupt and difficult, from the hardness and smoothness of the lava of which chiefly it is constituted. In many places, large streams of no very ancient date since they cooled and hardened in their running form, marked the sides of the cliff; and by a principal one of these, resembling a cascade still pouring down the face of the hill, most of our party, in slow and necessarily cautious progress, reached the offset, or natural gallery, running round the chasm.

Here the changes that have taken place since 1825 first became striking. The general features were much the same; but almost every spot, when looked upon in detail, shows evidence of new and tremendous action of fire, and of convulsion after convulsion, that must have shaken every thing far and wide. The greatest alteration, however, is that of which I had been apprized, the filling up of the whole surface below the ledge, at least two hundred feet. The depth below this was estimated by Lord Byron's party at five hundred feet; at present it cannot, on an average, be more than two hundred. Many of the highest of the cones have thus been much reduced in their loftiness, and many have entirely disappeared. In all other respects, the general surface and aspect is the same; though there is much more fire in the north end than formerly, and the very route we took

in crossing the bottom, at that time, is now a chain of liquid lakes from one side to the other.

My first walk on the ledge was westward, the same direction I went when with Lord Byron; but I had not proceeded half the length of the northern side, before the way was interrupted by a sulphur cone, which has risen on the ledge, and which was surrounded by such a suffocating vapour as to prevent passing. I therefore returned to my companions, who were busily employed in gathering curious specimens of a variety of kinds, till I should return to accompany them down the remaining distance to the bottom.

By the rising of the lava, the difficulty of making the descent is in a great degree removed, in those places where it was ever practicable; and it occupied but a few moments to go down. The surface is more broken and distorted than ever, and presents a truly hideous mass. There being much more fire at the north end than in 1825, the currents of heated and gaseous air are more numerous, and more strongly impregnated, and, consequently, an examination more hazardous. Our number became divided into separate parties, one of which went far into the middle of the northern section, and believe themselves to have been at the very edge of the largest lake, seen in powerful action the night before.

In the course of the two or three hours we were at the bottom, we visited four cones; all the centres, of great activity in the fires. The first was almost encrusted with sulphur; and could be approached only on the windward side, from the heat and suffocating vapour in every other direction. This was only a few feet high; and we got near enough to touch the sides and top with our canes. Though smoke and steam were projecting from its top with great force and considerable noise, we perceived no flame or liquid lava; but the roaring of mighty fires below

were distinctly heard, and at a nearness that marked with temerity the adventure, that brought us within the hearing of its undulating and menacing sounds.

The eager curiosity, however, which rendered us in a degree insensible to the hazards of our situation, was afterwards more completely gratified, in a visit to two others, much more lofty and unique, and altogether more imposing in their state and aspect. They were situated a mile farther south, along the eastern side; and our attention was called to them by the loud hissing and laborious action of steam, and by the flames which occasionally flashed from their summits. They were in the neighbourhood of each other, each about twenty feet in height, not more than sixty in circumference at the base, and tapering almost to a point at the top, being in fact two immense hollow columns, formed by successive slight overflowings of lava, cooling as it rolled down, into irregular flutings, ornamented with rude drops and pendants, and long tapering stalactites.

The nearness of our approach, and the examination of these, were greatly exciting. Though the ragings beneath must have been intense, from the tremendous roar within, the irresistible force and deafening hiss with which the steam rushed from every opening, and from the flames which flashed up, followed by lava white with an intensity of heat, still the incrustation of scoria immediately around seemed firm, and was less hot than in many other places; admitting, not only of our coming close to the sides of the cones, but also of clambering some feet up them, till we could run our canes into the orifices at the top, and withdraw with their burning ends red-hot lava, on which we readily made impressions with pencil-cases and naval buttons.

Pelé did not seem well pleased with this familiarity; even the slightest touch with our sticks against the molten lava produced an increased rush and roar

from below, with an angry spitting of the fiery matter high in the air around us ; and, more than once, we retreated hastily to a more respectful distance, anticipating, from the ill-natured mutterings and menacing struggles of her ladyship, to see a burning stream roll forth, to put an effectual barrier to such close inspection.

So much of novelty, so much of fearful sublimity attracts the attention, and calls for admiration, on every side, that day after day, in place of a single morning, would be insufficient to exhaust the points of interest in this grand object ; and we regretted the necessity that hunger, thirst, and fatigue imposed upon us, of taking leave of the depths to which we had descended.

The ascent to our cabin, by the same path we came, was toilsome in the extreme ; and, but for the refreshment derived from the whortle-berries, after having surmounted the first cliffs, we should have been almost entirely overcome.

The first evening of our arrival from the bay, while standing on the edge of the crater, a sudden blast of wind brushed from my head a Leghorn hat, which I had worn to shield my face by its broad rim from the sun, and in an instant swept it out of sight over the precipice, as was then supposed, beyond all recovery. But, while at dinner, after having reached the hut, we were alarmed by the running of one of the natives from the crater, calling, in great agitation, for a rope, which had been used in lashing our provision chest ; and on hastily demanding what was the matter, learned that an islander, when below in the morning, had caught a glimpse of it, lodged on the face of the precipice over which it had been blown, some hundred or more feet below the summit ; and that, on coming up, he had gone over the brink, and by a most frightful effort had succeeded in gaining possession of it. After making his way back, however, till within some

twenty or thirty feet of the top, he found it impossible to get farther; and was then standing on a single projecting stone, in danger every moment of losing his hold, and of being precipitated to instant destruction, down a wall-faced cliff of at least nine hundred feet!

We shuddered at the bare thought of what the catastrophe might be. In a few moments, however, we had the happiness to perceive, from the general movement and appearance of his companions, that the attempt at rescue had been successful; and, shortly after, pale as death, trembling like an aspen leaf, and covered with a cold sweat, he came, and laid the old Leghorn at my feet!

The hat was not worth a moment of anxiety; much less the exposure undergone; and, while I rewarded the intrepidity of the young man, I felt disposed to reprove the daring rashness that led to the exhibition of it. None but the kindest and most disinterested motives induced the attempt.

At night, after some hours of sound sleep, I awoke, and, perceiving the smoke and clouds over the volcano to be splendidly illuminated, hastened with a glass to a point of observation. A very sensible change had taken place, in the liveliness of the seats of fire, in the vividness of the flashings of light, and in the sharpness and force of the sounds from various parts. I had been seated about ten minutes, fixing the field of the telescope on one and another of the cones, and on the lakes and rivers of bright lava, with great delight, when a sudden hissing and mingling of confused sounds, accompanied by a brilliant glare of flames almost directly beneath me, attracted my attention, and led me to direct the glass to the spot. In doing this, I was presented with a spectacle which even imagination itself can scarcely rival.

The power of the glass was such as to bring the scene seemingly within touching distance, and to



make me involuntarily recoil from the apparent proximity to which I was brought by it. A lake, a half mile or more in circumference, and probably but just unclosed, was raging in all the tumult of a tempest at sea. At first, the agitation was perpendicular precisely that of a boiling cauldron, tossing up masses of the red-hot matter, in a bubbling action, fifteen and twenty feet, with a rapidity of motion equal to that of the most heated boiler. Then came a long regular motion from the south, heaving before it a fiery surf, whose billows rose, and crested, and broke in sheets and spray of fire, like heavy billows sweeping over a reef to the shore ! The effect was almost too fearful to be gazed on ; and, for a moment, in forgetfulness of the distance and safety of my situation, as billow after billow rose higher and higher, and seemed ready to dash over me, with an exclamation of horror, I dropped the glass, and closed my eyes upon the sight.

I would have run for my fellow-travellers, but feared, that, before they could be roused, and would reach the spot, the aspect of the scene might be entirely altered. This, indeed, would have been the case ; for, in less than fifteen minutes, the agitation had entirely ceased ; and the surface soon became less bright and fiery than that of many other spots. I waited a long time, hoping to see it renewed, but in vain : and then returned to my couch under an excitement of varied emotion, admiration, awe, and deep humility, before the majesty and power of the Almighty in his works, never before experienced ; and repaid a hundred-fold, by the scene, for all the fatigue and exposure of the journey.

In the nearness and distinctness of the view, and in the clear perception of the form, character, and power of the action, it far surpassed any thing beheld on the nights I was there in 1825, though the general exhibitions at that period were far more

beautiful, and less obscured by smoke, than during this visit.

Early on Thursday morning, our encampment was in the bustle of preparation for a return to the bay; and breakfast was finished, and our long procession formed, by half past six o'clock. The weather did not promise much in our favour: the clouds were low and scudding, every thing wore rather a gloomy aspect, and we had scarce accomplished three miles, before it began to rain, and in a short time we found ourselves in a perfect storm.

Each one seemed to think, that the sooner he brought his own precious body under cover, the better; and we made short work of the walk to the residence of Kinai, the petty chieftain of Ora. We were there by twelve o'clock; and found his establishment tenfold more welcome than before. All of us were drenched with rain, and in a state greatly to relish the luxury of a large fire, and a change of clothes, which our portmanteaus afforded. We should have remained here all night, had there been no rain; and therefore the storm, instead of being an annoyance, rather added to the cheerfulness of our spirits, when screened from its power.

We were off early again in the morning; and after a very fatiguing walk, from the wetness of the path, and the excessively bad state in which we found the road through the wood, reached Maaro's about noon, and were safely on board the Vincennes in time for a dinner. Thus, dear H——, you have the outline of a second excursion to the habitation of Pele.

## LETTER XLVII.

### CASCADE OF THE RAINBOW.

U.S. Ship Vincennes, Byron's Bay,  
October 10th, 1829.

We were to have sailed for Oahu, at 4 o'clock this morning; but before our anchors were on the bows,

the land breeze died away, and it became necessary to drop them again. All hands were kept on board till after dinner, in the hope that we might still be able to get out of the harbour: but then, there being little prospect of this for the day, Captain Finch allowed a party to go on shore, to be recalled in case of a change of wind, by the firing of a gun, and the hoisting of a flag at the foremast head.

I did not regret the detention. There is one object worthy of notice in the vicinity of the bay, which I had not previously an opportunity of visiting—a waterfall in the Wairuku, two or three miles above its mouth, called by the natives, “*ke Wai Anue nue*,” “the cascade of the rainbow,” from the beautiful exhibition of that phenomenon on the spray, created by it whenever the sun is unshaded.

Mr. Goodrich had dined with us, and became the guide to this spot of our party. We landed at the mouth of the Wairuku, on the wild rocks forming its precipitous banks. This place has been a favourite resort of our gentlemen; and the untiring feats of the islanders, in throwing themselves from some of the highest of the adjoining cliffs, thirty, forty, and fifty feet, into the basins below, and in gliding down the falls above the watering-place, at the seeming hazard of being dashed to death, have daily afforded them great amusement.

In many places the bed of the river is deep, apparently unfathomable; and, at such parts especially, the embankments are bold and abrupt, forty, sixty, and a hundred feet high, and generally perpendicular.

The principal object of our ramble surpassed, in novelty and beauty, every anticipation. It is decidedly superior, in the variety of its points of interest, to any other of the kind I have ever seen. The projection of water is one hundred and ten feet in height; and the offset causing it, in the view had

from below<sup>a</sup>, appears a natural bridge, spanning the basin into which the water is poured in one broad arch, resting on either side upon massive abutments of basaltic rock. The arch, however, instead of being open entirely through, is the entrance of a deep recess or cavern, into the darkness and gloom of which the sight can scarce penetrate.

The basin beneath, a perfect circle of some hundred yards diameter, is as placid as a lake, except where the stream plunges into it from above, and completely walled in, save at a single narrow outlet, by precipices of rock a hundred and fifty feet or more high, richly covered with moss, fern, and shrubbery. An insulated, pyramidal peak, at the base of which we stood, rises directly opposite to the cascade; its formation, like that of the arch, being almost precisely that of the Giant's Causeway, possessing the same distinctive characteristics in form, and in regularity of arrangement.

There is another waterfall in the Wairuku, still farther inland, which Mr. Goodrich thinks cannot be less than three hundred feet in height. Indeed, the numerous streams furrowing this section of Hawaii, from the mountains to the shore, are filled with them; and the whole may appropriately be styled "the region of cascades."

We returned to the bay by a different path from that by which we went up. It led us directly to a range of three old craters, in the rear of the mission-house, and half a mile from it. The highest and largest is that next the bay; and, when viewed from the water, partially conceals the others. Its truncated summit, a half mile in circumference, rises three or four hundred feet above the adjoining ground, and is now in every part perfectly covered with turf. The sides of the rims next the sea are, in all of them, the lowest; and show plainly that, when in action, they disorged themselves in that direction. Mr.

Goodrich has encircled the largest with a broad deep ditch, and converted it into a pastorage for his cattle, and for the horses of some of the chiefs, which have been sent to Hido for keeping.

The tops of the craters command fine views of the surrounding country; especially of the bay, in its entire outline—from the blue and peaceful waters of which, the Vincennes was now seen to rise, loftily and beautifully, with her long pennant and broad banner gleaming brightly in the setting sun.

## LETTER XLVIII.

### THE HEREDITARY AND LAST PRIESTESS OF PELE.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Byron's Bay,  
October 12th, 1829.

ON our return from the cascade of the Rainbow, Mr. Stribling and myself called at the mission house, and were unexpectedly gratified by an interview with the hereditary and last priestess of Pele.

In speaking of the volcano, Mr. Goodrich incidentally remarked, that this individual was now residing in the immediate neighbourhood; and, at our suggestion, sent a messenger to invite her over. She almost immediately came, attended by her household, consisting of eight or ten individuals, male and female. I should judge her to be forty or forty-five years of age; a tall, finely-formed majestic woman, wrapped in a large black mantle of native cloth. We were much impressed with her appearance, as she entered at the head of her train, and, after receiving our salutations, became seated on a mat in the centre of the apartment.

The priestess is now a firm believer in christianity, and is one of the most attentive pupils of the station, at which, entirely for the benefit of instruction, she has become permanently established. Her convictions of the folly and wickedness of her former

vocation is such, that she is reluctant to converse much upon it. Her father was the hereditary kahu, or steward, as she was the priestess of Pelé. The duty of the kahu was to provide the materials for the general sacrifices, the food and raiment of the supposititious deity; to grow the taro, potatoes, and sugar-cane, and the cloth-plant from which the garments for her were made; to provide the hogs and fowls, &c., and to have all things in readiness for the offerings, at the appointed seasons.

Of the plantations sacred to this use, one was on the sea-shore, and another within the precincts of the crater, in the broken ground, described as that upon which we first came in descending from our hut on our late visit. The kahu and his family resided, part of the time, on the coast, and part in the neighbourhood of the crater.

At the time of sacrifice, the priestess herself descended into the depths of the volcano, and, approaching the place most accessible and most active with fire, cast upon it the gifts, with the exclamation, "Here, Pelé, is food for you," specifying the article or articles; "and here is cloth," mentioning its name and varieties. In answer to the question, whether she was not afraid of the fire which she approached? she said, No, for she then believed that the goddess would defend her from harm; but that now, when she knew that there was no such being as Pelé, she should be afraid to go to places where she once did without apprehension, lest she might perish in her temerity.

Such, dear H——, have been the rapid and happy triumphs of christianity, over the but lately deep-rooted heathenism of this country, and thus have the shades of superstition and error been dispersed by the mild light of the gospel. Even those who have grown old in the performance of the most favourite rites of idolatry, and who held unbounded

influence and distinguished rank from their office, have discarded the whole system ; and, conscious of their ignorance and their guilt, are found meekly sitting at the feet of the High-priest of salvation, to be instructed and redeemed by him.

The inhabitants of this section of Hawaii, as I have before remarked, are among the most primitive and rude of the islanders ; still, they are no longer a pagan population, but, from every observation that our ship's company have been able to make, strictly and most conspicuously a christian people. The description I have given of a sabbath here, will convey some idea of the manner in which that and other external observances of christianity are regarded. To it I may add, what I then omitted, that not a canoe, unless it might have been some one or two bringing their proprietors to church, was seen upon the water, nor a single instance observed of labour or amusement. Forty of our crew had liberty on shore on the afternoon of that day ; and the report I overheard one and another of them giving to their fellows, was in itself sufficient to satisfy me of the utter change which had been accomplished in the whole character of the people. So punctilious were the inhabitants in their regard for the sabbath, that the seamen sought in vain to purchase any thing whatever. Not even a water-melon or a banana could be obtained, except as a gift of hospitality. No rude crowd gathered round, as they sauntered from place to place. The men treated them with civility when they came to their houses ; but the women, universally, with such distance, by withdrawing from the places where they were, and by seeking security in the bosoms of their families from any familiarity that might have been offered, that no one, so far as I can learn, has it in his power to report, that he met with a single instance of licentiousness at Byron's Bay.

The force of this evidence of reformation will be best understood by those who have known what the character of the intercourse of shipping with its inhabitants, as well as those of every other part of the Sandwich Islands, even within a few years, has been ; and, by such, it will be acknowledged as one which the most sanguine believers in the success of the mission never expected to find, so early as the year 1829.

## LETTER XLIX.

### FIRST INTERVIEW WITH THE MISSIONARIES AT OAHU.

U. S. Ship Vincennes. Roads of Honolulu,  
October 13th, 1829.

YESTERDAY morning at four o'clock, we weighed anchor in Byron's Bay, and bore away for Oahu, some two hundred miles distant.

We made the eastern end of Maui sometime before dark ; while the nigher parts of Mounakea were still distinctly in sight, and, from their loftiness and the rich deep blue of their shades, seemingly still near. Most of our gentlemen have felt disposed to question the estimate, that has generally been made, of the loftiness of this mountain ; but, as we left it yesterday, the more distant we became from it, the more evident it was to all, that, whether 18,000 feet or not above the level of the sea, it must be, and is, immensely high.

I went up at six o'clock this morning. We were then far past the channel separating it from Morokai, and were rapidly approaching that between this island and Oahu. At seven o'clock, when off the north end of Morokai, we descried one of the headlands of Oahu in the neighbourhood of Diamond Hill, rising dimly, like a conical islet, from the water.



Our approach after this was very rapid ; and, in the course of a couple of hours, the whole of the eastern side came in view.

We reached Diamond Point before noon ; and in passing it, as the groves and wide-spreading plantations of Waititi, and the valleys and mountains behind them, came upon the eye, followed by the long plain of Honolulu, the port itself adjoining, and the distant country beyond, to the range of mountains far in the west, the same marks of dearth which we had before observed were seen stamped on the whole coast ; and so different was the entire face of the country, in this respect, from every former appearance, that I could scarce believe it, the rich and beautiful Oahu, which all visitors have considered the most pleasant and fertile of the islands, and been accustomed to call the garden of the group.

We dropped anchor at twelve o'clock, in a range with three or four ships in the roads, just as Adams, the pilot, boarded us ; and were, at the same time, about announcing our arrival by a salute, when informed by him, that the commander of the fort, and all the chiefs, were some miles in the country, and that it could not be answered immediately. It was, therefore, postponed, till arrangements on the subject should be made with the proper authorities.

As soon as a boat could be lowered, Lieutenant Dornin and myself were on our way to the shore : he, to apprise the American consul of Captain Finch's arrival ; and I, to meet the embraces of our friends. We were two miles off ; and, before reaching the entrance of the harbour, saw a boat approaching, in which I recognized Mr. Jones, the consul. Mr. Dornin having a packet for him, we lay on our oars, and spoke her. Mr. French, an American merchant, and Mr. Charlton, his Britannic majesty's consul, were also in the boat. After an interchange of civilities, and the delivery of the package, we resumed

our course, and entered the harbour, filled with ships, (whalers, merchantmen, &c., and the native craft,) and exhibiting every appearance of a busy and thriving port. Several stone quays are now built at different places, along that which was only a sand-beach when we left. We landed at one of these, opposite the American consulate, and immediately directed our way towards the mission-house.

There are very considerable changes in the appearance of the town near the water, and very great improvements. The coral platform, along the walls of the fort and adjoining point, which, on our arrival in 1823, was the court-end of the metropolis, is now converted to a more appropriate use—that of a dock-yard, and kind of depôt for naval stores. At least, so I judged, from seeing one or two small vessels on the stocks there, and many others undergoing repairs, a large, two-story storehouse of stone, &c. The neat wooden building erected at the same place by the regent Kaahumanu, and occupied, as you recollect, by Lord Byron during his visit, has been removed into the town, on the level ground, some distance from the water, near Mr. Jones'; and, fitted with green blinds, a flagstaff, and look-out, stands a conspicuous object, both from the water and on shore, as the "Blonde Hotel," owned by Governor Boki. Besides this, there are many other well-built European-looking structures. Among, them a storehouse and office of Mr. Charlton, near the water, at the corner of the fort next the town; and a very large and convenient establishment, consisting of warehouse, shop, counting room, and other apartments, belonging to Mr. French. Indeed, every appearance indicates an advance in the importance and business of the place.

The arrival of ships seems now so much an every day occurrence, as scarce to attract attention, except among the gentleman in business; and when

we landed, the name and character of the Vincennes were not yet generally known on shore.

My first call I felt due to Mr. and Mrs. Bingham; and, therefore, made my way to the door of the old wooden house opening into the rooms they occupy. From Mrs. Bingham's exclamation, in an inner apartment, on hearing my voice, and Mr. Bingham's hurried entrance, I ascertained that we had taken them by entire surprise; which Mrs. Judd verified, as she rushed into the room from an adjoining part of the house. You, my dear H——, can better imagine what my feelings, and what theirs were, for a time, than I describe them. There was a mingling of pain with the fulness of our joy, which, perhaps, all have experienced in meeting those they love, after a long separation; and for which Cowper well accounts, when he resolves it into a necessity, interwoven with our natures and our condition, that no earthly happiness shall be without its alloy.

After an hour or two spent with my friends, I prepared to return on board ship. Mr. Bingham would have accompanied me to call on Captain Finch and my fellow-officers, but it was late, the ship three miles distant, and the captain had sent to ask of him the favour of a translation into the Hawaiian language of the President's letter, and some remarks of his own in an address to the king, to be in readiness for an audience with the government, as soon as the necessary arrangements could be made. On my way to the town, I called on Mrs. Chamberlain and Mrs. Shepherd, who live in a couple of neat stone cottages, near the printing-office; and on Mrs. Clark, Mrs. Ruggles, and Mrs. Green, at Mr. Ellis's house. Mr. Green is at present on the north-west coast of America, on an exploring visit among the natives there. I reached the ship just before dark; and, thus, have at once furnished you with an account of my first day at Oahu

## LETTER L.

RECEPTION OF CAPTAIN FINCH AND PARTY, BY  
THE KING AND REGENT.U. S. Ship Vincennes, Port of Honolulu,  
October 15th, 1829.

At daybreak, yesterday, we fired a gun for the pilot, and the boats of the shipping at present here; and were towed into the harbour during the calm of the morning; and, before breakfast, safely moored in an open and pleasant birth.

At the request of the captain I went early on shore, to learn from Mr. Jones the arrangements made for the firing of a salute, and the reception of himself and officers by the king and chiefs. And having ascertained that the salute would be expected and returned at twelve o'clock, and the audience held directly after, I went to the mission-house to apprise Mr. Bingham of the necessity of his being prepared with the translations at that time; and, also, to deliver an invitation from Captain Finch to such of the missionaries as might have it in their power to attend, to be at the palace at the hour appointed. Mr. Jones had been requested to present the compliments of the captain, in like manner, to the residents and visitors of respectability in port, and to invite their presence on the occasion.

At twelve o'clock we fired twenty-one guns, the established national salute here, and, soon afterward, Capt. Finch, attended by as large a number of the officers as could be spared from necessary duty, left the ship. All were in full dress; and we pulled away, in a handsome procession of four boats, while the guns of the fort were still answering those of the Vincennes. The last of these had just been fired, as the captain's gig approached the moorings of the Tamchameha, the king's finest vessel, which is kept in naval order, in the centre of the port, with a long

pennant, banner, and jack flying. Much to our surprise, she commenced a salute, in compliment to the captain's landing; which brought us to our "oars," as the technical phrase is, and obliged the Vincennes, as a matter of course, to return gun for gun, according to established etiquette, making, in all, eighty-four; whose bellows had echoed far and wide, in little more than twenty minutes. Our landing, consequently, was attended, at least, with noise enough.

We disembarked in front of the consulate, where we were expected to take a glass of wine, before Mr Jones should conduct us to the palace. Here all the residents and visitors of respectability, including the British consul and several other English gentlemen, were assembled; and, after a general introduction, a few moments' conversation, and some refreshment, a messenger announced the readiness of his majesty Kauikeaouli, or Tamēhameha III., to receive us; and we formed a procession, led by the captain, with the consuls on either side.

The king's establishment, but lately erected, is quite in the outskirts of the town, having the open plain towards Punchbowl Hill immediately in the rear. In going to it, we consequently passed through a principal part of the village. A noisy rabble, such as no part of the island but Honolulu would now present, lined our way on both sides nearly the whole distance; large numbers of whom, running ahead through the dusty streets, in order to take an additional view after our whole number had passed once by them, made no little annoyance, in addition to the heat of a noonday sun, by the dirt they raised, notwithstanding the attendance of police officers, here and there, to keep them from pressing too closely upon us. The limits to which they could accompany us, however, were before long pointed out by a large white gate, the entrance to the

grounds of the royal residence, at the end of a street we were following; beyond which, none but our party were allowed to pass.

As we entered the square, in which the king's house stands, the royal guard were seen under arms, beside the palace, at the gate we were to pass, in double file of a hundred men each; the whole being in a complete uniform of white, with cuffs and collars of scarlet, and black caps. The captain, our old friend Kahuhu, was at their head, in a handsome dress of scarlet, with gold lacings, and expensive sword. As Captain Finch passed, they presented arms, in a style perfectly *en militaire*: and at the same time, Kekuanoa, now styled the general, from being at the head of the military forces, appeared at the gate, in the full and rich suit of a major-general, and, with the polish of a gentleman, received the captain from the consuls, and ushered him through a folding-door of glass into the interior.

Mr. Jones had said to me, that the king's house was a very beautiful building, the most so of any that had ever been erected at the islands; but scarce any thing that could have been told of it, as a structure in the native style, would have prepared me for the *coup d'œil*, as we passed the threshold.

The whole is one apartment, spacious, light, lofty, and truly elegant. All the timbers in sight, the numerous posts, rafters, and centre pillars, are of a fine, substantial size, and of a dark hard wood, hewn with the nicest regularity. The lashings of sinnit, made of the fibres of the cocoa-nut bleached white, are put on with such neatness, and wrought into so beautiful a pattern, at close and regular intervals, as to give to the posts and rafters the appearance of being divided into natural sections by them, and to produce, by the whiteness and nice workmanship of the braid, in contrast with the colours of the wood, an effect striking and highly ornamental.

But that which most attracted my admiration in the building, is an improvement, a device of native ingenuity, of which, I was told, we then saw the first specimen, and which gives to the interior a finish as beautiful, as appropriate to such an edifice. It is a lining between the timbers and the thatch, screening entirely from sight the grass of which the external covering is composed, and which always gave an air of rudeness, and a barn-yard look, even to the handsomest and best finished of their former establishments. The manufacture is from a small round mountain vine, of a rich chestnut colour, tied horizontally, stem upon stem, as closely as possible, in the manner, and probably in imitation, of the painted window-blinds of split bamboo brought from the East Indies, once much in fashion, and still occasionally seen, in the United States.

The whole of the inside; from the floor to the peak of the roof, a height of at least forty feet, is covered with this, seemingly in one piece; imparting, by the beauty of the colour and entire effect, an air of peculiar richness to the room.

The floor is also a novelty, and an experiment here; consisting, in place of the ground strewn with rushes or grass, as a foundation for the mats, as was formerly the case, of a pavement of stone and mortar, spread with a cement of lime, having all the smoothness and hardness of marble. Upon this, beautifully variegated mats of tauai were spread, forming a carpet as delightful, and appropriate to the climate, as could have been selected. Large windows on either side, and the folding-doors of glass at each end, are hung with draperies of crimson damask; besides which, and the mats on the floors, the furniture consists of handsome pier-tables and large mirrors; on a line of glass chandeliers suspended through the centre, with lustres and candelabra of bronze, ornamented *or-molu*, affixed to the pillars.

lining the sides and ends of the apartment; and of portraits in oil of the late king and queen, taken in London, placed at the upper end, in carved frames richly gilt.

Such, dear H——, is the reception-room<sup>†</sup> of his majesty of Hawaii, in 1829. Contrasted with the one into which you were received in 1823, in those days considered highly respectable and elegant, and with that in which Lord Byron and suite were ushered in 1825, the difference is equal almost to the improvements that would take place in a century in the abodes of royalty in most other countries, and greater than that which now exists between the new and the old rooms in Windsor castle. I do not fear being thought extravagant in saying, that this palace of KAUIKEAOULI would, even in the royal park, form a rustic pavilion, in which his majesty of England might occasionally lounge, not only with comfort but with delight.

But as there are no ante-rooms, I am keeping you a long time in *the presence*, without an approach to the throne. In the middle of the room, about sixty feet in front, or two-thirds the length of the apartment, the young monarch was seated in an arm-chair, spread with a splendid cloak of yellow feathers. His dress was the Windsor uniform, of the first rank, with epaulettes of gold, the present of George IV., and an under-dress of white, with silk stockings and pumps. On a sofa, immediately on his right, were Kaahumanu, the regent, and the two ex-queens, Kinau, at present the wife of General Kekuanaoa, and Kekauruohē. Governor and Madame Boki had not arrived from the country, and the only other chiefs in the room were those of inferior rank, holding different offices in the establishment of the king, and who, in military dresses, stood in *household* style, at intervals of some yards against the walls.



A range of chairs swept off on either side from the king and chiefs, in a circle towards the entrance, for the accommodation of our party; and at the foot of the row on the left hand, were Mr. Bingham, Mr. and Mrs. Ruggles, Mr. and Mrs. Chamberlain, Dr. and Mrs. Judd, Mrs. Green, Miss Ward, Mr. Clark, and Mr. Shepherd, of the mission.

The introduction, by Mr. Jones, took place in the order of rank. I did not need the civility, and only regretted that a first meeting with those in whom I feel so deep an interest, should be on a formal and public occasion. Our greetings, however, were most cordial, as I passed them in my order in the train; and were renewed again and again, on their part, as soon as the courtesy due to my companions as strangers, allowed them to direct their attention to me. This ceremony with the chieftains over, the captain and officers crossed the room to the missionaries to interchange salutations with them, when we became seated for business; the captain on the left of the king, the consuls next, with the gentlemen of the Vincennes and mission family, on one side, and the merchants, visitors, residents, &c., to the number of thirty or forty, on the other.

Captain Finch having chosen to avail himself of Mr. Bingham's services as interpreter, requested him to take a seat at his side, and then rising, read to the king the following address:—

“ KING TAMEHAMEHA,

“ The President of the United States has confided to my care a written communication for yourself, and such counsellors as you rely upon, accompanying it with various presents for each, in testimony of the good opinion he entertains of you individually, and to evince his desire for amity and confidence, in all intercourse that may subsist between your people and my countrymen.

“ That the genuineness of the letter may not be questioned, which might have been the case, if the transmission had been entrusted to casual conveyance, and to make it the

more honourable to yourself, he has despatched a ship of war for this and other purposes; and it is enjoined upon me as the commander, to deliver it in person into your keeping, to reiterate the expressions of good-will which it contains, and to exhibit, by my own deportment, the sincerity of the motives which has actuated him.

"The friendly and kind reception afforded by your government to one other of our national ships, the Peacock, has been most favourably represented by her commander, and doubtless has conduced greatly to the visit which I now make.

"The improved state of your people has also been so interestingly described by one of your friends, the Rev. Mr. Stewart, now beside me, as to awaken among my countrymen at large, great benevolence of feeling towards you; and it will be my study, and I trust I shall be warranted on my return among them, to strengthen their prepossessions in your favour, and to confirm the accounts of the good traits of the character of our new acquaintances, the islanders subject to your authority.

"With your leave, I will now acquit myself of the pleasing duty devolving upon me, by reading and handing the document adverted to, which illustrates the light in which the President wishes to hold your nation; and upon which you will, I hope, ponder often, deliberately, and fully.

"The presents I also ask permission to distribute amongst those of your faithful friends for whom they are intended, trusting that they will tend to the enlargement of knowledge, invite to social and rational enjoyments, and further secure enduring recollections of the assurances which I give of the disinterested friendship of the President and government of the United States.

"W. C. B. FINCH."

"October 14th, 1829."

Mr. Bingham having read a translation of this in the Hawaiian tongue, Captain Finch proceeded in the perusal of the document from the government:—

"TO TANEHAMEHA III. KING OF THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

"Navy Department of the United States of America, City of Washington, 20th January, A.D. 1829.

"By the approbation and direction of the President of the United States, I address you this letter, and send it by the hands of Captain William Compton Bolton Finch, an officer in our navy, commanding the ship of war Vincennes.

“ Captain Finch also bears to you, from the President, certain small tokens of regard for yourself, and the chiefs who are near to you, and is commanded to express to you, in his name, the anxious desire which he feels for your prosperity and advancement in the arts of civilized life, and for the cultivation of harmony and good-will between your nation and the people of the United States. He has heard, with interest and admiration, of the rapid progress which has been made by your people in acquiring a knowledge of letters and of the true religion—the religion of the Christian’s Bible. These are the best, and the only means, by which the prosperity and happiness of nations can be advanced and continued ; and the President, and all men every where who wish well to yourself and your people, earnestly hope that you will continue to cultivate them, and to protect and encourage those by whom they are brought to you.

“ The President also anxiously hopes, that peace, and kindness, and justice, will prevail between your people and those citizens of the United States who visit your islands, and that the regulations of your government will be such as to enforce them upon all.

“ Our citizens who violate your laws, or interfere with your regulations, violate at the same time their duty to their own government and country, and merit censure and punishment. We have heard with pain, that this has sometimes been the case, and we have sought to know and to punish those who are guilty. Captain Finch is commanded diligently to inquire into the conduct of our citizens whom he may find at the islands, and, as far as he has the authority, to ensure proper conduct and deportment from them.

“ The President hopes, however, that there are very few who so act as to deserve censure or punishment, and, for all others, he solicits the kindness and protection of your government, that their interests may be promoted, and every facility given to them in the transaction of their business. Among others, he bespeaks your favour to those who have taken up their residence with you, to promote the cause of religion and learning in your islands. He does not doubt that their motives are pure, and their objects most friendly to the happiness of your people, and that they will so conduct themselves as to merit the protecting kindness of your government.

“ One of their number, the Rev. C. S. Stewart, who resided for some time with you, has received the favour of his government in an appointment to an office of religion in our navy, and will visit you in company with Captain Finch.

"The President salutes you with respect, and wishes you peace, happiness, and prosperity.

[L. S.]

"SAM'L. L. SOUTHARD,

"Secretary to the Navy."

This also was immediately made intelligible to the king and chiefs, by a translation in the native language, read by Mr. Bingham.

Both documents were listened to with intense interest. I never before saw Kaahumanu more excited. She seemed scarce able to command her feelings, and, before Mr. Southard's letter was finished, her eyes were filled with tears. "*Maitai—maitai no!*" "Good—good indeed!" uttered with the quick tone in which he usually speaks when pleased, was the hasty comment of the king, while the females re-echoed the approbation, "*Maitai no—maitai no!*"

Both papers were then placed by the captain in the hands of the king, who received them with a more formal expression of his satisfaction, by saying, that himself and chiefs were highly favoured by such a communication, and acknowledged his obligations to Captain Finch as the bearer of it, and for the kind sentiments with which it had been delivered. The servants having charge of the presents were now called, and these placed before the king. A pair of globes, celestial and terrestrial, and a large map of the United States, for himself; a silver vase, inscribed with the arms of the United States, and her name, for the regent; two silver goblets, with inscriptions of a similar character, for the princess; and two large maps of the world, one for Governor Boki, and the other for Governor Adams.

The kind acceptance of these led to a renewal of the sentiments of good-will previously manifested on the part of the captain; in the midst of which, Governor Boki, accompanied by Manuia, captain of the fort, in a riding suit, with cap and whip in hand, made his appearance. He had just dismounted, and

apologized for the lateness of his arrival, and undress, by saying, that both himself and Madam Boki were ill when summoned to the palace, and the latter still too unwell to come to town. After a moment's conversation with him, the king invited the captain and officers to a glass of wine, and led the way to a side-table, handsomely laid with a superb set of cut-glass, stained and ornamented with cameos in white, on large trays of silver plate. This movement broke up the formality of the seated circle, and various familiar groups were formed in different parts of the room, engaged in easy and pleasant conversation.

TAMEHAMEHA III., or, as more generally styled, KAUIKEAOULI, instead of the little boy you knew in 1825, is now a fine stout young man of sixteen, as graceful, well-bred, and perfectly gentleman-like in his whole deportment, as any lad of his age in the most polished circles of our country. I was highly gratified with the dignity and propriety of his demeanour; and still more so, to learn that his private character is as unexceptionable, as his public appearance is manly, and becoming the station he occupies.

At the end of an hour we took our leave, much pleased with the whole entertainment; the guards, still on post, presenting arms again as we passed. The officers expressed themselves astonished at the reception, and seemed half disposed to charge me with having deceived them, in the representations I had made of the state of advancement among the people. On disavowing this, and expressing the surprise I had myself experienced, notwithstanding my knowledge of their state only four years ago, they replied, that the truth then must be, which is unquestionably the fact, that the reports given of the people by the missionaries, and by visitors, have by no means kept pace with the rapid strides making

by them, in the various departments of civilization and refinement.

## LETTER LI.

### A MORNING VISIT TO THE PRINCIPAL CHIEFS.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Port of Honolulu,  
October 16th, 1829

ON leaving the palace yesterday, Captain Finch and myself, accompanied by Mr. Jones, called on the ladies of the British consul's family, and on those of the mission, and took dinner afterwards at the American consulate.

The usual weekly prayer-meeting of the mission family occurred in the evening. Lieutenant Stribling and myself attended, and, in the participation of its elevating and happy influences, in the midst of those who we, dear H——, must ever regard in a peculiar manner as our sisters and our brothers, in joining in their praises and their prayers, in receiving their affectionate christian salutations, and in imparting to them such encouragement and exhortation as I could present from the land of their fathers, and the churches of their special love, I enjoyed one of those seasons of christian communion and sympathy, which cheers and animates the heart with a power above the charm of ordinary intercourse.

Early after the introduction to the government, Captain Finch received the following note, in the native language, from the regent.

“CAPTAIN FINCH,

“I am made joyful by your arrival here, with good counsel for us. Now, if you desire it, there is the house of two stories built by my brother, Karaimoku; it is quite at your service, for your accommodation to lodge on shore.

“The house is not very good—we are not very well furnished; but I am happy to show you hospitality and kindness.

“ELIZABETH KAAHUMANU.”

• Oahu, October 15th, 1829.”

The house referred to, is the large stone residence erected by Karaimoku, during the visit of the royal party in England. Since his death, it has remained unoccupied, and is unfurnished, which explains the apology at the close of the communication. I subjoin the answer.

TO ELIZABETH KAAHUMANU.

“ REGENT,

“ Your letter is very gratifying to me, and I give you thanks for it.

“ I would accept the house which you offer, as a residence during my short stay here, but it has not been my custom to live outside of the walls of my vessel.

“ Mr. Jones, our consul, has already offered me a suitable apartment, but I declined accepting it.

“ I value this proof of your desire to extend hospitality to me, quite as much as if I actually enjoyed it.

“ I sincerely desire your welfare; and am happy in having been the herald of advice which you esteem good for you.

“ Let what my government has said to you, engage your deepest attention—honest motives have dictated the language it has used.

“ May you be always happy.

“ W. C. B. FINCH.”

“ U. S. Ship Vincennes, Honolulu,  
October 16th, 1849.”

After this reply had been despatched this morning, I accompanied Captain Finch in an informal call on the principal chiefs at their respective residences.

“ We landed at eleven o'clock; and, following the street towards the mission houses, made our visits according to the order of dwellings, without reference to the relative rank of the occupants. The first enclosure we came to is that of Kekuanaoa. Like that of the king, it is large and neatly kept, differing entirely, in this respect, from the state in which the precincts of their habitations were once seen. The general was walking in front of one of the buildings; and, on perceiving us, hastened himself to point out the entrance, and open the gate.

We had approached the rear, as was discovered, instead of the front of his establishment; and to reach the principal apartment, or rather house, (for every room is a distinct building,) were conducted by him first through that which, from a spread table and sideboard, evidently was a dining-hall; and then through another with accommodations for sleeping. I by no means regretted this, however, when I perceived the perfect neatness, good taste, and keeping of each. Had I entered them by accident, without knowing to whom they belonged, I should not have thought of being in the residence of a native, but, from the finish of every part, and from the furniture, in that of some foreign gentleman.

The sitting-room is delightful. A large door at each end opens a fine draft for the air: the floor was beautifully carpeted with mats; while, in the centre, stood a rich couch of yellow damask, with armed chairs placed on either side, so that those occupying them enjoyed all the benefit of the breeze sweeping through. On one side, a native lounge or divan extended the whole length of the apartment. A pier table covered with a rich cloth, a large mirror, and a portrait of Manuia, completed the furniture on this side. On that opposite, a curtain or screen of handsome chintz, looped up a foot or two at the bottom, partially disclosed, as it waved with the wind, the *boudoir* of Madam Kekuanaoa, a principal article of its furniture being an elegant writing table, with papers and books in the language of the country. From this she appeared to have risen, as we entered the farther door. Her dress, manner, and whole deportment in receiving us, were those of a lady. A neatly bound copy of the Gospel of Luke, in the Hawaiian version, the first I had seen, was found lying on the sofa, with a blank book, in which she had been writing.

The captain was exceedingly pleased with this



specimen of private life; and, for some time, could scarce say any thing, but in admiration of the whole establishment, and in gratulation to our friends, at the comparative luxury of comfort in which they were living. After much pleasant conversation, which I was enabled, with the assistance of Kekuanaoa's English, to interpret, and a glass of wine politely handed by the master of the house himself, for not a common native was within hearing, a change which you can scarce credit, when you think of the dirty idle throng formerly ever swarming about the houses and visitors of the chiefs; we took leave, saying, that we intended continuing our calls among their compeers. On hearing this, they both exclaimed, "*ka-kou pu*," "all of us together;" and we proceeded a few rods farther, to the house of Kekauruoha the ex-queen, and her husband Kanaina.

Having visited these individuals, and saying that we were going still farther to the regent's, the whole company joined us; and we proceeded to her residence.

Every thing, here, was not less pleasant and interesting than at the other houses, though there was more of the air of an old lady's mansion. An easy chair, and low old-fashioned sofa, both covered with chintz, were conspicuous articles of furniture; and two young chiefs, a girl and a boy, the children of Kekuanaoa, hanging about her, like spoiled pets on a fond grandmama at home.

The old queen herself was in high good humour. The children, like all present, were dressed in European style. Two female servants only, were in attendance.

Much lively and agreeable conversation took place; principally, on our part, in congratulating them on their advancement in the true sources of enjoyment; and on theirs, in expressing their happiness in our visit, and in the kind advice received from our

government and from Captain Finch. I know not when I have myself been more highly delighted, or more affectingly impressed, with the changes which have taken place here, and are still rapidly going on. In a single circle now before me, I beheld five of the highest chiefs of the islands—those whom I had myself known as naked, debauched heathen, not only addicted to vice, but glorying in their shame—respectably dressed; demeaning themselves with all the propriety and courteousness of civilized society; modest and decorous in all their actions; pure and intelligent in their conversation; and surrounded, in the furniture and accommodations of their dwellings, not merely by the comforts, but also by many of the elegances of an advanced state of improvement; and this, most evidently, not for the exhibition of an hour, but in proof of their present ordinary mode of life. In view of the magnitude and extent of the change, I could but inwardly exclaim, especially as I looked on Kaahumanu, who for fifty-three years lived and hardened in all the grossness of paganism, a debauchee in private character, a terrific despot in her public rule—Surely it is a truth, that “the eyes of these have been opened, and they turned from darkness unto light, and from the power of Satan unto God!”

Scarcely any thing in the contrast, passing in my mind, struck me more forcibly than that connected with the appearance of the children. In place of being utterly unclothed, as would have been the case ten, and even five years ago, left entirely to the management of a rude train of attendants, and screaming with terror at the approach or look of any civilized being, we beheld them neatly and elegantly clad, differing from children at home only in their colour, and receiving not only the fondness of their parents and relatives, but courting, by the cleanliness of their whole persons and every appearance, the caresses of the captain and myself.

Here also we were offered refreshments, at a side-board spread with cake, wine, &c. On completing our visit, we went to the printing-office, where native workmen were busily engaged in setting type, and in working the press.

## LETTER LII.

### EVENING DRIVE, AND VISIT TO THE VALLEY OF MANOA.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Port of Honolulu,  
October 18th, 1829.

Two evenings since, Mr. Bingham gave Lieutenant Stribling and myself a drive as far as Allen's, on the plain. It was at a delightful hour of the day; and, as most of the gentry were taking the air, we had an opportunity of judging of the degree of improvement, in point of equipage, &c. made at the metropolis. The vehicle in which we rode is the property of the mission; but, in place of the ox-cart and porter's barrow of former years, in both of which I remember you, my dear H—, had occasionally the honour of a seat; it is a light-painted wagon, of the kind called Dearborn in America, drawn by a good horse, affording a comfortable, and, for this part of the world, a respectable conveyance. Several of these, belonging to the chiefs and residents, were seen at different points of the road, besides numbers of horsemen, both foreigners and natives, genteelly equipt; among the latter of whom, we recognized the General, and his brother-in-law, Kanaina?

The American consul has a country seat on the plain toward Manoa; and a principal equipage met by us, belongs to him. It was built at Oahu, and is rather a nondescript, something between a New England pedlar's wagon, and a coach early after "the birth-day of invention" in that luxury. It is constructed almost exclusively of wood, with Vene-

tian blinds in place of curtains; is swung low, and has a wooden boot in the centre, for the feet, descending almost to the ground. With wheels and carriage of red, body of sky-blue, and a red box high in front for a native driver, it makes no inconsiderable display, as it rumbles over the plain. It was drawn by one horse, and contained two or three gentlemen, one of whom I perceived to be our captain.

Shortly afterwards, a gig without a top, very similar in its style and finish to the preceding, except in something of a tilbury height, and apparently of the same manufacture, was seen dashing at full speed up the street. It contained two gaily-dressed females in opera hats, with streamers of satin flying far behind; the one on the right bearing the reins, and occasionally flourishing a whip, with all the tact of a leader of the ton, figuring in curricule or phaeton on a more distinguished drive. As they whirled past, I recognized, in their light complexions and broad faces, the sisters, . . . and Mrs. M . . .—The variety was still kept up, in the appearance, behind these, of four fashionables on horseback.

To the picture thus presented in single figures and in groupings, add one or two handsome and well-finished gigs, such as are driven by the wealthiest gentlemen in our country; and in the scene you will perceive, I think, in contrast with the recollection of by-gone years, evidences of a *march of body*, if not of “the march of mind.”

## LETTER LIII.

### EDICT OF THE KING IN ANSWER TO A MEMORIAL OF THE BRITISH RESIDENTS.

U. S. Ship *Vincennes*, Port of Honolulu,  
October 19th, 1829.

THE degree of civilization to which the chiefs and many of the islanders have attained, and the increasing importance of this group as a place of commerce,

as a maritime depôt, and a resort for repairs and refreshment by whaling ships and other vessels traversing the Pacific, seem to render it both important and desirable that a monthly or other periodical newspaper in the Hawaiian and English languages should be published at this port.

It has been necessary, on several occasions, for two or three years past, to resort to printed handbills as a substitute for something of this character; and the demand for these by the king and chiefs is such, and the material for a useful publication so abundant, that were it possible for any of the missionaries, at present, to find time for the superintendence of it, the world would speedily be furnished with a "HAWAIIAN HERALD AND SANDWICH ISLAND REGISTER." Captain Finch and several of the officers in the Vincennes have joined me in strong recommendations for such a paper.

A first order of the king and regent, after the audience on the 14th, was for printing, in handbills, the address of Captain Finch and the letter of the President, to be circulated among the nobles of the land, and the more intelligent of the people. This has been done; and several copies politely sent, by the king, to Captain Finch and his officers. It had been preceded only a few days, by a document published, in like manner, by royal authority. This was an edict, addressed by the government to the foreign residents; and being the first official proclamation ever made by the chiefs to this class of dwellers in the land, is worthy of preservation. Every syllable of it is of unaided and unadvised native composition, and requires some preliminary explanations to make its meaning and force perfectly intelligible.

Foreign residents of every grade, with few exceptions, have ever denied the right of judicature over them to the government of the islands; and have tenaciously held the new political doctrine, that the

laws of the country in which they dwell, are for their protection, and not their obedience. And not only this, but I believe I am warranted by facts in saying, that in general they have been decidedly opposed to the establishment of all defined public laws, even for the government of the native subjects themselves, under a pretence that, if laws were formed, they would be made by the missionaries ; but in reality, I fear, because they wished the whole nation to remain lawless, upon all points not affecting the interests of their own property or persons.

The abolition of idolatry, and adoption of the christian religion, the consequent change in the whole condition of the people, the introduction of new customs and formation of new habits, the dissemination of letters and truth, and the establishment of the press, have rendered new and wholesome laws not only desirable, but absolutely necessary. The most intelligent and influential of recent visitors at the islands have seen this necessity, and have urged upon the government the importance of enacting and enforcing laws conformable to the light and knowledge they now possess.

So early as the summer of 1825, Lord Byron, during his visit in H. B. M. ship *Blonde*, at a general council of the chiefs, convened principally for the purpose of acknowledging the right of the present king to the throne, and of appointing a regency during the minority, took occasion to submit to them a brief schedule of civil polity adapted to their new state, and a set of maritime regulations in reference to foreign shipping frequenting the port. The last were put into immediate operation, to the abrogation of others, more unequal and exorbitant, previously existing.

The suggestions of this nobleman, however, referred rather to the form of government, and the respective and relative rights of the king, chiefs, and people,

and to the tenure of lands, &c., than to a criminal or municipal code; and towards the close of the same year, an attempt was made, by the regents and their associates, to lay a foundation for laws affecting these points. This was by a public discussion of the precepts of the Decalogue, as presenting the highest principles of moral and social action, at a council then convened; with the design of publishing the ten commandments without any penal obligations to their obedience, preparatory to the promulgation of specific laws founded upon them. Some of the missionaries had been invited by the regents, Karaimoku and Kaahumanu, to be present; on information of which among the residents, a party of leading individuals from their number violently and riotously interrupted the council, with such menaces and threats against the members of the mission, even to the taking of life, that the chiefs were utterly intimidated, and for the time relinquished their purpose.

Two years afterwards, however, in December 1827, notwithstanding that the opposition of foreigners in general to the establishment of all legislative restraint on vice had continued to increase, rather than to diminish, the king and chiefs, in a general council, determined on the promulgation of laws against murder, theft, and adultery; the first to be punishable with death, and the other two with imprisonment in irons.

The proclamation of these, with their respective penalties, was first made by the king in person, supported by the regent Kaahumanu, by governor Boki, and all the high chiefs, in a grove of cocoa-nut trees near the sea-shore, to an immense throng of the people, and many foreigners. They were immediately reduced to printing, by the authority of the government, and extensively circulated in handbills. Shortly after, an addition was made to the code, of others against gambling, drunkenness, prostitution, a profanation of the sabbath by improper amuse-

ments or labour, and against cohabitation, where the persons did not regard themselves as husband and wife.

These historical data will enable you fully to understand the first part of an edict. A detail of a different character is necessary, to throw light on the second and third sections.

It is an ancient and established custom of the country, that any animal breaking through the fence or enclosure of a plantation, and injuring the crop contained in it, becomes forfeited to the possessor of the premises. In most cases, however, a restoration to the original owner takes place, either with or without a small compensation for the injury sustained.

A British resident, whose dwelling and gardens are in the immediate vicinity of a crowded population, chose, as appears on the face of the edict, without having given to the natives around any notice of his intention, to shoot every animal of his neighbours, whether fowl, pig, or goat, making its way into his grounds. This arbitrary proceeding, so different from the general usage among themselves, offended and exasperated the islanders; and, on this point, the gentleman became obnoxious to their ill-will and resentment.

The large plain skirting the coast eastward of Honolulu is a common, for the pasturage of all the horses, neat cattle, &c. in the vicinity, belonging either to the natives or foreigners. Open in one part to the beautiful and productive valley of Manao, the plantations bordering it there are exposed to depredations from the flocks and herds left grazing at night; and it has been publicly ordered, and is customary, to have them secured in yards, by their owners, every evening. Mr.——, the gentleman alluded to, neglected this injunction, though specially requested to attend to it; and a fine milch cow of his herd, becoming troublesome and destruct-



ive to one of the plantations, was caught and detained by the planter, with the intention of securing damages for the spoliation of his crop. On hearing this, Mr. — became exceedingly angry; and in going to the man for the release of the animal, instead of offering a remuneration for the injury sustained, reproved him for the seizure in violent and threatening terms.

The result was, that the cow, making another inroad on the same premises, was shot by the farmer; but escaped from the enclosure to the common, before she fell and died.

This fact was soon reported to Mr. —; and, joined by an American of equal rank, he mounted his horse, and riding immediately to Manao, without reporting the case to the king, or any of the chiefs, or recognizing their authority to investigate the conduct and punish the offences of their own subjects, seized the farmer, and, pinioning his arms, tied a halter round his neck, and on horseback dragged the native behind him three miles to the town.

The speed at which the gentleman rode was such, that the islander, after running till entirely exhausted, fell, and was hauled along the ground till greatly bruised; so much so, it is said, as to have several ribs injured, besides being much excoriated, and till the cord round his neck was strangling him. An islander at hand, perceiving this, had the resolution to run and cut the rope with a knife, in the fear that, unless immediately relieved, he would die. On reaching Honolulu, he was, by the order of these gentlemen, put in irons, and thrust into the fort, the usual place of confinement, where he still remains, too ill to be removed.

These facts have been related to me precisely as stated by various natives, both chiefs and common people; some of them eye-witnesses of the whole transaction, and one, the individual who cut the

cord, to save the life of the prisoner. A public meeting of the English residents was soon called, of which Mr. Charlton, the British consul, was appointed chairman. Affecting to consider their property, and even their lives, no longer in safety at the islands, it was resolved that a memorial, signed by the whole number, should be presented by their consul to the king, expressive of their fears, and appealing to the government for protection.

A document of this character was accordingly drawn up, and formally laid before the king, through Governor Boki, as secretary of state, with a request that the answer might be carefully prepared, as it was to be transmitted to his Britannic majesty's minister for foreign affairs, in London.

The king immediately called a council; and the following answer was written, and delivered to Mr. Charlton; a copy, at the same time, being sent to the mission-press, with a request that it should be printed in a handbill, both in the English and native language.

The memorialists were so little satisfied with the edict, that they denounced the most violent threats against its publication. The excitement on the subject was such, that gentlemen who have ever been most friendly to the missionaries and their object, and the constant defenders of their characters, earnestly advised that the document should not be printed, lest unhappy consequences might result. But no satisfactory reason for disobliging the king and government, by refusing to print, being presented, it was determined to hazard any ill consequences which might befall them in the exercise of their just rights; and they committed it to the press.

Furnished thus with its history, you will find some interest in a perusal of the article. The following is a literal translation, printed on the same sheet with the original in the Hawaiian language.

(TRANSLATION.)

These are the names of the King of the Islands,  
and the Chiefs in Council.

KAUKEAOULI, the King. KAAHUMANU, Regent. BOKI, Governor of Oahu. ADAMS KUAKINI, Governor of Hawaii. MANUIA, KEKUANAOA, HINAE, AIKANAKA, PAKI, KINAU, JOHN II, JAMES KAHUHU.

"Oahu, October 7, 1829.

"I. This is my decision for you. We assent to the request of the English residents; we grant the protection of the laws: that is the sum of your petition.

"This, therefore, is my proclamation, which I make known to you, all people from foreign countries:—The laws of my country prohibit murder, theft, adultery, prostitution, retailing ardent spirits at houses for selling spirits, amusements on the sabbath-day, gambling and betting on the sabbath-day, and at all times.

"If any man shall transgress any of these laws, he is liable to the penalty; the same for every foreigner; and for the people of these islands; whoever shall violate these laws shall be punished.

"This, also, I make known—The law of the great God of heaven, that is the great thing by which we shall promote peace; let all men who remain here obey it.

"Christian marriage is proper for men and women. But if a woman regard a man as her only husband, and the man regard the woman as his only wife, they are legally husband and wife; but if the parties are not married, nor regard themselves as husband and wife, let them be forthwith entirely separate.

"II. This is also our decision, which I now declare to you. We have seen your wickedness heretofore. You did not warn us that your dooryards and enclosed plantations were tabu, before the time when our animals went into your enclosures: you unhesitatingly killed our animals. But we warned you of the tabu of our plantations before the time when the animals came into them, even yours; and then it was told again to you that have cattle; but, for some days past, we have known your cattle to come in to eat up what we had planted: on that account some of your cattle are dead.

"This, then, is the way to obtain justice: If you judged the man guilty, you are not forthwith to punish him; wait till we have a consultation first: then, had we judged him guilty, we would have given you damages: but, no, you rashly and suddenly injured the man: that is one of the crimes of two of you. And we state to you all, that the

wounding of a beast is by no means equal to the wounding of a man, inasmuch as man is chief over all the beasts.

"This is our communication to you all, ye parents from the countries whence originate the winds : have compassion on a nation of little children, very small and young, who are yet in mental darkness, and help us to do right, and follow with us that which will be for the best good of this our country.

"III. As to the recent death of the cow ; she died for breaking a tabu for the protection of the plantation. The place was defended also by a fence built by the owner of the plantation. Having secured his field by a fence, what remained to be done was the duty of the owners of cattle, who were told, by him who had charge of the plantation, to bring home their cattle at evening. He did tell them so ; but they did not regard it : and in the night they came in, but not by day. On that account the owner of the plantation hoped to recover damage ; for many were the cattle that were taken up before, but no damage was recovered for the crop they had devoured ; the owners plead them off without paying damage ; therefore he to whom belonged the crop, determined that one of the cattle should die for destroying the crop : for it had been said that if any of the cattle should come into the enclosure, devouring the crop, such cattle would be forfeited, and become the property of the owner of the crop. Many have been seized, but they were begged off, and given up again : this has been done many times. Why then are you so quick to be angry ? For, within the enclosure was the place where the cow was wounded, after which she made her way out. What, then, means your declaration that the cow was wantonly shot in the common ? The cow would not have been killed for simply grazing in the common pasture ; her feeding upon the cultivated crop was well known by those who had the care of the plantation.

(Signed.)

"KAUIKEAOULI."

## LETTER LIV.

### VISIT AT LAHAÏNA, IN MAUI.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Byron's Bay,  
October 28th, 1829

As you will readily believe, the accomplishment of an early visit to Lahaina was a first thought, after the arrival of our ship at the islands. The Vincennes was not expected to go to the windward again ; and, hearing of no immediate opportunity of making the

voyage, I determined, early after the official interview with the king and chiefs, to express my wishes to the regent.

I accordingly called at her residence for this purpose, the second morning we were in the harbour. After a lively and, on her part, quite facetious conversation, I mentioned the object of my call, on which she immediately said, that her own pilot-boat, the fastest sailer among the vessels of the government, should be immediately at my command, to go to Maui, and to return at my pleasure.—The morning of the 19th was fixed for sailing; and the captain, in addition to a leave of absence for ten days to myself, having given permission for four gentlemen of the steerage to join me, I had the pleasure of the company of Midshipmen Irving, Hunt, Bissell, and Anthony.

By twelve o'clock, on the 20th, we were in full view of Lahaina, and soon after dropped anchor inside of eight or ten whale ships; and, in a few minutes, I was in the embrace of those bound to us by ties never to be forgotten or dissolved. You, at least, dear H——, can more readily imagine, than I describe, the character of a first interview with Mr. and Mrs. Richards, and the nature of our feelings; and can enter into the warmth of my thanksgiving, as I beheld them sitting in health and prosperity, “beneath their own vine and fig-tree, with none to make them afraid,” on the very spot where, four years before, I had parted from them under circumstances of peculiar danger and sorrow.

My reception by the chiefs, the governor, and his wife, the princess, &c., and by numbers of our former parishioners and special friends, was most warm-hearted and affecting, many of them bathing my hands with tears as they pressed them to their hearts and lips, while many “lifted up their voices and wept aloud.” As the news of my arrival spread

rapidly through the district, "*Aroha—aroha Mita Tuata!—aroha maitai! aroha roa Mita Tuata!*"—"Love, love to you, Mr. Stewart! the best love! the strongest love to you, Mr. Stewart!" echoed on every side where I appeared.

You, my dear H——, were far from being forgotten; and, with our little household, shared fully in every demonstration of remembrance and affection. "*Aroha Mita Tuata-Vahine, aroha Kali, aroha Harieta a me Beke!*"—"Love to Mrs. Stewart, love to Charles, love to Harriet, together with Betsey," (Stockton,) with an occasional substitution of the native names of the children, Hoapiri and Tamehamaru, invariably followed their greetings to myself. Betsey Stockton is held in grateful recollection, both by the chiefs and common people. It was under her immediate auspices and instruction, as you know, that the first school among the farmers and their families in Lahaina was established, at the close of the year 1824. Schools of the kind are almost as extensive now as the population, not only of Lahaina, but of Maui itself, with its dependancies, Ranai and Morotai. Several individuals, composing the original number of her scholars, have become pious; and several are among the best qualified and efficient of the native instructors.

The attachment of the natives of every class, indeed, to the institutions established among them, is now exceedingly great; and their gratitude and love to those who have been the means of securing such blessings to them, seemingly unbounded. All apparently regard Mr. Richards as their best friend and benefactor; and himself and Mrs. Richards feel that they, their family, and associates, are dwelling in the bosom of a population, who would shrink from no sacrifice to support, comfort, and defend them. Peace, order, gratitude, and external good morals alone, now characterize the settlement; and in every aspect and

development of character, the inhabitants of Lahaina are decidedly and interestingly a christian people.

The example of building in stone and mortar, introduced by the missionaries, was early imitated by the islanders; and, besides the mission-house, there are now several dwellings erected along the beach, in the same style, and almost equally respectable in their appearance and finish. One, not yet entirely completed, belongs to the princess, and another to Maaro, the secretary of Hoapiri, governor of Maui, and an assistant of Mr. Richards in the translation of the scriptures.

The entire plan of the house was projected, the building raised and finished, with the exception of the sashes of the windows, and similar delicate work, by Maaro himself, and the native assistance he could command; and will long remain a monument of his ingenuity and persevering industry. Our party visited him several times; and when examining the construction and arrangement of his cottage, the furniture and good keeping of the whole, connected with the dress and appearance of himself and wife, we could scarce believe ourselves in the dwelling, listening to the conversation and partaking of the hospitality of those, who, within a few years, were living in all the degradation and debauchery of heathenism.

Among the architectural improvements at Lahaina, I must not forget the chapel now erecting. It also is of stone, ninety-eight feet long, and sixty-two broad, two stories in height, to be furnished with galleries, and calculated to afford seats for three thousand hearers. The walls are finished, and the roof nearly in readiness to be placed upon them. It is pleasantly situated near the finest grove of cocoa-nut trees in the district; has been erected exclusively at the expense of the governor and chiefs of Maui; and, when completed, will be the most

substantial and noble structure in the Polynesian Islands. We found also similar improvements here, in the style of living and domestic comforts of the chiefs, as at Oahu.

In making visits to the chiefs, in walking over the settlement, in riding on horseback, (horses, with good saddles and bridles, being daily furnished us by order of the princess,) in excursions on the water in canoes also at our service, in attending an examination of a principal school, &c., besides the enjoyment of the society of our friends at the mission-house; the time flew rapidly by, and almost before we were aware of it, the limited period of our absence had elapsed; and yesterday morning we were obliged, reluctantly, to prepare for a return.

## LETTER

VISIT OF CAPTAIN FINCH TO THE PRINCESS, AND  
ENTERTAINMENT OF THE CHIEFS ON BOARD SHIP.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Port of Honolulu, Oct. 29th, 1829.

It had been arranged that the captain should wait on the princess and the chieftains from the windward in the afternoon, at the residence of the king; and at four o'clock, we all left the ship together for that purpose. We found them assembled, with most of their compeers, at the place appointed; and the whole company appeared greatly delighted with the conversation of an hour which followed. And with good reason; for, in addition to the pleasantness and urbanity which has marked all his intercourse with them, he took occasion, at this time, to give them much very important advice, in reference to their rights as a government, and the principles by which they should regulate their public measures, and upon which they should found their laws.



This was given principally in answer to questions proposed by one and another; especially by the king, Governor Adams, and Naihe. Among other points, he assured them of a right which most foreigners, by their conduct at least, have endeavoured to persuade them that they do not possess—that of forming laws which shall be binding on all persons at the island, both natives and visitors; and, also, of the privilege of presenting to our government any complaint they have to make of the deportment of American citizens which has been displeasing to them.

All information, as to their national and political privileges, has been so carefully concealed from them by most persons who could with propriety have imparted it, that they hung on his remarks with the deepest interest; and manifested so high a degree of gratification and delight, that the interview was prolonged till quite the dusk of the evening.

No one seemed more to rejoice in the encouraging and liberal conversation of the captain, and in the various manifestations made by him of sincere and disinterested friendship, than Kapiolani. At two or three different times, I saw her dash the tears from her eyes with her handkerchief; and, on leaving the house, to proceed to the weekly lecture at the chapel, the tears dropped from her cheeks as she took my arm, and exclaimed, "O! Mr. Stewart, greatly indeed are we favoured in the visit of this captain of a man-of-war, and greatly are we blest in such a communication from the high chief of America; great indeed is the joy of my heart, for I have a thought that *THE CAPTIVITY OF HAWAII* (by which term, as thus used, the whole group is designated) *IS NIGH TO AN END.*" An event of which, in the language of the poet, I would say,

"It were a consummation most devoutly to be wished."

not only by the chieftains and islanders themselves, but by every philanthropist and lover of his race.

Long, indeed, has Hawaii been in captivity : in a captivity of paganism ; in a captivity of ignorance, superstition, and fear ; in a captivity to the licentiousness of too many who have visited her ; and in a captivity to their imposition and deceit. But her gods of wood and of stone are now no more : He, who would have all men every where to worship Him in spirit and in truth, is the only deity now acknowledged and adored ; letters and religion are fast expelling the terrors of darkness and death, and the unblushing vice which once stalked abroad at noon-day, is now obliged, in a measure at least, to hide its head : and let but a few such visits as that of the Vincennes be made to her distant shores, a few such documents as that of Mr. Southard be placed in the hands of her rulers, and a few such friends as Captain Finch impart to them his enlightened views, and important counsels in reference to their municipal enactments, commercial engagements, and political relations ; and the captivity of Hawaii will be, not only nigh, but fully to an end !

The Vincennes having been entirely overhauled, and painted anew, is now in fine order ; and all the chiefs expected at Oahu during our visit having arrived, to-day was fixed on to receive the king and chiefs on board, and pay to them the honours of the ship. The invitation was given by the captain, at the close of his interview with the government yesterday.

At twelve o'clock, the return of the boats with the company was reported by a quarter-master ; on which the yards were manned by the crew, in their muster-dress of white frocks and trousers trimmed with blue, and black hats and shoes. The officers were in full dress ; the guard of marines under arms ; the band on the quarter-deck ; and the Hawaiian flag flying at the foremast-head. The king, princess, regent, and governor Boki, came in the first boat,

and were received with three cheers from the yards, the guard presenting arms, and the band playing "God save the king!" And, as soon as the whole party, including the two consuls, and Mr. Bingham and Bishop, had been received and escorted to the poop, a salute of twenty-one guns was fired; the highest honour of our service being thus paid to his Hawaiian majesty and court.

The entertainment, after the salute, consisted of the playing of the band, while refreshments of wine, &c. were served on deck; of the exercise of the crew and marines at the guns, as in battle; boarding and repelling boarders, &c., an exhibition which greatly delighted the king and male chiefs. They were then escorted around the different decks, and shown the whole ship, after which they partook of a handsome collation in the cabin, remaining on board till near four o'clock, much gratified with the attentions shown them, and the kind of entertainment given; and the captain and officers not less impressed with the propriety and respectability of their whole appearance and deportment.

## LETTER LVI.

### GENERAL EXAMINATION OF THE SCHOOLS OF OAHU.

U.S. Ship Vincennes, Port of Honolulu,  
October 31st, 1829.

WITHIN a few days of the arrival of our ship at Oahu, a regular quarterly examination of the schools of Honolulu occurred. Captain Finch and a party of officers attended the exhibition in the afternoon; when the classes most advanced, embracing several hundred scholars, presented evidences of their attainments in reading and writing, in the elements of arithmetic, geography, and biblical history, in recitations from the scriptures, in catechetical exercises, and in singing, highly interesting and satisfactory.

Many of the scholars, both male and female, write well; quite as much so as most persons of common education in our own country: and all manifested as full an understanding in the acquisitions made, as would be found among scholars at a similar exhibition at home.

The king and the chiefs, including governor and madam Boki, appeared at the head of their respective classes, manifesting, not only in their example, but by their whole manner, the laudable ambition of being first in useful knowledge, as they are first in rank. One of the exercises of the king, was that of reading aloud, in the English language; which he did with unexpected facility, and with great distinctness of enunciation, and correctness of accent. He understands much that is spoken in this tongue, but usually is unwilling to attempt speaking it himself, seemingly from an apprehension of committing blunders.

One pleasing exhibition on the occasion, was that of a basket of needle-work, prepared by a class of young girls, under the instruction of Miss Ward. The articles were all beautifully finished.

While at Lahaina, I also had an opportunity of judging of the advancement made by the chiefs and others there, in exhibitions of a similar kind, by scholars under the superintendence of Mr. Andrews and Miss Ogden. The princess and her class are in advance of all others at that station, as her brother and his immediate associates are at this place. Arithmetic proves to be a very favourite study with the islanders; and they take great delight in the exercise of mind required in it. With the princess, I am told, this is particularly the case; and a chief amusement of herself and companions, is in exercises in the elementary rules of the art, and in simple and compound reduction—the limits of the progress yet made, I believe, by any of the nation.

Notwithstanding the attendance of captain Finch and his officers at the quarterly exhibition of this kind, Kaahumanu felt desirous of presenting to them a more imposing spectacle in a general examination of the schools of the whole island; and early information of the design was circulated through the various districts of Oahu, and other arrangements made for its execution.

It occurred yesterday; and took place in the chapel, a building one hundred and ninety-eight feet in length, by seventy-eight in breadth. The scholars included persons of every age, and the number was very great, amounting to many thousands, even thousands more than could be received in the chapel at the same time; and the examination took place by districts.

The morning was appropriated to a review, in this manner, of the schools most recently established in distant parts of the island, and to those whose proficiency extended only to reading; and the chapel was two or three times successively filled with these, arranged by schools, in regular lines along its matted floor. The people were almost exclusively dressed in native cloth, but all in new garments: many of which, consisting of immense folds arranged around the figure with taste and gracefulness, were of great beauty. In general, each school was in uniform: some in mantles and kiheis of black, some of yellow, some of pink, some of white, some striped, some spotted, some plain, meeting the eye, as seen in a single mass spread over so extensive an area, in lively and agreeable effect.

I never, on any occasion of festivity and amusement, during my residence at the islands, in which a multitude of the people have been brought together, saw evidences of greater interest and pleasure in the passing scenes, whether of the song or of the dance, or of a trial of skill in their various sports

and games, than were now manifested. The sight, with associations unavoidably arising from it in my mind, was at once delightful and affecting.

The afternoon, as in the previous instance, had been appropriated, in the arrangements for the day, to the schools and classes in advance of the general population ; and as large a number of the officers as could be spared from duty, left the ship with Captain Finch at four o'clock, to proceed to the chapel. The chiefs and a large number of foreigners, visitors, and residents, including the consuls, who had learned that there was to be more than ordinary display, were already assembled, and waiting our arrival.

For the gratification of the gentlemen of the Vincennes, this opportunity was taken of exhibiting so much of their former style of dress, &c., as would be consistent with modesty of person and propriety of deportment. The schools occupied about two-thirds of the chapel ; the remaining part had been appropriated to the accommodation of the female chiefs, and kept in reserve for them, till, with all the ancient paraphernalia of chieftainship, they had been borne in procession from their respective residences to the chapel. The display made by these, as seen from the seats to which we were conducted, was beautiful and imposing.

The princess occupied the centre of the space reserved. She was seated on the farther end from us of a portable throne, consisting of a light platform, twenty feet in length, and six in breadth, at an elevation of four feet. This was covered with many thicknesses of the finest and most beautifully coloured native cloth, hanging in thick and graceful drapery to the floor. Behind her, and at regular intervals along the sides, the finest-looking of the inferior male chieftains were stationed, in splendid cloaks of yellow and scarlet feathers, each supporting a kabilé, or fea-

thered staff of state, thirty feet in height ; the staffs or handles, two-thirds of the whole length, being composed of highly-polished alternate rings of tortoise-shell and ivory, and the upper ends of feathers ; in compact cylinders, nearly two feet in diameter ; some crimson, some black, some green, and others again, yellow.

That there might be as little departure as possible from the primitive dress, without a sacrifice of modesty, the princess wore only a loose slip of black satin, made close in the neck, with long sleeves ; over which, from the waist down, appeared, as she was seated in the Turkish attitude, the most beautifully wrought and splendid article of feathers ever made at the islands, a pau or native petticoat of yellow, edged with alternate points of black and scarlet, and lined with crimson satin, covering, not only the lower part of her person, but spreading widely in rich careless folds, over the whole of the platform. A beautiful feather cape, in a pattern of black and crimson on a yellow ground, hung from her shoulders ; around her neck were several wreaths, and upon her head a triple coronet of yellow and crimson, of the same material.

To be placed so conspicuously before us, as a spectacle to be gazed at, rather than as presiding over the examination, was an awkward situation for Harieta, as now usually called ; but she acquitted herself with great propriety, and was much complimented, especially for the handsome manner in which an expression of politeness to Captain Finch (unexpected, and, I should judge, unthought of, even by herself, till the moment) was made immediately after our entrance. The seat to which he was conducted was directly in front of hers, though at a distance of some thirty feet. As soon as he recognized her in new attire, he rose, and made her a very marked bow ; on returning which, she immediately dismantled herself

of the feather cape upon her shoulders, and despatched a young chief with it as a present to him. The compliment was so handsome and so prompt, that the captain placed it at once upon his own shoulders, and wore it during the exhibition, in evidence of the kindness with which it had been received.

The examination consisted, like all others of a similar kind, of specimens in reading and writing, exercises in arithmetic, &c., concluding, at the end of an hour or more, with a hymn and short prayer. The greater portion of the specimens of writing and of composition, among those most advanced, were letters addressed to myself, in expression of the happiness occasioned by my visit, and of the views of the different writers upon the subjects of learning and religion. Some hundred of these, I should think, were committed to me by the writers, after being subjected to the inspection of the various foreigners present. Among these were some, who take little interest in the advances of every kind making by the people, and who affect to believe, and who say, that no good has ever been accomplished by the mission, and that the people have no capacity for knowledge. To such, the gratification exhibited by our party at the attainments manifest, and the encomiums past by them, both on the teachers and the pupils, were any thing but agreeable; a fact which they could not disguise. The attention of a principal officer was attracted by the readiness, and apparent understanding, with which a large class repeated, what he was told was the multiplication table; and expressed his surprise and pleasure to one of these gentlemen seated beside him; to which he replied, with a look expressive of great contempt—‘ All parrot-like, sir; all parrot-like; they know nothing about what they are saying!’ Almost immediately after, a young man brought a slate with a large and complex sum



in addition upon it, presenting it to the officer to know whether it was correct. It was to be found perfectly so : and turning to Mr. —, he said, with a laugh, “ A parrot possibly might learn to repeat the multiplication table, Mr. — ; but it would require a wise bird to add such a series of columns together, without a mistake ! ”

Understanding that the females would leave the chapel in procession, Captain Finch and myself walked out before them, and took a stand in the upper veranda of the palace built by Karamoku, commanding a fine view of the whole street from the chapel to the house, where they were to be set down. The children of Kekuanaoa came first ; but, unaccustomed to this ancient mode of conveyance, the moment their couch of state became elevated on the shoulders of its bearers, and moved forward with its complement of feathered staffs and train, the young nobles began screaming so loudly, that their attendants were obliged to receive them to their arms from their lofty seats, and allow the pageant to pass on unoccupied. Next came the queen's ; and last, the princess, preceded by the king and suite on foot, and escorted by a file of the royal guards on either side, to keep open a passage sufficiently wide for her throne and its bearers, amidst the immense throng of gaily-dressed thousands around.

The scene thus presented in a single *coup d'œil* was highly exciting. This bearing of some favourite of a nation upon the heads of the people has always been associated in my mind with a state of high-wrought enthusiasm, an enthusiasm springing from a just admiration and a sincere love for the object calling it into action, and the sympathetic influence of which seizes irresistibly on the heart, even of an uninterested spectator. I could not free myself from an influence of the kind on this occasion : nor was it necessary ; for she who was thus borne aloft, sur-

rounded by all the glory of her rank and the gaze of ten thousand eyes, was the joy of the people, and the delight of the whole nation. And while I gazed in admiration on the animated and youthful favourite passing triumphantly along, beneath a canopy of magnificent kahilès nodding with grace and stateliness in the breeze, as cheer after cheer from the wide-spread and admiring multitude greeted her on her way—I thought, and remarked, that the pageant, though destitute of the gliding of equipage and comparison of horse found in other countries, equalled, if it did not surpass, in its effect upon the eye and upon the heart, the most gorgeous and princely train I ever witnessed.

At the close of the quarterly examination, a fortnight ago, Mrs. Bingham entertained Captain Finch and officers, with the king, and regent, and members of the mission, at tea; and we at this time met the same company, with the addition of a greater number of the chiefs, at the cottage of Mrs. Ruggles and Mrs. Clark.

## LETTER LVII.

### AN EVENING MEETING AND SABBATH SCENES.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Port of Honolulu, Nov. 2d, 1829.

SOME of the incidents of the last forty-eight hours have been among the most interesting, dear H——, that I have ever witnessed here.

On Saturday evening, I attended a meeting for religious conversation and prayer. It was held in a large school-house, near the residences of the principal chiefs, and was composed of persons of every rank and condition among the people. There were circumstances in the mere approach to the spot sufficient to impart seriousness and solemnity to the

mind ever accustomed to higher thoughts than those of which the things of this world are worthy.

No light prattle or giddy laugh, no unbecoming levity in look or manner among the numbers assembling, betrayed the careless mind, or a spirit little concerned in the services before it; but all appeared to be cherishing thoughts and affections suited to a place of seriousness and prayer.

On entering the humble but spacious apartment, the light of a few tin lamps, at long intervals against the posts supporting the roof, fell dimly on the countenances and figures of at least a thousand persons, waiting in profound silence the arrival of a teacher in the things of eternity. We took our seats at a small table near a door, in the midst of them, and waited ourselves till those yet entering should find places. Among the number of these was an Albino, though a pure native, and another a blind man, of fine countenance and noble figure, with deep seriousness marked on his features, as, by the guidance of a friend whose hand he held, he was led near the table, and became seated on the mats at our feet.

There was in this incident that which at once brought into exercise those better feelings we all delight to exercise at such hours, and in such a place; and my thoughts were, as I gazed with deep interest on this afflicted islander, seeking in the darkness of the night by the kindness of another, that light which, though invisible to the natural eye, is emphatically the "light of the world," and the "light of life:" "Happy, happy art thou, though blind, if seeking light from the great Physician! happy, though afflicted, if, conscious of a darkness of soul as well as of body, thy earnest cry is, 'Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy upon me!'"

After a hymn and prayer, and a few remarks suited to the occasion, any one who felt desirous of asking a

question, or of expressing a sentiment upon the subjects for which the meeting was instituted, was requested to speak ; upon which much interesting conversation between one and another, and Mr. Bingham, took place. The remarks and the feelings of many, thus unfolded, were deeply touching, and fully demonstrated the efficacy of the gospel in enlightening the mind and melting the heart of man in his most uncultivated state.

Yesterday morning, we had our usual sabbath service on board ship, and did not attend at the mission chapel. After dinner, however, Mr. Stribling and myself went on shore, for the purpose of joining in the native worship, at four o'clock. We had been apprised of the intended administration of the Lord's supper at that time, and anticipated, with no little satisfaction, the privilege of partaking of this sacred ordinance in so remote a part of the world, in the bosom of a church but lately gathered from heathenism.

On entering, we found the immense area of the building, as usual, greatly crowded ; and the services just commencing by a hymn and a prayer. It is not customary to have a sermon on these occasions ; and, at the conclusion of another hymn, after the prayer, the names of seven individuals were announced as those now to be received into the church. They had been in a state of probation for some months, and were called on to present themselves publicly to profess their belief in the articles of the christian faith, and to take upon them the vows of the church covenant. Which they did, standing in front of the pulpit and communion table, surrounded by the members of the church, occupying two rows of seats on the square enclosing it.

After assenting to the articles of faith, and taking on them the obligations contained in the church covenant, they were all baptized, and then, each for himself, both male and female, subscribed his name

to the roll of the church, subjoined to the preceding documents, and all were proclaimed members of the church, entitled to all the privileges of the relation, and commended to the special love and care of their fellows of the household of faith.

This ceremony was succeeded by the presentation for baptism of several infants, neatly dressed like children with us at home. One of the most so, was that of the individuals whom I have mentioned; and as I looked with deep feelings on the little family group they formed before the baptismal font, I could but inwardly exclaim, in view of their past condition, "Happy parents, thus to have learned and to have secured blessings, of which many a long line of progenitors never conceived! Happy child; thus to have been born in a day, when no murderous hand will add you to the fearful number whose earliest breathings have been sternly stifled in death; but when, with humble prayer, you are received from the arms of parental love into the bosom of the church, and made one of the flock whose leader and whose defender is the good Shepherd, who careth for his sheep, and who carries the lambs in his bosom!" After this, four men presented themselves as candidates, to be received after a suitable period of probation. One of them was the blind man whose appearance had interested me the evening before; and another the friend, now, as then, guiding his darkened way through the crowded mass around.

A general invitation was then given to all professors of religion, among the strangers present, of whom there were several, to partake, in the breaking of bread, and the drinking of wine, in the name of Him who said, "This do in remembrance of me," with the request that any such would make themselves known by rising. Mr. Stribling and myself were the only persons thus answering; on which we were joined in our standing position by the whole church; and by

singing a translation, in the native language, of the appropriate and affecting hymn.

"'I was on that dark and doleful night," &c.

commenced the services immediately connected with the ordinance.

On entering, Mr. Stribling and myself took single chairs on one side of the area; but several of our officers and other foreigners coming in, to make room for them, we took places beside the princess; and thus, with one, who we, dear H——, have long regarded with the interest of an adopted child, on my right, and a friend who I have learned sincerely to love on my left, I joined with deep feeling in the prayer and in the praise of the little flock here gathered from the Gentiles, and partook of the symbols of the "bread of LIFE," and of "the water of SALVATION,"—of which, "if a man eat, he shall live for ever," and "if he drink, he shall never thirst."

It was an occasion which necessarily called from the pious mind the most devout thanksgiving unto God, for the rich displays of his grace here made; while it elicited the most ardent prayer, that thus He "who is mighty to save" would go "forth, conquering and to conquer!" The most unreflecting and incredulous mind could not have looked upon the scene without admiration at the achievements of decorum and seeming piety which, at least, it must be acknowledged have been accomplished. The number of communicants was near two hundred, all natives with the exception of Mr. Stribling and myself, and the mission family, presenting in their deportment and whole appearance, as great a degree of intelligence, devotion, and entire respectability, as any ordinary church in our country: the chiefs, by the superiority of their air, and richness of attire, corresponding to the higher classes in our own communities; and the common people differing scarce in any respect, but their colour from those of the same grade at home.

The happiness to me of thus surrounding the table of our common Lord, with most of my old associates and missionary friends, and with so many of the chiefs and people, whose spiritual welfare has long been a topic of the deepest interest and prayer, was exceedingly great, and filled my heart with gratitude and praise.

The princess appeared to remarkable advantage. I could not avoid noticing with satisfaction, the singular propriety of her dress, a white Italian crape, finished with simple bindings of white satin, worn over an under-dress of white, with a becoming bonnet of light silk, and French scarf of the same, of modest colour. She was not only serious, but affected to tears by the ordinance; and while I could but believe her a truly sincere and firm professor, my prayer was that she might be "stedfast, unmoveable, and always abounding in the work of the Lord."

## LETTER LVIII.

### DETRACTION AND CALUMNY OF FOREIGN RESIDENTS.

U. S. Ship *Vincennes*, Port of Honolulu,  
November 3, 1829.

A SHORT time after the arrival of our ship at Honolulu, Captain Finch and myself were invited to dinner by an American resident of respectability.

While at table, the character of the young king became a subject of conversation; and the captain was led to inquire, whether any person had yet been spoken of as a suitable companion for him as future queen of the islands. Our host replied, that the king, and his sister the princess, were mutually and strongly attached, and that they themselves and all the chiefs wished a marriage to take place between them, according to former usages in the royal family, but were prevented by the missionaries; adding, that the cere-

mony, however, might as well be performed, for it was well known that they were already living in a state of licentiousness and incest !

As you may readily imagine, the boldness of this assertion, which I was persuaded was utterly false, caused me to drop my knife and fork, with a surprise bordering on indignation ; and to demand, in a manner sufficiently indicative of the feeling which had flashed through me, whether Mr. — believed the assertion to be true ? To which he replied, “ Most assuredly, nothing is more notorious ; every body knows it ! ” while two other Americans, at the table, corroborated the charge with the strongest asseverations.

These gentlemen were perfectly aware of the attitude in which I stand to the princess. They knew, that, from the time of my first arrival as a missionary, in 1823, she, then a child eight years old, had been a resident at the station that I occupied in Maui ; had ever been a favourite pupil ; and on the death of a converted and pious mother, the late queen Keopulani, had been committed by her to the special guardianship and watchful care of the Rev. Mr. Richards, my colleague, and myself. They knew, that from that period, I had regarded her with peculiar attachment ; had rejoiced in her acquirements ; in the early development of more than ordinary christian principle and feeling ; and in the active and exemplary life of piety which she had led ; and that a new bond of interest existed, in an evidence of affection given by her, on the necessary removal of myself and family from the island, by the assumption, as a favourite and baptismal appellation, of the name of one justly dear above others to me. They knew also, that she has been for three years a member in full communion of the church ; stands conspicuous as a christian, not only in her own nation, but, by report, in various parts of the world ; and that, by impugning her character,



they were assailing the veracity and honour of the whole mission, and casting reproach on all the moral achievements it is reported to have attained.

Courtesy therefore to me, as a guest, and a regard for my feelings, in view of my relation to the princess, and the strong sympathy which I might be known still to feel in all that affects my former associates, should have deterred Mr. — and his friends, for the time at least, from such unqualified defamation, whether unfounded or not; and it could not have been expected by them, that, after hearing it, I should not take measures to ascertain its truth and origin.

The object must have been to force the belief on the mind of Captain Finch, by the confidence and publicity of the assertion, that it must be true. How far this was successfully accomplished, the sequel will show.

On taking leave of the company, I requested Captain Finch to charge his mind with the remarks made, and the positiveness of the accompanying manner, that when he should have an opportunity of ascertaining the innocence of the princess, he might be persuaded from his own observation, of the recklessness with which one under the influence of strong prejudice and ill-will could thus scatter "arrows, firebrands, and death!" and then say, "Am I not in sport?"

To make the assurance of my own mind "doubly sure," I early ascertained, to my perfect satisfaction, that the crimination was as false in fact, as it was heinous in its nature.

From my messmates, and other officers of the Vincennes, I early learned that the same tale had been repeated by different persons to them; and shortly after reaching Maui, one of my companions incidentally mentioned the scandal to Mr. Richards, as a matter of common report at Oahu. He immediately inquired of me, whether I had heard any

thing of the kind ; and, on relating to him the reiterated and positive avowal of Mr. — and his companions, determined, as a pastor of the particular church of which the princess is a member, to demand of Hoapiri, governor of Maui, and his wife, the guardians and adopted parents of Harieta, an investigation of the case. The consequence was, an immediate resolution on the part of the governor and princess, to proceed to Oahu to meet the allegation ; and demand, in the name of the government, from the persons implicated, proof, or a recantation of the charge.

The princess was so much affected by the calumny, as to be unable to sleep or eat ; and remained with the governor and his wife, during the whole of the night on which she first heard of it, bathed in tears ; and it was not without much urging by the mission family and myself, and the reiterated assurance, that all the gentlemen with me believed her perfectly innocent, that she could be induced to meet them in the free and cheerful manner she had, previous to this base calumny.

All who heard of it were exceedingly indignant. And the first shade of sadness I had seen pass over the brow of Kaahumanu, after the arrival of the Vincennes, was on the morning of our return from Maui, after she had been informed of it. As I approached her residence, to exchange with her an "aloha," I perceived her seated in dejection on one side of the apartment, while several of her compeers were partaking of a breakfast just by. On asking her why she did not eat with the rest, she replied, "*aohe ono ke ai !*" "There is no sweetness in the food !" and on inquiring why ? and whether she was ill ? was answered, that her "heart was broken by the wickedness of the foreigners, and the falsehood of their words !"

A general council was early assembled, for the

consideration of this subject. Governor Boki had previously called on Mr. —, to know why he had made such a statement. The only satisfaction he could obtain was, that Mr. — did not intend to convey the impression that he himself believed the charge true, but only that it was said by others to be so, and was generally believed to be a fact. He could, however, furnish no particular authority; and the following correspondence between the chiefs and Captain Finch has just taken place.

The document from the chiefs was placed in the hands of Captain Finch, by the queen regent, Kaahumanu, in presence of the signers in open council yesterday.

#### LETTER OF THE CHIEFS.

" Honolulu, Oahu, October 30, 1829.

" Listen to us, Captain Finch. Great is our affection for you; united with pleasure, admiration, and confidence for the love which you have shown us. On account of your affection for us, we rejoice in this opportunity to tell our thoughts.

" This is our sentiment concerning Mr. —, dwelling in our islands, Mr. — and —. Many evil deeds have been committed by our people towards them, and many also have been their evil doings towards us; on account of their prolonging their residence on these islands of Hawaii, we are exceedingly ensnared and burdened by them. Formerly our difficulties were small; but latterly they are very great, on account of the unprovoked injuries that have been heaped upon us—by the above mentioned foreigners. Many have been the smaller injuries which we have received from them; and which are too many to number. We will only specify two of greater importance.

" The first is, concerning our man who shot a cow. The two — united, seized upon the man, bound him with a rope, and dragged him along behind their horses, as a horse drags along a cart. Thus they dragged him for the distance of two miles, until he barely escaped with his life.

" The second charge is concerning the false and evil report of these persons concerning the princess Harieta. We deny the allegation made by them—it is not true. On account of the charge brought by them against her, our hearts are broken by the scandal, and we can bear it no longer. Our feelings,

however, are relieved by the letter of the chief of America, brought by you, by which we are assured of his affection for us. We have also seen your letter, which bears the same likeness with that of your chief.

"Because of the similarity of the sentiments of yourself and your chief, we beseech you, if it is in your power, to bring Mr. — and Mr. — to account for the charge which they two have falsely alleged against the princess. Grant, sir, our request, that you bring them to a full account here, or be so kind as to tell us distinctly the proper course that we are to take.

"This we humbly beg of you, with great affection, which shall be perpetual.

"KAUIKEAULI, King.

"BOKI, Governor of Oahu.

"ADAMS, Governor of Hawaii.

"HOAPIRI, Governor of Maui.

"NAIHE, Counsellor of State.

"HARILTA NAHIENAENA, Princess.

"ELIZABETH KAAHUMANU, Regent."

#### ANSWER.

*To the KING KAUIKEAULI, and the CHIEFS of the Sandwich Islands.*

"U. S. Ship Vincennes, Port of Honolulu,  
November 3, 1829.

"I reply to your letter, and repeat to you that I entertain great friendship for you and your people; as also do the president and government of the United States.

"It is painful to me to learn, that you feel you have cause to be offended with my countrymen, Messrs. — and —. They will, or can, I hope, remove it. I have told them of your grievances.

"When you, and those of my countrymen who visit or live in your islands, become better acquainted, then all grounds of complaint may cease on both sides. As they and you are yet, in some degree, mutual strangers, it is most judicious to exercise forbearance toward each other.

"I have not power to give you such satisfaction as you may think is deserved; but I will receive, and deliver to the president, such demands or representations as you may choose to make; and they will be effectually attended to.

"As you are at a loss to know how you are to act toward strangers who reside among you, but do not behave as you may think they ought; I recommend to you to propose such questions to my government. It will explain the extent of its protection to citizens who visit, or temporarily sojourn,

among you; also the restraints and correctives it can apply to offences committed against you; and will further inform you of the degree of power or right over them, which it is willing to concede to you.

"Whatever ill impressions may have been produced by what Mr. — and Mr. — may have said against the princess Harieta, are removed by your denial and assurances; their remarks, probably, were not conceived in malice, and may have been derived from your own people. The knowledge that the conversation has given you so much pain, will most probably render them more cautious. When your government is better established, and your people more informed, your characters will be better protected from aspersion.

"These are my views and my opinions; you can, however, have reference, as I before stated, through me, to the President, who will confirm them, or else distinctly differ from me; so that your objects will be attained.

"I have thus, conclusively, noticed all the points of your letter, upon which I can with propriety touch: and have only to add the fervent wish, that all difficulties, and every sense or feeling of displeasure, may for the present terminate here.

"May each day of your existence add to the present evidences of your general prosperity and individual happiness.

"W. C. B. FINCH."

As to the assertion, that the king, princess, and chiefs are all desirous of a marriage between the brother and sister, it is entirely unfounded. Had not christianity been introduced and established, these two would, doubtless, have been united before the present time; but it is now six years since the subject was voluntarily dismissed from the conversation and councils of the chiefs, as one that was for ever put at rest by the precepts of the faith they had espoused. In speaking upon this point with the princess, she told me that such a thing had never been intimated to her by any one of the chiefs, except by Boki, when intoxicated, a few weeks since: entering the house at which she was, he told her she must marry her brother immediately; on which, replying that he spoke like a crazy man, from much

drink, she left the room. But it was added by her, that Mr. —, an American, and Mr. —, a British resident, had each, at two different times, advised and importuned her to marry her brother, saying, that such alliances were frequent, both in America and England; and that, not long since, a British king had married his sister! Mr. Jones, the American consul, however, she says, told her that it was not true; that such a marriage was never heard of in a christian country; and that to marry her brother would be a lasting disgrace in the eyes of all civilized nations.

I have not entered into this detail, and traced the calumny to its result, from any intrinsic importance in the circumstance itself, nor with the intention, on the one hand, of bringing reproach on the individuals giving rise to it, or, on the other, of presenting myself in pledge for the continued integrity and future fair fame of the person to whom it principally relates.

The princess, for so youthful a professor of religion, is placed in circumstances highly inauspicious to the continuance of that brightness and spirituality of christian character which she has, thus far, so clearly exhibited, if not hazardous even to the purity essential to the existence of true piety.

The nation of which she is so conspicuous a chieftain, however humble in comparison with others, and mean in the pretensions of its royalty to rank and splendour, still has its "world" to ensnare the youthful mind, and its pleasures and its follies to tempt the inexperienced heart. Of that world, too, she is the idol: its adulations in every form are constantly poured around her; and unhappily, in the number of those whose flattery springs only from admiration and sincere attachment, there are others who court but to deceive, and who adulate but to destroy. And however sincerely such an event is to be deprecated, still it is not impossible, to say the least, that

she may yet live more deeply to dishonour, even than she has thus far adorned, the faith so early espoused by her. But of such an event, it is most devoutly to be said, "sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof;" and I cannot but protest against the unmanliness and cruelty of an attempt thus, beforehand, to blast the fair fame of a reputation hitherto unsullied.

The leading motive to the disclosure has been to unfold by the opportunity which it presents, the true fountain of bitterness from which streams of prejudice and misrepresentation, destructive not only to the best interests of this nation, but of the whole heathen world, have been made so widely and so broadly to flow.

It is in cases like the preceding, and on such authority as Mr. — and his friends, that the detractions of the mission are founded, which have been furnished to the world by Captain Beechey, of H. B. M. ship Blossom, by the "Redacteur" of "The Voyage of the Blonde," and by M. Von Kotzebue, of the Russian Imperial Navy, in his "New Voyage round the World." And I venture to assert that there is not a syllable derogatory to the honour and usefulness of the missionaries, contained in their united accounts, which, on investigation, could not be traced to a similar "deceitful and deceiving" source.

The station of post-captain in the royal and imperial navies of their sovereigns, is in itself an ægis to the honour of Beechey and Von Kotzebue; and I am far from believing, that the statements they have given are the fabrications of their own minds. Unhappily, there is too little necessity for any visiter at the islands thus to task his inventive powers: an abundance of matter of this description, already manufactured, is there kept in constant store, with tongues ready to retail it; and, I doubt not, those gentlemen can give the names of the individuals from whom they received all they have rehearsed.

If their accounts of the Sandwich Islands were written in full probity of heart, they must plead guilty to the charge of an error in judgment, and of having become dupes to the arts and misrepresentations of others, in utter neglect of the facilities for personal observation by which they were surrounded. To every intelligent visiter at the same place, it must be self-evident, that, instead of filling their note-books with facts passing before them, they caught with eagerness, from strongly prejudiced and ill-disposed men, recitals and hear-says in direct opposition to them.

It is not with unguarded pen that I advance this opinion. I have myself had a demonstration of the fact; and can present evidence, both incidental and direct, in support of it, furnished by those who could have no motive to deceive.

A short time previous to my departure from the islands in 1825, I called one morning at the residence of an American merchant, who had the hour before returned to Honolulu from a visit of a day or two, at a place on the western side of Oahu, twenty-five or thirty miles distant. In the course of the conversation which ensued, he expressed great anxiety for the people inhabiting the sections of country through which he had passed, stating, equally to my surprise and regret, that they must in a very short time be in a state of perfect famine, from having been obliged by the chiefs to go into the mountains, to cut timber for a new chapel lately erected at Honolulu, to the neglect of their plantations, till all the growth on them had perished from want of irrigation and other attention; adding, that, from this cause, the whole region presented a most melancholy spectacle.

I had no reason to doubt the truth of the report. I knew nothing myself of that part of the island, and was aware that the inhabitants had recently been occupied in procuring timber for the chapel.



Two gentlemen of the mission arrived at Honolulu, the same day of this conversation, from the Leeward Islands. They had landed in the vessel in which they left Tauai, on the western side of the island, at the same place visited by Mr. —, and had come on foot over the same ground which he had travelled. It occurred to me at once, without informing my friends of the particular reason for the inquiry, to ask what the appearance of the country and plantations in that direction were? They answered, that the cultivated parts were in luxuriant and beautiful growth; so much so, that they had repeatedly on the way made the evidence of industry and the fine order in the farms, the subject of remark! I then informed them of the report of Mr. —, which they thought so utterly impossible, as to believe me in jest, till assured of the contrary.

Captain Beechey's visit at Oahu occurred some few months after this: and his principal report of the condition of the people is, that they were in a state approaching to utter famine, from habits of indolence induced by the instruction and influence of the missionaries. That they had been taught, that to attend church seven times a day was all that was necessary for them; and that a native had told him, (in what language, and by whose interpretation?) that it was "better to pray than to work;" and the consequence was, that the plantations were going to ruin, and provisions so scarce, that the king, only a few days before, had been obliged to send to the American consul to beg a piece of bread!

Such is the report of Captain Beechey; while his own ship, and all other vessels in port, were receiving from the native market every refreshment, both animal and vegetable, that they needed or desired. The numerous foreigners resident at Honolulu were also living in abundance on the same resources; and a walk of fifteen minutes, and the ride of an hour, in

almost any direction, would have shown him thousands of acres of cultivated growth, as rich and exuberant as any ever known since the first discovery of the islands! From whence, then, I would ask, did he gain his evidence of famine? From assertions, no doubt, as well founded as that made by Mr. — to me: and where was the acute observation of the intelligent and scientific voyager?—brooding, it is probable, in total neglect of the beautiful and fertile valleys around, over the dusty and sunburnt plain east of the port, which he had been told was once covered with flourishing plantations; without the addition, however, of the time *when*—a period “to which the memory,” of foreign visitors, at least, “runneth not contrary!”

A few weeks only intervened between the visit of Captain Jones, of the U. S. ship *Peacock*, and that of Captain Beechey; yet Captain Jones, whatever he may have heard, saw no evidence of a famine past or to come. On the contrary, for three months he beheld a market daily filled with the productions of the country, in a quantity sufficient for the refreshment of the *Peacock*, and numerous other vessels in the harbour, during the whole period, and at a price more reasonable than at any other port visited by him in the Pacific.

Captain Von Kotzebue left the Sandwich Islands, on his return to Russia, a few days previous to my embarkation for England and the United States, in 1825. In his “*New Voyage round the World*,” after speaking of the missionaries, of their influence and their character, in a very detractive manner, he asserts, that my intended departure was occasioned by the injudicious and reprehensible measures of my associates, especially of Mr. Bingham, and by finding the objects for which I had left my country in this manner defeated. I should have been utterly at a loss to conjecture on what authority such an as-

sertion could have been made, but for a fact which had previously come to my knowledge.

While Captain Jones was at Oahu, in 1826, a gentleman, in speaking of me, assigned this same reason for my retirement from the mission ; and in support of it mentioned, that he had received a letter from me, in which I had acknowledged the fact. Only a short time previous, Captain Jones had himself seen a letter, addressed by me from the Georgian Islands to one of the missionaries, in which sentiments and feelings, at utter variance with such a statement, were strongly expressed. Of this he informed the gentleman, saying that he should be pleased to see that which I had addressed to him. He promised to show it ; but afterwards said it was mislaid, and could not be found. The truth is, I never, to the best of my knowledge, addressed a letter to that individual, either before or after sailing from the islands. In connexion with this circumstance, it was no difficult task to account for the paragraph in the publication of the voyager. If no other means had been open to him, he would have found better authority on this point, in one of the most interesting and polished of his officers, whose parting words, after a warm benediction, were, "*Reminiscares interdum mei, qui in tua domo familiaque se inter quos habet carissimos, in patria reductum putabat.*"

Mr. Bingham is the subject of special obloquy in the work of Von Kotzebue ; and I should be doing injustice to my heart, not to present, in this place, my own estimate of his character.

That he is a man of superior intellect, of good education, and of much general and practical knowledge, all acquainted with him must admit, while those who know him best are equally aware of the benevolence and kindness of his heart. His evil, in the eyes of his calumniators, can only be an unreserved devotion of all his powers to the enterprise in

which he is engaged—the entire conversion, moral renovation and eternal good of the islanders.

Such qualifications of mind and of education, which the missionaries possess, must at least save them from contempt. But, even, were they less favoured in this respect than they are,\* their principles, their personal example, their influence, and their aim, are such that, whatever the estimate now placed upon them may be, I am persuaded, that at last they will be accounted in the number of those of whom “the world was not worthy;” and the drapery which M. Von Kotzebue has cast round me, as standing in his work in *relievo* to such men, instead of a mantle of kindness, must ever be esteemed by me a *badge of reproach*.

## LETTER LIX.

### GOVERNMENT DEBT, AND STATE OF COMMERCE.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Port of Honolulu,  
November 3, 1829.

ON Saturday, the whole mission family was entertained on board the Vincennes. Captain Finch, after receiving the ladies, and welcoming them to his cabin, was obliged to excuse himself, and, with Mr. Bingham, as interpreter, go on shore, to meet the king and governor Boki, in a private conference, respecting the claims of the American merchants upon the native government; to secure payment of which, he had tendered his services, through the American consul, to the respective houses interested.

The interview continued the greater part of the day; and, on returning to the ship in the evening, he expressed great regret that I could not have been with him. The development of native intellect, and evidences of a capacity for the management of financial and governmental affairs, exhibited on this

occasion, he considers decidedly the most interesting that have yet come under his notice.

He was greatly delighted with the dignified and business-like manner in which the king, as well as Boki, entered upon the exposition of their commercial relations; and with the intelligence and ability of both, in the discussion of the subject, during the interview. From Mr. Bingham I learn, that the captain improved the opportunity of giving the king much important advice, as a private friend, in reference to his fiscal affairs; urged upon him the importance of keeping himself and government free from pecuniary embarrassments, of having a treasurer qualified to preserve his accounts in an intelligible manner, &c.

The conference was resumed yesterday morning, in the presence of all the chiefs; and an investigation of accounts took place, which resulted in the acknowledgment of about 50,000 dollars due to different American merchants and ship-masters, with a pledge, on the part of the chiefs, to liquidate the whole within the ensuing nine months. The debts are principally those contracted by the late king Riho Riho, and by Taumuarii of Tauai, previous to his death.

Sandal-wood, for the payment of the same claims, was collected after the visit of Captain Jones, but appropriated by Boki to new purchases, without the knowledge of the regent and king. The payment now to be made is also to be in sandal-wood, and Maaro of Maui, who accompanied governor Hoapiri and the princess to Oahu, has already, by the application of his arithmetic to the case, assessed the amount requisite, on the different islands, according to the population and quantity of wood on each, to be collected by a general tax.

An American merchant, now in business at Honolulu, and who was here previous to the arrival of the

missionaries in 1820, informs me, that the advance in the commercial importance of the islands within the ten years past, has not been less than seven hundred per cent. Upon this point, however, I will refer you to the following official letter of Mr. Jones, addressed to Captain Finch :

“ United States Consulate, Sandwich Islands,  
Honolulu, Oahu, October 30th, 1839.

“ DEAR SIR,

“ In your communication of the 19th inst., received at this Consulate, you have requested me to give you such information as I may be possessed of, relative to the state, extent, value, and wants, of the American commerce of these islands, in consequence of the government of the United States having evinced a lively interest for its better protection, and more successful prosecution.

“ In complying with this request, I shall endeavour to be as concise as possible ; and give you such information only, as shall be conceived most desirable for our government to be informed of. Since the discovery of the whale-fishery on the coast of Japan, and the independence of republics of the western coast of North and South America, the commerce of the United States at the Sandwich Islands has vastly increased. Of such importance have these islands become to our ships, which resort to the coast of Japan, for the prosecution of the whale-fishery, that, without another place could be found, possessing equal advantages of conveniences and situation, our fishery on Japan would be vastly contracted, or pursued under circumstances the most disadvantageous.

“ The importance, also, of the Sandwich Islands, to ships bound from the western coast of North and South America to China or Manilla, has of late years been fully tested ; the number of such vessels, which visit these islands, is annually increasing, and they have been found to afford them every advantage for repairing, refreshment, &c. ; and, generally, a market for parts of cargoes, which such vessels commonly have remaining unsold at the time of leaving the coast of Western America ; these vessels also generally obtain from the islands a freight of sandal-wood, either for Canton or Manilla, which is quite an inducement of itself to attract them to these isles.

“ The commerce of the United States, which resorts to the Sandwich islands, may be classed under five heads, viz. : First, Those vessels which trade direct from the United States to these islands, for sandal-wood, and from hence to China and Manilla, and return to America. Second, Those vessels

which are bound to the north-west coast, on trading voyages for furs, and touch here on their outward-bound passage, generally winter at these islands, and always stop on their return to the United States, by the way of China. Third, Those vessels which, on their passage from Chili, Peru, Mexico, or California, to China, Manilla, or the East Indies, stop at these islands for refreshments or repairs, to obtain freight, or dispose of what small cargoes they may have left. Fourth, Those vessels which are owned by Americans resident at these islands, and employed by them in trading to the north-west coast, to California and Mexico, to Canton and Manilla. Fifth, Those vessels which are employed in the whale-fishery on the coast of Japan, which visit semi-annually."

"Of the first class of vessels, which visit these islands annually, the number may be estimated at six, the amount of tonnage, eighteen hundred, and the value of vessels and cargoes, at three hundred and twenty thousand dollars. Of the second class, the number may be estimated at five, the tonnage one thousand, and the value of the vessels and cargoes two hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Of the third class, the number may be estimated at eight, the tonnage two thousand five hundred dollars, and the value of vessels and cargoes at five hundred thousand dollars. Of the fourth class, the number may be estimated at six, the tonnage one thousand, and the value of vessels and cargoes, two hundred thousand dollars. Of the fifth class, the number may be estimated at one hundred, the tonnage thirty-five thousand, and the value of vessels and cargoes, at four millions. Thus making the commerce of the United States, which annually visits the Sandwich Islands, amount to one hundred and twenty-five vessels, estimated at forty thousand tons, and valued at five millions two hundred and seventy thousand dollars. This estimate is made from the average number of vessels which have visited these islands during the last three years; and will, I believe, be found to be very near the extent and value of our commerce here.

"The importance of the Sandwich Islands to the commerce of the United States, which visits these seas, is, perhaps, more than has been estimated by individuals, or our government been made acquainted with. To our whale fishery on the coast of Japan they are indispensably necessary: hither those employed in this business repair in the months of April and May, to recruit their crews, refresh and adjust their ships; they then proceed to Japan, and return in the months of October and November. It is necessary that these ships, after their cruise on Japan, should return to the nearest port; in consequence, a large majority resort to these

islands, certain here to obtain any thing of which they may be in want. A small proportion, however, of these vessels have proceeded for supplies and refreshments, in the fall, to the ports on the coast of California; but as the government of Mexico have now imposed a duty of two dollars and one eighth, per ton, on every ship that shall anchor within their waters, whether in distress or otherwise, this will, of course, prevent our whale ships from visiting that coast; and the Sandwich Islands will then remain as the only resort for them, after their cruise on the coast of Japan.

"As the government of the republics of South America become settled, and peace established on their shores, our commerce with these nations will undoubtedly increase, and the result will, of course, have a tendency to bring more commerce to the islands. Here, all vessels bound to China, Manilla, or the East Indies, will stop on their passage, and the more the advantages which these islands afford to such vessels are known, the more they will become frequented.

"When we reflect that, only a few years since, the Sandwich Islands were not known to exist, when but lately they were visited only by a few ships bound to the north-west coast of America, and these merely stopping to purchase a few yams or potatoes, and that now there annually come to this remote corner of the globe forty thousand tons of American shipping, with the sure prospect that in no long protracted period this number will double, we are led to conclude, that the Sandwich Islands will yet be immensely more important, to the commerce of the United States which visits these seas, than they have been.

"You, sir, will have seen at this part of Honolulu, a little of the extent and importance of our commerce; and you will be able to form some estimate of the advantages which these islands afford; and it is hoped you will conceive it proper to urge on our government, the necessity and propriety of extending a strong arm of protection to those citizens who adventure to this remote part of the world. I say protection, for I conceive so large a commerce, and so far removed from the laws and restraints of civilized society, requires to be regulated by the appearance, if not the actual force, of power.

"The annual, if not semi-annual, visit of one of our ships of war to these islands, is conceived to be necessary; and would, no doubt, be attended with the best advantages, affording to our commerce, in these seas, protection, assistance, and security.

"For this station, a sloop of war would be sufficient for every purpose required; and, if so arranged as to visit these islands



in the months of March, April, and May, and again in October and November, every desired object would then be effected, and the result be, that our merchantmen, and whalers would come to the islands with perfect security; their tarry here made safe, and many abuses and inconveniences with which they are now shackled, would be done away. The very knowledge that a ship of war would semi-annually be at the Sandwich Islands, would be of infinite service to our commerce in general, which enters the waters of the North Pacific ocean.

"Since my residence on these islands, as an officer of government, I have repeatedly, in the discharge of my official duties, felt the want of protection and aid from the power of my government. I have been compelled to see the guilty escape with impunity; the innocent suffer without a cause; the interests of my countrymen abused; vessels compelled to abandon the object of their voyage, in consequence of desertion and mutiny; and men, who might be made useful to society, suffered to prowl amongst the different islands, a disgrace to themselves and their country, and an injury to others, whom they are corrupting, and encouraging to do wrong. From such sources, our commerce, in this quarter of the world, has suffered much; and I have the confidence to believe that the regular visit of our ships of war to these islands, (their commanders being clothed with sufficient power to act,) would have the best tendency to regulate all things, and secure to our commerce in this quarter every thing of which it now so importantly feels the want.

"I would suggest to yourself the propriety of recommending to our government that a ship of war be detached for the protection of American commerce in these waters, that she be required annually to visit the Society and Marquesas Islands, and, semi-annually, the Sandwich Islands; that in the intermediate periods when she might not be employed at such islands, it shall be required that she visit the ports of California and Mexico, to afford protection to our commerce and citizens in that quarter, where they have for a long time been suffering under the abuses of an ill-regulated government.

"I might point out to you many more and important reasons, why our commerce in these waters requires more protection, they are constantly coming under my observation, and I daily see the propriety and necessity that our government should act as I have suggested to you; but I will forbear to trouble you longer with this report, which, though superficial, I hope will, with information you may obtain from other sources, be sufficient to answer the object for which you addressed me on the 19th instant.

"Be pleased to accept for yourself the assurance of the respect and esteem with which

"I am, sir, your obedient servant,

(Signed)

"JOHN C. JONES, JR."

"To W. C. B. Finch, Esq commanding U. S. ship Vincennes."

## LETTER LX.

A RIDE TO THE COUNTRY HOUSE OF GOVERNOR BOKI, AND EVENING ENTERTAINMENT BY THE KING.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Port of Honolulu,  
November 5th, 1829

At the close of the commercial transactions on Monday, Governor Boki informed Captain Finch and myself, that the king, princess, and queen regent were to spend the next day with him and Madam Boki, at a cottage occupied by them in the valley of the Nuanu, directly inland from the port; adding, that he should be happy to see us, and any of the officers who might choose to take the ride, *en famille*, with them. A trip to the celebrated Pari or Pass of Kolau, within a couple of miles of the residence of the governor, being yet an unaccomplished object with us, we readily accepted the invitation; and a delightful day, indeed, it proved to be.

The captain, Lieutenant Stribling, and myself, landed immediately after breakfast. My companions were supplied with horses by Mr. Jones and Mr. French; and I, through the kindness of the owner, with a beautiful animal, the property of Madam Hali-  
leo, wife of the king's private secretary. The palace yard had been appointed as a place of rendezvous with the chieftains; and, on mounting, we rode there to join them.

The regent, among other equipages, has a handsomely finished and expensive gig, of foreign manufacture. She made great use of it till the occurrence

lately, of a disaster or two, when taking the air in it. On one occasion, in driving herself in the vicinity of her country house at Manao, absorbed in more important musings, she did not sufficiently regard the narrowness of the road on the bank of a taro patch, filled with mud and water; and found her portly figure very suddenly transferred, without much regard to the manner or attitude in which she was left, from the height of her vehicle into the mire below; and not long afterwards, General Kekuanaoa, in acting the beau to her, gave a practical demonstration of the readiness with which the centre of gravity of a high gig, containing two nobles of three hundred pounds each, may be shifted in turning a corner. In both cases her majesty escaped material injury; but since these events, she has been content with a more unpretending establishment—a little, low car of green, with two wheels, drawn by a pair of shaggy, grey donkeys, driven *tandem*, with a harness of undressed goat skin.

On the present occasion, as the road in some parts is not well fitted for wheels, she chose to dismiss the donkeys, and to commit her safety, in the draught of the barrow, to bipeds, who could be managed by word of mouth, without hazarding the uncertainty of the rein; and on our arrival at the palace, we found her already seated under an umbrella in her vehicle, with six or eight stout islanders in readiness to transport her up the valley, and a numerous train on foot bearing the various appendages of her service.

The princess, in a black dress, with a mantle of scarlet satin, and white silk hat trimmed with flowers, rode a spirited black horse, with Maaro, her secretary, and a dozen others of her household and followers in company; while the king was mounted on an iron grey, and surrounded by a suite of twenty-five or thirty chieftains and favourites on fine and well-equipped horses. Captain Finch, Mr. Strib-

ling, and myself, made up the number ; forming a cavalcade of fifty on horseback, while as many accompanied us on foot, to bear water flagons, &c. and to take charge of the horses in dismounting.

By ten o'clock we were all in readiness ; and as we issued from the yard, through the gate opening in the rear upon the country, presented, in our various groupings and equipments, no little of the aspect, for this part of the world at least, of a royal party on an excursion of pleasure.

The morning was delightful ; the heavens of the finest blue, and the sun, though bright, not oppressive, with the trade-wind blowing freshly from the mountains in our faces. All things without, and seemingly all within, joined to produce a flow of spirits the most buoyant and cheering. Our horses, full of nerve and muscle, partook in no small degree of the excitement of feeling ; and, impatient of even the slight restraint we had any disposition to impose on them, pranced gaily over the swelling grounds at the foot of Fort Hill, as we wound round it to the entrance of the valley : the restiveness of some (among others, those of the king and his immediate escort,) being such as to lead their riders occasionally to diverge from the direct road ; and, by taking a sweep of half a mile with unchecked rein, to reduce them to a degree of sobriety better suited to the convenience of the general retinue.

The king is exceedingly fond of the exercise of riding, and is an accomplished horseman. In his whole air and attitude, and in the ease and gracefulness of his movements, he need scarce shun a comparison with the most admired of the Spanish caballeros, seen on the coast. He has been instructed by a skilful English groom still in his service, and owns a stud of more than a hundred.

After crossing the first stream, and mounting the opposite bank, the ascent for several miles is gradual,

affording extensive views on either hand and towards the sea, of the rich plantations with which the mouth of the valley is filled. At the end of three or four miles, we came again upon a stretch of the road just on the battle ground, where the victory of Tamehameha over the king of Oahu, about thirty-five years ago, decided the fortunes of that successful warrior, and made him monarch of the group.

Here Kauikeauoli, with several of the more intelligent of his companions, had drawn up; and waited the arrival of the captain, who was in company with the princess, in order to acquaint him with the historical interest of the ground, and to point out the stations of the respective parties, their numbers, and the character and issue of the contest. The group presented, as we gathered round him to listen to his statement, connected with the scene in the history of the islands which has imparted its interest to the ground, would have afforded a subject scarce beneath the pencil of a master, while it told a tale, by the contrast of its parts thus brought together in the passing exhibition, and by imagination of that long since gone by, worthy of a place on canvass.

In the centre was the youthful sovereign, such as I have described him—of fine figure and easy manners, in a handsome riding suit, and mounted on a noble animal, of a species, the name of which had probably never here been heard on the day of this decisive battle—descanting, while his eye sparkled with intelligence and interest in the theme, on the feats of the savage ancestor who had secured to him his dominion. By his side, in the attire of an elegant female, and equally well mounted, was his sister, sharing no little in the animation of his narrative, while clustered round, on horseback, were forty or fifty chosen friends and companions, with every appearance, in the dress and manners of the whole, of no contemptible degree of civilization, and ever

refinement. With this group in your eye for a foreground, dear H——, fill up the picture for the wild glen with thousands of a savage race in all the fury of a deadly conflict, foe struggling in nakedness with foe, while barbarous menaces and hideous shouts, amidst the brandishment and hurling of spears and war-clubs, add to the terrors of the sight. And, when the piece is thus sketched, would you imagine, that the figures of the foreground and those of the filling up are people of the same race? of the same age? and almost of the same quarter of a century. Would you believe the civilized and christian brother and sister, the eldest scarce sixteen, to be the son and the daughter of the most fearful of the leaders of the savage horde? Yet such is the fact; and such the strength of contrast, which the changes of little more than thirty years here present.

Less than two miles from the battle-ground, brought us, by a fine stretch of turnpike, down a gentle hill, to a grove of acacia, surrounding the temporary abode of Boki, a rural and refreshing spot, on a slight elevation near the road side, beneath the shade of some beautiful trees, and within hearing of the rumbling of numerous mountain torrents, and the dashing of a distant cascade.

Every thing around was admirably suited to refresh and delight us; and two or three hours past rapidly after our ride, in lounging and in conversation, while we were served with fruit and wine.

Captain Finch, Mr. Stribling, the princess, three or four of her train, and myself, then rode to the Pari, two miles farther up the glen; and after enjoying with great admiration the magnificence of its scenery, returned to a dinner which we had been apprised was in preparation.

Our return, towards night, to the town, was as delightful as the ride in the morning had been; and the day was pleasantly closed at the mission-house,

where the band had been ordered from the ship, for the serenade of an hour or two.

The *dîner de Champêtre* of Governor Boki was followed, last night, by an entertainment by the king. The invitations to Captain Finch, and the officers in general, were in writing, and brought on board by the private secretary. Seven o'clock was the hour appointed, but it was past eight before all the company, consisting of the principal chiefs, most of the missionaries, both ladies and gentlemen, including the Rev. Mr. Whitney, and Mrs. Whitney, who arrived from Tauai a few days since, and as many of the officers of the Vincennes as could leave the ship at the same time, had assembled. The palace was well lighted, the company well-dressed, and, with the band from our ship playing at the entrance, the effect was equal to that of the morning levee.

At nine o'clock we became seated at a supper-table, handsomely laid in china and glass for thirty-five, or more; with dishes and covers of silver-plate: the king occupied the head, and Madam Boki, as the matron of his household, the foot of the table; while Captain Finch was placed in the centre, on one side, between the princess and the queen regent, with Governor Boki, and Mr. Bingham as interpreter, opposite. The princess returned the compliment of the captain, in wearing her feather cape at the examination, by exhibiting upon her neck on this occasion, an exquisitely wrought gold chain of the manufacture of Panama, which he had presented to her as a mark of private respect and friendship. To the king he had given, in the same manner, a large and handsomely-framed print of the Declaration of Independence, by Colonel Trumbull, which was pleased also to see occupying a conspicuous place in the apartment.

The entertainment consisted of three courses: first, cold meats, ham and tongues sliced, with bis-

cuit and butter, &c.; second, coffee and tea, with different kinds of cake; third, fruits, melons, bananas, grapes, &c., with cider, and a variety of wines. In this last article, however, his majesty had suffered an imposition from his wine merchant in the village, that extended to his guests; for while he had ordered the best in store, and had paid an exorbitant price, as Governor Boki informed us, notwithstanding a great show of seals and marks, as if from the cellar of a genuine *bon-vivant*, it was, for the most part, a villanous manufacture. This, however, was no drawback to the enjoyment of the evening, and it was near twelve o'clock before, serenaded by the band, we pulled off to the ship.

---

## LETTER LXI.

### SECOND VISIT TO LAHAINA.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, off Hawaii,  
Nov. 11th, 1829.

EARLY after the arrival at Oahu, of the chieftains from Maui and Hawaii, Captain Finch determined to invite them to return to their respective islands, in the Vincennes, with a design of asking the king also to make the voyage.

I acted as interpreter in delivering the invitation. It was highly gratifying to them; and the general exclamation on hearing it was, "This is indeed a joy-making man-of-war!" Thursday the 5th inst. was the day appointed for the embarkation, and at four o'clock in the afternoon the whole company were brought on board by the captain, in a procession of the ship's boats, under a salute of twenty-one guns, returned by the fort, the Tamehamehe having previously fired the same number, as the boats passed her in the harbour.

The whole party was highly respectable in their appearance and demeanour, as well as in their rank.



No one unacquainted with the state of the nation would have believed the baggage brought on board previously to the embarkation, to be that of a company of natives, consisting of highly ornamented and showy travelling trunks, carpet-bags, portmantaus, writing-desk, dressing-cases, portfolios, band-boxes, &c.

During the voyage the chiefs were seated at the cabin-table, going through all the forms of polished society; changing their dresses for dinner, &c., and exhibiting, in other respects, no little acquaintance with the etiquette of high life. A principal amusement with them, especially in the evening, on deck, was in singing hymns. Of these they are very fond, and have learned to sing so well, especially the king and his sister, that no one can listen to them without interest and pleasure.

The visit was equally a surprise and a joy, both to the missionaries and the people, and I have had the happiness of spending two more days delightfully with them. Yesterday at noon, however, I was called painfully to bid them a final adieu; and we once more took our anchor, from the midst of a fleet of whale ships, and filled away for Hawaii, with a salute, answered by a battery planted near the landing.

Among other tokens of affection and remembrance sent you, dear H——, I find a letter of the princess, of which the following is a literal translation:—

" Lahala, Maui, Nov. 10th, 1809.

" Where art thou, my greatly beloved mother, Mrs. Stewart?

" I write to you with <sup>tears</sup> ~~anguish~~ of heart, that we no more meet in person, and that ~~our eyes~~ <sup>our eyes</sup> no more fall upon each other, though I believe, that in mind and feelings we are ever one, and thus dwell together. Still my heart is pained within me.

" At the time we met Mr. Stewart, my sorrow of spirit was relieved; but as my eyes fell on his face, my love for you

was revived. How shall I express my affection for you, and for your children?

"It becomes me to acquaint you with some of my feelings at the present time. I am, externally, among the people of God, and employed in acts of religion, though not perhaps with full purpose of heart. It is, however, my inmost desire for ever to repose on the couch of righteousness, and for this I daily entreat the Lord that he would establish his kingdom in my heart, and grant me his exceeding grace.

"My mind is often on passing trifles, but by no means with that intensity of feeling and strong desire with which, I think, my soul is fixed on the ways of piety. I truly feel that my supreme wish is after holiness; but still I perceive that a single day by no means passes without sin. One day my thoughts are fixed on God, another day I am ensnared; and thus it is continually.

"These things I say, that you may be acquainted with my real character. I think that my inmost spirit seeks after righteousness as my constant companion.

"Jane Young (her bosom friend) sends much love to you, with strong regret that she never saw you. She in reality has great affection for you. Again I must express my own affection for you, my beloved friend in the Lord Jesus Christ, who alone can give us life in the world without end. Great love to all your friends and connexions.

"HARIETA KIOPUOLANI."

## LETTER LXII.

### THREE DAYS AT KEARAKEKUA AND KAAVAROA.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, off Hawaii,  
November 17th, 1821.

AT mid-day on the 13th, we came to anchor in the memorable bay of Kearakekua. We had the evening before been so near the entrance of it, that the double canoe of Kapiolani, a beautiful boat of the kind, with neatly-made canvass sails, and well manned with paddlers, came off, and took her ladyship to the shore.

I was very agreeably disappointed in the appearance of the country around this bay. A black and desolate precipice of lava immediately overhangs it, and the village of Kaavaroa, at its base on the left, stands upon a bare platform of the same; but every

thing inland, above the cliff, is verdant and refreshing, covered with plantations, groves, and single trees, with a forest beyond, overtopped majestically by Mounaroa in the distance.

Our company remained on board to dinner, and did not disembark till towards evening. The voyage of Governor Adams, as well as that of Naihé and Kapiolani, was to terminate here; and the salute under which they left, had a grand effect, in the reverberations of the cliffs adjoining. I was one of the number who went on shore with the party, landing in front of Naihé's dwelling, on the very spot at which the unfortunate Cook perished. But a widely different exhibition from the savage and murderous scene of that day, awaited our arrival. From a lofty and spacious building, enclosed with a neat court, by a palisade fence and painted gate, our noble friend Kapiolani was seen issuing, in the dress and with the air of a dignified matron at home; her face, at all times amiable and benignant, beaming with joy, as, with out-stretched arms, and tears starting in her eyes, she welcomed us with the customary "*Aloha, aloha!*" repeated again and again, in a tone of kindness and warmth that proved it to come from a bosom filled with hospitality and every generous affection.

It was near tea-time, and, in the centre of the hall a large table was laid in a handsome service of china; and, after a short stroll in the hamlet, and the rehearsal of the tragedy of Captain Cook's death on the rocks, at the edge of the water into which he fell, we surrounded it with greater delight than I had before experienced, in observing the improvement that has taken place in the domestic and social habits of the chiefs.

The satisfaction derived from witnessing these exhibitions of household management and civilized life, was the greater to me, from the fact, that, with

the exception of our ship's company, there was not a white person nearer to Kaavaroa than at Kairua, the residence of Governor Adams, sixteen miles distant. Kapiolani alone was perceived evidently to be the mover and director of the whole.

It was not intended that the Vincennes should touch at Kairua ; and one of the three days we remained at Kearakekua, I appropriated to a visit to Mr. and Mrs. Thurston, at that place. My friends Magruder and Buchanan accompanied me. Kapiolani, with as much cheerfulness, and seeming joy, as if the kindness were in her own favour, appropriated her double canoc, with its complement of men, to our use, in making the excursion ; a conveyance altogether better adapted to the trip than any one of the ship's boats.

As it was necessary for us to return the same day, we were off before the dawn of the morning, while the land-breeze still blew freshly from the mountains, and the stars twinkled brightly in the sky.

The sunrise views of Mounaroa behind, and of Mouna-huararai before, with the uplands of the intervening coast, were highly coloured and beautiful—separate from the other inducements, worth the sail to be enjoyed—and with the novelty of our conveyance, and the constantly changing scenes along a thickly inhabited shore, prevented all tedium on our way.

By ten o'clock we had arrived at our destination. The governor was still at Kearekekua, all the chiefs of the place had joined him there : Mr. Bishop and family were at Oahu, and Mr. Thurston's establishment some distance inland ; so that our first call was at a storehouse and retail shop of Mr. French, in charge of a China-man. He received us kindly, and furnished us with refreshments of biscuit, preserved ginger, and wine ; after partaking which, we directed our course in search of Mr. Thurston. Hav-

ing heard, from the natives, of our arrival, we soon met him, on his way to guide and welcome us to his dwelling. He was always a favourite associate of mine, when residing at the islands, and the meeting with himself and with Mrs. Thurston was both cordial and affecting. Their lot is cast truly "in a dry and thirsty land," so far as the immediate location of their residence, and indeed of the whole of Kairua, is regarded; still they appeared comfortable and happy in their establishment; and though alone, in the midst of thousands who, as it were only yesterday, were lost in heathenism, are cheerfully and successfully pursuing the work to which they have devoted their lives.

In the fore-part of the day we walked again into the town; visited governor Adam's residence, an American house, of frame, brought over and erected here, well finished, papered, and painted, both without and within, and furnished, in all its rooms, almost exclusively in the European style. We also passed through the chapel, an immense building; and, when completed four years ago, the finest native structure in the group. Near it, on one side, within a small enclosure, is one object of deep and tender interest—the lowly grave of Mrs. Bishop, the companion of our voyage in the *Thames*, and our friend and associate; the first of this mission who has gone to her rest, and the first whose body has taken possession of the grave, in pledge that, even from these distant isles, there yet shall be "a resurrection of the just."

After a hospitable repast, prepared by Mrs. Thurston, we all, including herself and children, with natives to bear torches, descended into the cave of Ranakira, which opens on their grounds. For a description of this, however, I will refer you to Mr. Ellis's "*Tour of Hawaii*," in which every object and scene of physical and historic interest, in this section

of the island, is noticed in a minute, able, and interesting manner.

The principal difference in the appearance of the sabbath assemblages of islanders at this, and the other stations we had visited, was in the place of worship; a small grove of trees immediately in front of Naihé's house, paved with a natural bed of smooth lava. The chapel is entirely too small to accommodate the immense congregation that assemble from the opposite side of the bay, and from along the coast many miles below. Not less than five thousand were supposed to be clustered round the preacher and circle of chieftains in the centre of the grove, as quiet, orderly, and seemingly devout, though half, at least, of the number were seated in the open sun, as if each knew and felt that he was listening for eternity.

A more pleasing and impressive scene can scarce be sketched, than that presented in the dispersion of the audience at the close of the afternoon service. By far the greater portion of the multitude had arrived by water; and, shortly after the benediction had been pronounced, without a rude or noisy word, or a single impropriety, unnumbered canoes were launched into every point of the rocky shore, and, receiving their respective complement of passengers, shoved off upon the bosom of the bay, filled with bright and happy looks, and spread their white sails in a return to their respective abodes. The evening sun gleamed brightly, and to me joyously, upon the humble fleet; and the whole sight, with its associations of promise, in reference to the future and eternal destinies of this race, was so delightful, that I could not avoid counting the canoes, as we rowed off to the ship; and, though many had already passed out of sight beyond the southern point, and many were yet unlaunched, I numbered two hundred and ten, each containing from three to fifteen persons, many of

whom weré twelve and fourteen miles, and some even a greater distance, from their homes.

Such is the interest and excitement, on the subject of religion and of personal piety, along the whole coast, and over a good portion of the island, that Mr. and Mrs. Thurston assured me it was literally true, that they were denied the ordinary hours of sleep and eating, by the visits of persons demanding instruction in the way of salvation. Numbers daily crowded their premises for this purpose, not only from their immediate neighbourhood, but from regions at a distance—parties travelling on foot many weary miles, and carrying their food with them, to supply their wants while encamped for a few days, or even for a few hours, near the mission-house, their only business the important inquiry, “What shall we do to be saved?”

On Monday afternoon, the chiefs visited the ship: one of the most interesting of the party was a tall, venerable, fine-featured old lady, with benignant expression of countenance, and head white as silver: she appeared to be eighty years of age, though probably is not so old, and was the wife, in her youth, of Taraniopu, or Taraiopu, king of the island in the time of Cook, and the great-grandfather, on the maternal side, of the present king. Under any circumstances, the sight of an individual thus associated with the discovery of the islands, and the fate of the lamented navigator, would be interesting; but facts, connected with her recent history, rendered it doubly so: she has lived, not only to see the introduction of the religion of salvation into her long-benighted country, but has shared, as is confidently believed, its richest blessings, in

“soul renewed, and sins forgiven.”—

is a member of the church, and has so applied herself to the acquisition of letters, as to be able to read the word of God in her native language, and daily

to drink, from its pure fountain, of the waters of eternal life.

We returned to the shore, with the whole party, in the evening; and reflected, with sincere regret, that we were, for the last time, enjoying the hospitality of the counsellor and his wife. Fire-works and rockets had been ordered to be exhibited from the ship; and, at the time appointed for them, Kapiolani, Captain Finch, Mr. Bingham, and myself, took seats on a platform of stone, at the side of the house next the bay. After the show had ceased, the captain, in preparation for his departure, requested Mr. Bingham to express to Kapiolani the very great pleasure his visit to her had afforded him, and to present his warm thanks for the hospitality and kindness he had received; adding, that he had not, since he left America, been entertained more cordially, or felt himself more happy, than under her roof.

Mr. Bingham having some writing to finish before going off to the ship, I remained with him after all the boats had left; Kapiolani having engaged to send us in a canoe, whenever we might wish to go on board. In the room which Mr. Bingham occupied, I perceived some manuscript books in the native language, on a table; and, on inquiring what they were, was no little surprised to learn, that it was an autobiography of this chief woman, intended to embrace the history of her own life and times; and in which she has proceeded, already, through several interesting and not unimportant chapters.

It was nearly twelve o'clock before Mr. Bingham was prepared to go to the ship. On entering the principal house again, we found the family at evening prayers; where the farewell I was called to take was truly painful.



## LETTER LXIII.

## PRIVATE LETTER OF CAPTAIN FINCH TO THE KING.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Port of Honolulu,  
November 21, 1829.

AFTER an unusually boisterous passage of two days from Kearakekua, we entered this harbour again on the morning of the 19th instant.

When at sea, off Hawaii, one evening, Captain Finch, on going into the cabin, found Madam Boki at the writing-table, busily occupied with her pen; while the king, at the same time, was dictating a letter to his private secretary. There was no other person in the cabin; and it appeared, from the following notes, that they were improving the opportunity, to express their gratitude for the pleasure of the voyage, soon to be brought to a close by our return to Oahu. I furnish you with a translation of the notes of each.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, November, 1829

"Affection for you all, the officers of this ship of war, and for you, Captain Finch.

"Great, indeed, is my gratitude to you, for your excellent attention in conducting us thus far. Very sincere, also, is my commendation of you all; and of the well-doing of your people toward us.

"Now, on account of my affection for you, as you are about to return to your own country, while we shall abide in our own land, with grateful remembrance of you all, I give this testimony of my love to you, Captain Finch, and to the officers of this ship of war. My thoughts bless you.

"With sincerest love and joy,

"KAUIKEAOUI."

"Love to you all, our fellow-travellers on the ocean. You have kindly attended to us, on board your ship, until we have arrived at this part of our country. When you shall have restored us to our own places, then you will leave us entirely: we shall remain with the remembrance of our having travelled together with you all, and our affection for you will be mingled with sorrow.

"LILINA."

The note from the king received in answer, from Captain Finch, the following judicious and important private letter of advice.

TO KAUIKEAOULI, KING OF THE HAWAIIAN  
ISLANDS.

"As I am about to depart from your islands, I feel it becoming on my part, and due to you, to state, that I shall quit you with feelings of increased interest for your prosperity and advancement, in all matters of general and individual utility. And I avail myself of this occasion to make my acknowledgments for the hospitable reception which the Vincennes has enjoyed, at each of the places under your jurisdiction, where she has touched.

"I beg you to permit me to advert again to some topics, upon which I have already addressed you formally, and which I deem of essential consequence to yourself and people; I mean those as to the desertion and the subsequent secretion of mariners from their vessels. I recollect that you have, in a general way, told me that you would try and prevent such abuses. My object is, to suggest some means in aid of those you may have adopted on these points.

"It has been clearly shown to you already, and you are so well convinced, that your own good is involved in these practices, that I need not recapitulate the arguments thereon, which I have verbally used.

"But I would suggest to you, in lieu of one of your regulations on these subjects, that it will be found more effectual, in the recovery of deserters and fugitives, if you will forbid the receipt of rewards, as now asked by your common people, on the apprehension of such persons; and the assumption of the expenses by your governments, to be refunded to you alone, by the masters of vessels, on delivery of runaways.

"As the common people are now in the expectation of obtaining rewards for services in these cases, it is believed to be a practice with them to entice sailors ashore, and to secrete them for a while, only to betray them ultimately when remuneration is offered.

"A regulation forbidding, also, your people (under some penalty in money or produce) from harbouring, or sheltering and feeding sailors, straying idly in the country, for any time, without occasional obvious and useful employment, will also be beneficial.

"I would further recommend to you to forbid masters of vessels from discharging or permitting men to leave their vessels in your harbours. Should they persist in doing so,

I would not allow supplies to be carried to them. If men are discharged, it ought to be with your knowledge and concurrence. I think masters of vessels will comply with your wishes in these respects, when distinctly communicated to them.

"All sick sailors, left on shore, should be taken care of by the consuls, or owners, or agents of vessels to which they belong; and as soon as sufficiently recovered, ought to be returned to their respective vessels, or sent by the consuls, or agents, in other conveyances, to their several countries, or entered on board such vessels as may want or may accept, their services.

"The regent, Kahumanu, once asked me, what a consul had to do here? I will again answer, to take care of our general shipping interest; that he has his orders from the government; that his duties are cautiously defined; and he ought not to be interfered with, except by application or reference directly from yourself to the president.

"In the enactment of all laws or regulations, I think it will be for your benefit, and the good of all persons, if you will ask the advice and opinions of all the foreigners resident at the islands, in whom you have confidence. They will, no doubt, accord to it. If they do not, then you shall frame the best laws which your knowledge will enable you to do; conforming, as far as possible, to what has always been the common law or usages of the land; and if, on trial, you find them unsuited or oppressive, alter them to suit circumstances. Laws of some kind are necessary every where, particularly for your exterior relations; the fewer, and the more simple, the better; and the sooner you set about making an attempt, the sooner, of course, you can perfect a system. Wise laws are the highest achievements of the human mind.

"In the letter which I had the happiness to present to you on my first introduction, you have a distinct view of the feelings of my government towards you, and can easily comprehend the course of conduct on your part which will be most acceptable to it; and also the most reasonable, as well as permanently useful to both parties.

"The government of the United States entertains the sincerest desire to preserve you in all your sovereign and local rights, so far as they may be infringed, or openly violated, by acts of its citizens; and, in return, will only expect strict justice towards them, and a fair reciprocity in all transactions.

"The general objects of a cruising ship, or man-of-war, are the care and preservation of the lives and property of our citizens, where governments do not exist for that purpose, or where governments are unwindful of their obligations.

"If any wants or disaffection are expressed by our trading interest here, (in such communications as the merchants may send by me,) they will meet the attention of my government; but I hope it will appear that little cause of complaint exists. Had any been foreseen or known, probably my orders might have had especial reference to the cases.

"As a further method to confirm the attachment of my countrymen, which is useful to you, and to elevate yourself in your own estimation, and place your government truly upon an independent basis, I must urge the perfect liquidation of your debts at the period promised, and a care not to contract others. Unless free of debt, or with ability to discharge it, no nation takes its equal place among others.

"Soon after I arrived, strangers pointed out to me two taverns; one as belonging to the king, and the other to Governor Boki. The impression made upon me, by this information, was unfavourable to you both. Such establishments are necessary in a port like Honolulu, but they ought to be conducted by private individuals. In the direct gains arising from them you should not participate, nor ought you to frequent them. Very few should be allowed, and, on such as are permitted, a high revenue, or tax, might be imposed; by which means your receipts would be increased, and the burden at present resting on the industrious will be lightened. The opportunity which has been afforded me of becoming personally acquainted with you, (by your having been my guest on board ship for some time,) has, I am happy to say, conduced greatly to enlist my affections for your personal credit and welfare; and your advancement in the acquisition of our language and letters persuades me to urge you to pursue English studies diligently. By a due division of your time between studies, business, and becoming pleasures, your life will be rendered delightful to yourself, and beneficial to those who, by circumstances, are placed under your protection; and who must ultimately look up to you for example. You are yet young; now is the period to lay the foundation in your character for extensive usefulness. Ere long, the cares of government must devolve on you alone. Kaahumanu and your other friends are advanced in years, and must soon, in the course of nature, be taken from you.

"The geographical situation of your inheritance is so peculiarly favourable, that no one can foresee the degree of importance it is to attain; every year its additional consequence will be apparent to you; therefore I again repeat, acquire the English language. It will open to you an unlimited field of knowledge; in the right use of which you may found a name more imperishable and enduring than the islands

of Hawaii. I will only add one other recommendation, which is, the semi-annual or annual meeting of the great chiefs, for the revision of your state affairs, alternately, for convenience sake, at Honolulu and Lahaina.

"All that I have said you will, I think, receive in the spirit of kindness, and as coming from your friend.

"W. C. B. FINCH."

"November 21, 1829."

## LETTER LXIV.

### DEPARTURE FROM OAHU, AND LETTER OF THE KING TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, at Sea,  
November 24th, 1829.

AT the request of the king, who wished to write a letter by Captain Finch to the President, the Vincennes remained at Honolulu one day longer than the time originally fixed for sailing. This morning, however, immediately after breakfast, we left the harbour and remained outside the reef, till his majesty's communication should be sent off.

At twelve o'clock, the boat of the private secretary was reported alongside; and, as soon as he had delivered the despatches, we filled away with a salute, before so fresh a breeze, that as the evening just now closed round us, the faintest outline of Oahu behind, and of Tauai forty or fifty miles on our right, could scarcely be discerned in the haze of the distance.

Thus, my dear H——, I have a second time bidden a supposed final adieu to the Sandwich Islands; but now, through the kindness of God, under auspices far more happy than on the previous occasion. Then, every imagination of the future, equally with every remembrance of the past, was shrouded in gloom; and fearful apprehensions of sorrows just at hand, whose depth can only be told by those who have experienced them, gave double poignancy to thoughts and feelings of deep interest

and affection lingering on things, and scenes, and friends behind. But now, while warm love for many a justly endeared object, and the liveliest interest in the glorious work of blessing and salvation there triumphantly achieving, filled my eyes with tears, and my heart with prayer, as the beautiful island receded rapidly from our gaze, no existing circumstances denied me a full participation in the bright looks and joyous anticipations of my companions, who felt that, after an absence of more than three years, their faces were now fully set towards all most dear, in country, family, and friends; and as we crowded sail upon sail, till we exhibited a mountain of canvass, widely bellying to the wind, the language of every heart and every eye, from the quarter-deck to the fore-castle, was

" Home, sweet, sweet home "

On opening the packet of the king, the following translation of the document addressed by him to the president was found. Both the original and translation are in his own handwriting.

#### TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

Island of Hawaii, November 23d, 1829.

" FIRST affection to you, the chief magistrate of America. This is my sentiment for you; I have joy and gratitude towards you on account of your kind regard for me. I now know the excellence of your communicating to me that which is right and true. I approve with admiration the justness and faultlessness of your word.

" I now believe that your thoughts and ours are alike, both those countries and these countries, and all large countries. We are the children, the little islands far off in this tropical climate.

" We have recently had an interview with Captain Finch, with joyfulness and with sentiments of kindness and pleasure towards him. I do now hope there will be a perfect agreement between you and us, as to the rights and duties of both of our governments, that the peace now subsisting between us may be perpetual, that the seat of our prosperity may be broad, and our union of heart in things that are right, such,

that the highways of the ocean may not diverge ; because there is a oneness of sentiment in our hearts, with those distant countries, these islands, and all lands.

“ May our abiding by justice triumphantly prevail, that all who come hither may be correct in deportment, and all who go thither from this country.

“ This is my desire, that you and we may be of the same mind. Such, too, is my hope that we may pursue the same course, that we may flourish, and that true prosperity may rest perpetually on all the nations of the world in which we dwell.

“ Look ye on us with charity ; we have formerly been extremely dark-minded, and ignorant of the usages of enlightened countries. You are the source of intelligence and light. This is the origin of our minds being a little enlightened—the arrival here of the word of God. This is the foundation of a little mental improvement which we have recently made, that we come to know a little of what is right, and of the customs of civilized nations. On this account do we greatly rejoice at the present time.

“ I give you thanks, too, for your bestowing kindly on me the globes and the map of your country, to be a means of mental improvement for me, and also for your other presents to my friends, who rejoice with me in the reception of the favours which you have granted them.

“ Long life to you in this world, and lasting blessedness to you and us in the world to come.

(Signed)

“ KAUIKEAOULI TANĀHAMEHA III.”

## LETTER LXV.

RETROSPECTIVE VIEW OF THE VISIT AT THE SANDWICH ISLANDS, BY CAPTAIN FINCH.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, at Sea.  
November 30th, 1829.

EARLY after the arrival of our ship at Oahu, it became evident, that the policy and course of conduct pursued by Captain Finch was any thing but agreeable, to a majority of the foreign residents. Even before its public delivery, the letter of the secretary of the navy, addressed by the authority of the president to the king, was denounced by those made acquainted with its contents, as “ a most per-

nicious document." And it was soon intimated, that a remonstrance of the principal American citizens, in reference to it, would be returned to the government, through the secretary of state, by the Vincennes.

Such a document is on board. I have not seen it; but common report made me acquainted with its character, before leaving Honolulu. It consists of a protest, against the channel through which the president thought proper to communicate with the king, the secretary of the navy, rather than the secretary of state; of a denial of any right in the secretary to inform his majesty, that the religion of the "Christian's Bible" is the true religion; or, to recommend the missionaries, as American citizens, to his kindness and protection; of a declaration, that any charge of ill-conduct in any American citizen at the islands is false; in an avowal, that, even if such were not the case, the government of the United States have no cognizance of offences committed by its citizens beyond the limits of its jurisdiction; and in a remonstrance against the propriety of introducing my name in a governmental paper.

I am spared the necessity, however, my dear H——, not only of any comments of my own on this subject, but also, of any summary remarks on the state of the mission and of the island, by a "Retrospective View" of our visit, written by Captain Finch, with a copy of which I am furnished. Any one acquainted with the intelligence and acuteness of observation which characterizes his mind, with the candour of his judgment, and the integrity of his principles, will at once accord an approval to the justness of his strictures, and the correctness of his views; and, with this article, I cheerfully close my account of the present condition of the Sandwich Islands.



A RETROSPECTIVE VIEW OF THE VISIT TO THE SANDWICH, OR HAWAIIAN ISLANDS. FROM OCT. 2, TO NOV. 24, 1829.

" AFTER an absence of nearly three years from home, on service upon the western coasts of South America, I felt as if on the certain eve of returning thither, as did the ship's company, whose terms of engagement had expired.\* The orders to proceed on an extended cruise were therefore unexpected and most unwelcome. In addition to disappointed hopes, I was little prepared, and far from being desirous of visiting islanders whose moral character was undergoing change, and whose primitive traits were fast disappearing; whether for the better, was a problem which I supposed a cursory glance and short survey would not enable me to determine. Again, I felt a reluctance to be placed in circumstances which I foresaw might involve me, as a party, in the various conflicting accounts which had been given to my government and the public, in regard to these people, and was afraid that irregularities amongst our trading or whaling vessels, and collision with the natives, might invite my interference, which, if exerted, yet probably would fall short of the exigences of the demands. Added to these considerations, I had heard of the hostility which was entertained by almost all foreigners resident at those places, where teachers of the gospel, or missionaries, had established themselves. I promised myself, on the whole, neither gratification nor usefulness, and therefore undertook the voyage with real regret; but now that it is gotten through with, I feel relieved, and look back rather with surprise that I engaged in it with apathy, or that I anticipated difficulties and a distaste which I have not, to the extent apprehended, realized.

" My visit has been performed without any occurrence other than of a pleasurable kind attending it: my interposition when called for has been mildly exercised, and availing—the objects of our government, I hope, answered—and the good effects, I fear not, will be understood by any commander, who may hereafter perform the like routine of duty. My reports collectively to the government will exhibit what I have done, as well as furnish my opinion on many points, and show the unavoidable (and supposed) defectiveness of the orders and laws under which I had to act. These are lucidly pointed out by my predecessor, Captain Jones of the *Peacock*.

\* A portion of the crew returned in the frigate *Brandywine*, the residue re-entered for a twelvemonth, and the deficiency was made up by volunteers from the frigate.

"The very advanced stage of the people of the Sandwich Islands in the points involving civilization, religion, and learning, is so well established, so generally known and admitted, that I forbore to give statements of them equally minute with those I had made respecting Nukuhiva, Tahiti, and Raiatea. Their civilities, letters of correspondence, and transaction of business with me, place them in a just light, and will enable our government to appreciate and judge, them properly without my saying a word in their favour, beyond the simple declaration, that they are much in advance of the Society Islanders, cheerfully and agreeably enlightened, acquainted limitedly with their own interests, capable of extending them, and sensible of the value of character as a nation. Their indolence of habit, and amiability of disposition, mislead the judgment of persons who deny their pretensions to intelligence and capacity for self-management or government; the first being overcome, and their knowledge fully aroused to the advantages which their locality affords, the latter objection will manifest itself to be erroneous. To aid in every way to elevate and instruct them, and increase their self-pride and confidence, ought to be a source of pleasure, as well as the policy of those foreigners who are amongst them; but such I am satisfied is neither the design nor practice of those persons: they pursue, on the contrary, a short-sighted course, watchful of their own immediate gains or advantages, apparently regardless and thoughtless of those who are to succeed them, and whose security, comfort, and prosperity, may be increased or diminished by the judicious or unwise plans they at present or may hereafter adopt. The gentlemen now at the Sandwich Islands forget that the natives are not the same naked, uninstructed creatures which they were when they first went among them, and in this forgetfulness, intentional or not it is immaterial, treat them almost precisely as they did formerly, and condemn their pretensions to knowledge and improved condition.\* Human nature cannot nor will the chiefs much longer, bear or tolerate such arrogance and injustice.† The more the respectability and importance of the chiefs and people are increased by voluntary and generous attentions from foreigners, the greater will be the security insured to them-

\* Probably exception may be fairly made to some persons of the class of foreigners.

† If *personal* profits in a sphere for general competition or operations are to be regarded as exclusive objects, then probably the original condition of the natives was more favourable formerly than now: I hope that I shall not be viewed as disposed to trammel laudable commercial enterprise.

selves. Why will they continue to enjoy the hospitality of the natives, contract engagements to large amounts with them, with full reliance upon their integrity, and yet treat them in a contumelious manner, or with indifference: such is nevertheless the inconsistency I observed.

"I am at a loss to decide wherein the foreign residents have just cause to complain of or to condemn the government of the Sandwich Islands; they affect to believe that all its measures are dictated by the missionaries. I really do not think so: they doubtless, in their station as teachers, have influence; but I rather believe it is confined as closely as is practicable or possible to that relation, and no other; unless it was perceived by them, that the government was about committing an act of indiscretion or gross blunder, I doubt if their voice would be heard. It is a most lamentable fact, that the dislike of the missionaries by the foreign residents, has a tendency, as yet, to paralyze the efforts which the natives are so laudably making to render themselves worthy of the support and confidence of enlightened christian and distant nations; and this one circumstance will render, for some time to come, the visits by our ships disagreeable to the officers who have to make them. The constant complaining against the missionaries is irksome in the extreme, and in such contrast with the conduct of the missionaries themselves, that I could not but remark their circumspection and reserve with admiration: the latter never obtruded upon my attention the grounds or causes they might have to complain; nor did they advert to the opposition they experienced, unless expressly invited thereto by me.

"If the understandings of the natives are imposed upon by the religious injunctions of the missionaries, the evil will ultimately correct itself, by the very tuition which they afford the inhabitants, more certainly and effectually than by the denunciation and declamation of foreigners, who are interested and temporary sojourners, without other than monied transactions to engage the confidence of the natives,\* whereas the missionaries have adventured their families among them, and stand pledged as to the issue of their undertaking before, not only the American public, but the world at large.

"Opposition similar to that now existing against the present missionaries would, doubtless, extend to like persons

\* The missionaries possibly are too rigidly literal in their interpretation and enforcement of the commandments; and an error may arise from this source, in the formation of provisions for police or other regulations by the native government, and in their subsequent administration and fulfilment.

of any other denomination. All of our countrymen do not think alike on the special subject of religion, and in which our government (very wisely and happily) does not interfere; but all those who visit the islands in the Pacific for trade, will feel (and rightly too) that such order grows out of the establishment of christianity in whatever form introduced, as to preclude undue advantages, ensure personal security, and place the islander on a footing of equality with his fellow-man. Why it is supposed necessary to retain the Sandwich Islanders in a state of deeper vassalage and subjection to our avarice and caprices, than those of inferior cast to ourselves at home, I am at a loss to determine. If the islanders are weary of the instruction they receive, or the restraints imposed in receiving it, they have tongues to speak, and hands to use; and, judging by the unrestrained life they have heretofore led, it is but fair to infer that they would speak and act, if causes existed for their doing so. Whilst they court knowledge, why should they be ridiculed in the search of it? Can it be shown that they have misapplied, to the injury of others, the limited acquirements which they do possess; on the contrary, is it not certain that intercourse with some of them has been rendered more easy, and confidence increased, by this very circumstance? Are they not truly their own masters, on the principle of birth, soil, and action? Wherein the right of our merchants then to interfere with them—wherein that of the missionaries—but by the best of all rights, their own invitations? The missionaries and families are also probably more than twice as numerous as the mercantile class. If not satisfied, let merchants withdraw themselves; refreshments, &c. can still be had without their agency, as heretofore, by the masters of such vessels as may frequent the islands. I would ask, if our countrymen arrogate any thing to themselves other than what the laws allow at Hayti? Do they ever openly reflect upon that government? Why will they act differently, require or expect more, at the Hawaiian Islands?

“So great was the friendship and correctness of deportment of the chief islanders, that I could scarcely suppose myself to be among a people once and so recently heathen. Variance of language and complexion alone reminded me of it. These views may very widely vary from the opinions of those who have preceded me only a year or two; I can well

\* It has been remarked to me, that Christianity was established, or rather idolatry subverted, before the arrival of the missionaries. Granted: has not the arrival of these persons confirmed these measures, and strengthened the natives in their previous convictions.

believe, that we do not keep pace (by means of our intercourse) with their improvements. Intervals of three years make wonderful changes, and for the better; careful and recorded observations only will assure us of the reality of them. The present king, as he advances in years, will, I feel pretty well persuaded, be a blessing to his people; his usefulness will, however, depend in a great measure upon the choice which he may make in a companion of his power and the cares inseparable; a doubt and difficulty rests upon this interesting point, which cannot too early be removed.

"By the diffusion of knowledge among the islanders at large, I can readily suppose that the influence of the resident whites, and the abject and slavish adulation and distinction heretofore paid to them, have been diminished in some degree;\* and will not this circumstance, to a limited extent, serve to explain the sourness and bitterness which the whites cherish, and, on many occasions, display towards the chiefs, as well as the missionaries? Suppose that undue power is exercised by either residents, merchants, or missionaries, over the government of the Sandwich Islands; from which source will either the greatest good or least evil ensue? I certainly think from the missionaries.

"It is seriously to be regretted, that the missionary society, or some liberal-minded and generous gentlemen of wealth, does not establish and maintain at the Sandwich Islands, on an adequate salary, a person of independence of character, and suitable attainments, separate from clerical avocations, merely as an adviser of the chiefs on the principles of government, jurisprudence, &c. &c.,† or, if our government would appoint salaried consuls, or a charge d'affaires to the islands, respectively, restricting them from all participation in business, the desired object might be obtained; but whilst such official personages are still merchants, their influence is comparatively small or nothing with the government, but their own, and their patron's interest, necessarily engrossing subjects.

\* A like consequence will eventually ensue to the chiefs, though I think their positions and prerogatives will never be infringed.

† It would be beneficial also, if the means of subsistence for missionaries were augmented, which, when done, will enable them, both as to personal and in general respects, to appear to more advantage (than they can at present), without any departure from proper sanctity of character. They ought, if possible, to be rendered entirely independent of the natives, or government, until both become more fully sensible of the value of the time, study, and attention which, as teachers, they bestow in their incalculably important functions.

"The various communications which I bear to my government will, I trust, awaken its more pointed attention to these islands, and to the Americans who reside in them. The protest of the merchants and traders to the principles contained in the public letter which I delivered, will claim notice; it was prepared during my short absence to Hawaii, but in my letter of the 22d of November I had anticipated its point.\* I feel constrained to utter this opinion, that its arguments are unsound, its language unbecoming and hasty, its inferences unfounded, and its implications ungenerous, and in every respect injudicious. In the same breath they, the signers, deny the jurisdiction of our government, and yet invoke protection; taunt one department with ignorance, defend the conduct of all classes of persons who have visited the islands, sit a cap to their own head, which probably was not intended for them; speak insultingly of, and denounce missionaries; unnecessarily allude to the Rev. Mr. Stewart, and insinuate, that the Vincennes has done nothing but aid in the saddling a religion on "ignorant and unsuspecting" islanders—unmindful of letters of thanks previously tendered to me for services affecting their pockets!

"Is it not meant by establishing a consulate, that it shall receive the control over our citizens within its reach, which the government of the United States indisputably would exercise, if these citizens had remained at home. A public functionary openly declares and insists, that his own government has no control over acts committed at the Sandwich Islands! Can our laws have been framed so blindly, or is this construction to be ascribed to the desires or sinister counsels of others? The signers' "powerful reasons" for fearing for their "lives and property" are not set forth, and therefore, I think, can only be creatures of their own minds, unaided by facts:† the letter, I conceive, puts no more power into the hands of the natives than belongs to them, or than they always wielded; there can be no good reasons of objection to a letter coming from the head of any department, if the president chooses to give such direction to it. I cannot perceive that the letter advocates any particular sect in religion; nor are the petitioners

\* Although the letter of protest is dated November 10, I did not receive it until the 23d of November, subsequent to my communication to the secretary of the navy, advising him of my proceedings and intended further movements.

† If, as they say, the chiefs have been made fully to understand the letters, then it follows that security must result to every body.

required or called upon to recognize or follow the religion of the islanders now, more than they were when idolatry existed. In the nature of things, it is impossible that the petitioners can assume a responsibility for the acts or conduct of all citizens who have visited the islands, or that they can undertake to establish the position that there never has been violations of the laws, or interference with the government of the islands.\* Surely the right, on the part of our government, to inquire into the conduct of its own citizens, sojourning temporarily abroad, was never until now contested; and as to the propriety of the governmental letter adverting to the appointment of Mr. Stewart, I humbly conceive that the government was quite as well qualified to judge, as the petitioners or protestors.

"Lest any thing which I have said may be construed as unduly favouring the missionaries, I take this occasion to remark, that I am not of their particular church, but am a Protestant Episcopalian, so that I am under no bias on that score.†

"I have, in my reports, expressed an interest for Nukuhiva, and given it a decided preference in point of locality over the Society Islands. I am confirmed in this predilection, and more than ever convinced that it is a most eligible place for our commerce, and that it will become, and deserves to be, the rival of Oahu. The natural tact and vivacity of the Nukuhivans are more remarkable, and superior to that of the Sandwich Islanders. The situation of the former, unless communication is had eventually over the isthmus, is far better than that of these people, for the advantages of trade by way of Cape Horn; and I earnestly hope, that the present inviting and propitious moment will be embraced, to confer benefits on the Nukuhivans, and secure commercial advantages to ourselves.

"The novel and informal way in which property in vessels is transferred at Oahu, from one individual to another individual, each of different nations, and the license and latitude under which they navigate, deserve to be looked to. Those which go to the coast of Mexico, and Northwest Coast, complain of the treatment by the authorities: I cannot say how justly, but suspect there is in this, as in almost all other cases, two sides to the same story. I rather think that

\* Probably these matters come not within the scope of the gentlemen's notice, or were not thought of before.

† There can be no doubt, that an American interest and influence are insensibly produced by benefits derived from the missionaries as American citizens.

some of the island commerce carried on by foreigners, if met with at sea by a regular cruiser, would prove a fair prize, by reason of a want of, or imperfect, papers, &c. It is quite common to see vessels at the Sandwich Islands without names on the sterns, with altered names, every medley of crew, and other circumstances unusual elsewhere.

"The various complaints which were made to me at Oahu, induce me to suppose, that great irregularities often prevail in the prosecution of this distant commerce; the severities which are sometimes practised towards crews are doubtless illegal, more harsh than in the navy, and in most instances inconsiderate; but, on the other hand, the ill-temper and recklessness of character which is often manifested by the sailors, unquestionably call for coercion and restraints of some nature: how these can be wisely delegated, is the desirable point. The ambiguity and evasion used in shipping crews are the chief evils to be removed. This is the incipient stage of all the dissensions and difficulties which ultimately arise, and most generally exist during the whole space of a voyage. On these matters, Captain Jones, of the *Peacock*, has already spoken most fully.

"Of the value of property owned by American merchants at Oahu, or of that intrusted to their care and safe-keeping, and in detail, I can form no certain opinion; but infer, from appearances, and the activity with which transfers or sales are effected, that it does not at any given period exceed eighty or one hundred thousand dollars.

"In these remarks, or review, I have abstained from giving any traditional or historical notices of the islands, their natural appearances, productions, or population, &c., all of which can be derived from numerous published accounts.

"Respectfully submitted,

"W. C. B. FINCH."

"The Honourable the Secretary of the Navy,  
Washington."



## LETTER LXVI.

## VISIT AT MACAO AND CANTON.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Chinese Sea, Jan. 25, 1830.

Two days after the date of my last letter, January 1st, we came to anchor in the roads of Macao; and, after a few days in that place, and a hasty visit to Canton, are once more at sea on our passage to Manilla.

Macao is a Portuguese city, situated on a peninsula of a large island of the same name. It is a walled town, well defended, and contains a large population, including Chinese residents and foreigners. The harbour is good for small vessels, but ships of the class of the Vincennes can only lie in the open roads, at a distance of two or three miles from the landing.

It is the summer residence of the merchants of Canton, and the only place where foreign ladies are permitted to land; of course, gentlemen who have their families with them are under the necessity of living there. Aware that Dr. Morrison was an inhabitant of this place, I early renewed the acquaintance I had the pleasure of forming with him in London in 1826, and was most cordially received by Mrs. Morrison and himself into their family. The privilege and happiness of enjoying the hospitality of such a house, and the society of such friends, especially in a land of strangers, cannot be too highly appreciated, and can never be forgotten.

Captain Finch soon became domiciliated, with Dr. Bradford, of Philadelphia, in the establishment of Mr. Latimer, a merchant of Canton, from the same city; while all the officers of the ship received every polite and kind attention from other foreign residents, including Mr. Plowden, the chief of the honourable East India Company's Factory, and other gentlemen connected with the service.

The town is well-built, cleanly, and handsome; and we spent our time very agreeably the few days that could be given to the enjoyment of its society. A principal object of interest and curiosity within the place is a grotto, or rather niche, in a rock, in which Camoëns is said to have completed the *Lusiad*. It is on the summit of a hill, in the midst of a garden and grounds tastefully laid out and well kept, commanding delightful views of the city, and of its inner and outer harbours, and might well be supposed a haunt of the muses.

The library and museum of the East India Company, an aviary of splendid birds belonging to Mr. Beal an English resident, and a small Chinese temple, were also visited by us with much gratification.

The distance from Macao to Canton is about seventy miles. After considerable difficulty and delay, arrangements were made for a party of officers to go up. It consisted of Captain Finch, Lieutenants Sullivan, Dornin, and Lardner; Mr. Buchanan, Dr. Malone; Midshipmen Bissell, Hawkins, Maury, Melville, Rowan, Wurts, and myself; but of our trip, and the few days we were in the suburbs of that city, I made only hasty notes; and must be content with saying, that we were received in the most hospitable manner by C. N. Talbot, Esq., and the other foreign residents.

Our voyage up was by what is called the outside passage; but Capt. Finch, Lieutenant Sullivan, Mr. Buchanan, and myself, returned by a route which afforded us a more extensive observation of the country. We reached Macao again on the 18th inst; took our anchor for the Philippine Islands on the 22nd; and hope to arrive at Manilla their capital, in less than forty-eight hours from the present time.

## Manilla.

### LETTER LXVII.

#### DESCRIPTION OF THE BAY AND CITY OF MANILLA.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Bay of Manilla,  
January 30th, 1830.

On the morning of the 26th inst., we descried the Island of Luçon, or Luçon, at a point fifty or sixty leagues north of the entrance of this bay; and for the two days following coasted its shore, under the alternate influence of a land and sea breeze, with the outline of a mountainous and finely-variegated country in full view.

The bay of Manilla is very extensive, ninety leagues in circumference, and the city situated on its southern shore, some twenty or twenty-five miles from the sea. We dropt anchor in our present birth early yesterday morning; and are surrounded by varied and beautiful scenery. The circuit of the bay is too wide to allow of distinct views of most of its shores; but the outline of the lofty hills and mountains sweeping round it, is traceable at most times against the sky, giving to it, as a whole, much the appearance of a noble lake.

The view of the city, however, its suburbs, and the adjoining country on either side, and far inland, is full and imposing. The city itself, enclosed by walls of dark stone, and surrounded by a broad moat, lies on the north side of the river Pasig, here flowing into the bay, while the suburbs, containing a ten-fold population, lie across the same stream on the north.

The aspect of the two sections presents a striking contrast. The dark, moss-covered, walls on the one side, screening every thing from sight, except the red tile of the roofs of the houses, and the towers and domes of the cathedral and churches, stretch a half or three-quarters of a mile along a green bank and carriage-drive by the water's edge; while on the other, in place of heavy walls, bastions, and embattled towers, nothing is to be seen, as far as the eye can reach, but a mass of huts of bamboo and reeds, of the slightest construction and rudest aspect, embowered in groves of the greatest luxuriance and verdure. The location both of the city and suburbs is very low, a characteristic of the surrounding country; but some miles inland it becomes more elevated and broken, and terminates at last on every side in lofty and beautiful mountains.

My friend Lieutenant Magruder accompanied me on shore at two o'clock, to dine at the consulate, and to take a first glance of the city. The landing is by the river, a narrow and rapid stream, with a light-house, small, and of imperfect service, at its mouth, on the suburb side. A long mole of granite, with a circular battery at the end, lines the river on the same side with the city; immediately on passing which, we perceived a greater stir of business than is seen from the bay, the river being lined on the side adjoining the suburbs with numbers of vessels of various burdens, and covered with boats, plying rapidly in different directions. The walls of the city rise from the water, and extend more than half a mile up the stream to a fine stone bridge, affording the only communication by carriages with the suburb.

The support of an equipage here is attended comparatively with so little expense, that it is not customary to walk either on business or for pleasure; and after dinner, at five o'clock, four carriages were in readiness for our party to take an evening airing.

The usual vehicle is a light, low phaeton, handsomely finished, drawn by two small, but fleet, horses, under the management of a postilion mounted on one of them. The rides in the vicinity of the city are varied, and of a degree of beauty almost unrivalled; but that most resorted to in the evening, is a broad road lined with a double row of trees, commencing at the bridge, and following the course of the moat and glacis surrounding the city-wall to the beach, and extending along it in front of the city, with an open view of the bay and shipping. Here all the rank and fashion of the place assemble for an hour or more every evening, presenting an animated and truly beautiful spectacle, as equipage after equipage rolls along in a double line, one passing in one direction and the other in another; affording a full view, from the open carriages, of all the dress and beauty of the first circles of society. The ladies wear neither hats nor mantles; but, according to the Spanish custom on such occasions, appear in full evening costume.

This drive is called the Calzada. It is open entirely to the country on one side, and leads past the public parade ground, near the bay. The standing forces of the government consist of 12,000 troops, all natives of the islands, commanded by Spanish officers. Five thousand of these are quartered in the city, and the remainder in various parts of the group. There is a regular evening drill; and about two thousand were now under arms. Two full bands were performing, and I have no where heard finer martial music, though all the musicians, like the soldiers, are native Indians of the country.

The airing and the drill usually terminate together; the carriages, when the troops begin to move, changing the rapid rate at which, for the hour previous, they are whirled from one end of the Calzada to the other, to a walk, accompany them in long and slow procession, for the enjoyment of the music to

which they march, till dispersed at the barracks near the bridge.

Two evenings in each week the military band perform for an hour in the palace-square within the city, in front of the residence of His Catholic Majesty's representative, the Captain-General and Governor of the Philippine Islands, at present the Senor Rocafuerté. This was one of the evenings; and we drove into the city, to share in the entertainment. It is a well-built, neat, and quiet town, containing a population of twenty thousand, principally Spanish, or of Spanish extraction; officers of government, and of the military department; priests, soldiers, &c. The streets are regular, and well kept; and the whole style of building, that which I have described as prevailing in Lima, the Moorish quadrangle of two stories, with covered balconies from the second story over the street, and corridors within. Here the balconies, instead of lattice-work of dark wood, consist of large sashes, to be thrown open at pleasure, set, in place of glass, with the inner shell of a large muscle, which, prepared for the purpose, is translucent, transmitting the glare of a tropical sun, in a mellowness of light equal to that passing through ground glass.

The houses of the foreign residents, and of the more wealthy inhabitants of the suburbs, are in the same style of architecture; the first story being appropriated to storehouses, kitchens, offices, stables, &c., while the second is occupied by spacious and lofty saloons, and sleeping and dressing apartments.

---

### LETTER LXVIII.

#### EVENING SCENES AT A CATHOLIC FESTIVAL, AND CALL UPON A NATIVE FAMILY.

Manilla, January 31st, 1830.

AFTER tea this evening, a large party took carriages for a short drive to a parish in the eastern part of the

suburbs, where, we were informed, a festival in honour of the patron saint was in celebration.

The native islanders at Manilla, as well as the Spanish inhabitants, are Roman Catholics by profession; and holidays of this kind, with processions, illuminations, and fire-works, in honour of them, are a chief source of amusement to the people. All the streets within the boundaries of the parish we now visited, were more or less illuminated, and those in the vicinity of the church, and through which the procession passed, as brilliantly lighted as a walk in Vauxhall; while all the houses were ornamented with gay hanging wreaths of flowers, and evergreen, and various tawdry decorations of coloured paper and tinsel.

The buildings here are all in the native style; cottages of greater or less dimensions, erected upon piles at various heights from the ground, and constructed of bamboo and reeds. They are usually square, with high roofs, running to a point in the centre; and are furnished so abundantly with large windows of lattice-work, that, when thrown open, the interior is as much exposed to view as that of an ordinary summer-house in the grounds of a gentleman in our own country. This was the case on the present occasion; and, as we rode along the streets, we had as full a sight of the apartments, and of the families in gala dress, and in all the hilarity of festival times, as if we had been their guests.

Lofty arches of light wood, covered with coloured paper and gilding, and blazing with lamps, were thrown across the streets; while, in other places, obelisks of the same materials reared their illuminated summits high in the darkness of the night; both having a tasteful and pretty effect.

The principal procession had closed before we arrived; but fireworks were setting off; and the image of the patron saint, a female martyr, as

appeared from the exhibition, was borne past us. In the immediate vicinity of the church, the streets were so thronged with pedestrians of all ranks, from those apparently of gentility and affluence, to the lowest orders, that we were obliged to alight near a half mile from it, and walk the remaining distance. In the crowd there was quite as great a number of females as of the other sex, and some evidently of the highest classes, in as full evening dress as if in an opera-house or ball-room.

An American gentleman of our party was acquainted with a native of some wealth, whose house we happened to pass; and, at his invitation, our whole company ascended a stair on the outside of the building, and joined a large circle of the relatives and family friends, convened for purposes of festivity; embracing, from appearances, the entire connection of our host, from grandmothers in the decrepitude of old age, to infants in the arms. The building was purely in the native style, and exceedingly neat in its finish and furniture.

The master of the house, a middle-aged man, was in the prevailing costume of the civilized Indians: pantaloons of striped calico of gay colours, with a shirt of thin grass-cloth, or of a material the peculiar manufacture of the country, said to be from the fibrous parts of the leaves of the pine-apple, as transparent as gauze, exhibiting the entire contour and muscular action of the arms, shoulders, and chest.

The dress of the females consists of several garments. The first is a short gown of thin muslin, as transparent as the shirts of the men, reaching scarce below the bosom, and hanging unconfined around the form. Over the petticoat, covering the lower part of the figure, which is usually of dark print, several yards of a striped or plaid calico, of bright and strong hues, is worn, by wrapping it several



times round the form. The ankles and feet remain bare ; while the great toe, with one or two of its nearest neighbours, is thrust into the point of a long slipper of morocco, velvet, or silk, often richly ornamented, which is slid along the floor or pavement in walking, with a sound that is any thing, in my ear, but the "*dulce susurrum*" of the Mantuan bard. The head is usually bare ; but, in full dress, a fanciful turban of lace or wrought muslin is frequently worn, and also a richly embroidered half handkerchief, of the same style, over the short gown.

They are fond of jewellery ; and, besides pendants in their ears, bracelets, and necklaces, I have seen the fingers of both the hands of a village belle stiff with diamond rings.

But to return to our host. We were received by him with great hospitality, in an outer room, where tables were spread with a profusion of cakes and fruit, coffee, tea, &c., and then conducted into another, in the midst of some twenty-five or thirty persons, principally females. The elder ones were in the costume of the country, with their hair turned smoothly back from the forehead, and hanging in a long queue behind, smoking cigars, or chewing the betel leaf and arica nut, with the juice of which their mouths and teeth were deeply stained. Those younger, however, their daughters and grand-daughters, were in European dresses of silk and muslin, with velvet spencers, gold chains, silk stockings, and shoes. No particular introduction took place ; and all entered readily into conversation with those of our company who spoke Spanish. Refreshments of various kinds were offered ; and among other things served, were cigars, and the arica nut and betel leaf.

With a manifest desire to please, the master of the house sent for music, to entertain us with a dance of the country ; but the gentlemen, who intended

returning to the ship, pleaded, in excuse for not remaining, the detention it would occasion to the boat, and we took our leave.

The whole evening was a novelty; and a striking proof of the devices by which men, while gratifying the desires and affections of a worldly mind, persuade themselves that they are doing God service, and working out their own salvation. We are ever ready to tithe "in mint, in anise, and in cummin," ready to sacrifice our money and our time, but prone to neglect the weightier matters of the law, and to withhold the services and devotion of the heart.

## LETTER LXIX.

### A VILLAGE FETE, AND VISIT TO THE LAKE OF PASIG.

Manilla, February 2d, 1830.

BEFORE sunrise this morning, we were taking a cup of chocolate previous to setting off for the lake, some twenty miles distant, from which the river Pasig flows to the bay.

The excursion is made by water, on the Pasig; but it was arranged that we should not take the river at the town, but go in carriages to the village of Santa Anna, two or three miles distant, by which a long bend in the stream, with a strong current against us, would be cut off. Our luggage was of rather a singular and luxurious character, as seen piled conspicuously at the feet of each couple, in the bottom of the chariot, consisting principally of *pillows*, which are here showy articles, the cases being of fine cambric, highly wrought and trimmed with inserting of lace and ribbons, over gay colours of pink, blue, yellow, &c.; and of fine mats of the country. Mr. King, with whom I rode, as caterer, carried also a box of claret, sandwiches, bread, cheese, and ale. The use of the pillows will be mentioned in due time.

The drive to Santa Anna is one of the most pleasant in the environs.

*Bankas*, the name of the canoes of the country, were by engagement waiting our arrival at the edge of the stream; and it was but a few moments before we were afloat on the waters of the Pasig. We still remained as in the carriages, two and two in separate canoes, they generally not being capable of containing more, with room to indulge in the luxurious attitude of travellers in them, which is that of reclining at full length, on a mat spread in the bottom of the boat, with the head elevated on one of the gay pillows I have mentioned, at a sufficient height to afford a clear view above the sides of the canoe of the banks of the river, and scenery on either side.

The Pasig is a beautiful river, perhaps one hundred yards wide at Santa Anna, and diminishes very little for five or six miles. At that distance, the two streams forming it, one coming from the mountains in the east, and the other from the lake, unite: above this confluence, each is about half that width.

So much were we delighted with the richness and beauty of the scenery, and the novelty of every thing around, that we could scarce believe ourselves at the village of Pasig, ten miles from Santa Anna, when, just after eight o'clock, the tower of its church was seen rising above the groves in which the town is embowered. We were to spend a principal part of the day here, with an intelligent and wealthy native, one of the aristocracy of the place; and were most hospitably received by himself and a son, who has received a classical education at a Roman Catholic college in Manilla.

A short walk from the place of landing, brought us into a street leading directly to the church, in the centre of the village. The bells were ringing cheerily, and a procession passing around the enclosure in which the building stands, while crowds of

people from all directions were pressing to secure a view. The principal image borne along, was that of a female saint as large as life, in a dress of blue satin, glittering with silver spangles, lace, and tinsel, with a small hat of blue, loaded with white plumes: probably the patroness of the church and village, before which gaudy idol all prostrated themselves as it passed. The procession was composed, with the exception of a Spanish padre, and an assistant curé, an Indian, of females, from five and six years of age, covered with spangles, lace, flowers, and jewelry, to girls of sixteen and eighteen, all in their best attire; bearing wax tapers in the full glare of a tropical sun, and chanting a hymn, probably of idolatry to the dumb and helpless object forming the most conspicuous part of the show.

They merely marched round the yard, and re-entered the church for the performance of mass, a service which none of us wished to attend; and after looking for a moment at the interior, which was not worthy of particular notice, we proceeded to the residence of our host.

The street leading to it, presented a pleasing sample of the neatness and rural beauty of a Philippine village, or rather town, for Pasig is said to contain 15,000 inhabitants. It is wide, and covered with a beautiful turf, wheels and animals of burden being so little used as to make nothing like a travelled carriage-way through it, while the picturesque habitations of the villagers, overhung with trees, line it on either side, in separate enclosures filled with the mango, bamboo, arica-nut, &c.

Four or five hours passed rapidly away in various observations of the scenes around us; and, after enjoying an extensive and beautiful view from the tower of the church, of the whole surrounding country, including the lake, three or four miles distant, lying like an inland sea in the bosom of its shores

and mountains ; taking a stroll in the garden of the padre of the town ; visiting two or three native families, one of which was entertaining, with a feast accompanied by music and dancing, all the females forming the procession of the morning, and sharing in a profuse dinner, provided by our citizen friend, we prepared to extend our excursion to the lake.

For this purpose our *bankas* were again ordered. The scenery on the way did not differ materially from that which we had passed; the banks being low and level, and richly clothed, till we approached the lake, where the paddy grounds extended to the water's edge. Two large passage and freight boats were at anchor near the entrance, waiting for passengers and cargo, for the head of the lake, forty miles distant. We boarded one of them for a few moments, but found nothing in the view they commanded to detain us, that of the tower of the church having given a better and more impressive idea of the extent and beauty of this sheet of water.

On our return, we stopt to take leave of our hospitable acquaintance at Pasig; and found the additional refreshment of a cup of rich chocolate, prepared for us. It was near four o'clock when we left. Our descent was rapid. Instead of landing at Santa Anna, we kept our boats; and were greatly gratified with the richness and beauty of the river scenery between it and the city, blended with the architectural display in numerous country seats belonging to the principal Spanish residents

# **The Cape of Good Hope,**

AND

**Island of St. Helena.**

## **LETTER LXX.**

### **DESCRIPTION OF CAPE TOWN.**

**U. S. Ship Vincennes, Table Bay,  
April 8th, 1829.**

**AFTER** a voyage of fifty-six days from Manilla, including two at anchor in the Straits of Sunda, we yesterday doubled the Cape of Good Hope, and, before night, ran thirty miles north of it to the bay, in which we now are, without however securing an entrance to it before nightfall.

I was roused this morning at four o'clock by the dropping our anchors abreast of Cape Town, and went early afterwards on deck. We were within less than a mile of the town, lying closely along the water's edge, directly beneath the Table Mountain, which rises seemingly from its very outskirts like a perpendicular wall of granite, three thousand five hundred feet high. It is perfectly level on the top for a stretch of some miles, and in its face towards the water presents much the aspect, with the exception of the tufting of wood and shrubbery, of the palisade cliff on the Hudson, near New York. It is flanked on one side by a lofty peak, from which it is separated by a barren and narrow valley, and an adjoining round hill called respectively the Lion's Head and Back; and on the other, by a naked cone, of

equal height, called the Devil's Peak ; all so close to the town as to exclude every other view in that direction.

The town, containing twenty thousand inhabitants, is compactly and regularly built on wide streets, crossing each other at right angles ; presenting a neat and agreeable appearance from the water, the prevailing colour of the buildings being white or light stone. Many of the houses are low and flat-roofed, especially those skirting the borders of the town. These are the most conspicuous ; and, surrounded by gardens and shrubbery, have a rural and tasteful aspect. Every thing adjoining, however, is sunburnt and dreary ; though in the winter, or rainy season, the whole country is said to be beautifully verdant, and gaily enamelled with flowers.

We early exchanged salutes with a fortress on shore. The effects of our guns against the cliffs of Table Mountain was grand beyond any thing of the kind I ever heard ; echo after echo, of the deepest-toned thunder, intermingled with reverberations, like the discharge of a rapid *feu de joie*, rolled round and round the bay between every gun, as if a whole fleet were in action.

At twelve I accompanied Captain Finch, Lieut. Stribling, Mr. Buchanan, and Dr. Malone, in a call, under the guidance of James Bance, Esquire, port captain, on His Excellency, Lieutenant General the Honourable Sir Galbraith Lowry Cole, G.C.B. governor and commander-in-chief of the colony. The government house is at present undergoing repairs, and we were received at the colonial office. The general is an able and popular ruler, of commanding figure, and plain and unaffected manners ; and after giving us a cordial welcome to Cape Town ; expressing the gratification it afforded him to see the American flag in Table Bay ; regretting that the government house was in a state to deny him the happiness

of entertaining us as he could desire, &c., entered into general conversation for half an hour, with much intelligence and courtesy. On passing from the governor's rooms, we paid our respects for a moment to Lieutenant-Colonel Bell, colonial secretary, a brother-in-law of the governor, the ladies of both being daughters of the distinguished diplomatist, the late Earl of Malmsbury, and were afterwards introduced by Captain Bance to the family of Mr. Ebden, a principal merchant of the place.

In the afternoon I accompanied my friend Lieut. Magruder on shore, and, joined by Mr. Buchanan, took a more full survey of the town. It is well built and beautiful, more like some of our American towns, especially those originally settled by the Dutch, than any I have seen in a foreign country. The general style of architecture is much the same; the apparent equality of wealth and rank similar; and the mixture of the population of British and Dutch extraction, in a like proportion; while the household servants, coachmen, teamsters, &c., of blacks and mulattos, keep up the resemblance in these respects to many of the most flourishing towns in Pennsylvania, and the older sections of the state of New York. There is a blending, too, of city and village in the appearance of the streets, and evident habits of the citizens, that is very agreeable; not unlike that seen in the principal towns in the interior of the United States. In one respect, however, it is totally unlike any place in our own country; in the numerous soldiery seen on post and in the streets; several regiments being usually quartered here.

The gardens formerly belonging to the Dutch East India Company are a principal ornament of the place. They occupy one hundred and twenty acres immediately adjoining the most compact part of the town, a principal part of which is enclosed and cultivated with fruit and vegetables, &c., leaving



a wide and beautiful avenue of oak in the centre, nearly a mile in length, alone open to the public as a promenade. The government-house is situated in the gardens on one side of the avenue; a rural and pleasant establishment, principally in cottage style, without any particular beauty, or elegance of architecture.

Before returning on board, I called on Mrs. Philip, lady of the Rev. Dr. Philip, superintendent of the missions in South America, under the London Missionary Society. I had previously learned with regret that Dr. Philip himself was several hundred miles in the interior, and that I should be denied the happiness of meeting him. The hospitality of her house was most kindly extended to me, but I have thought it advisable to remain on board ship during the short time we shall remain at our present anchorage.

---

## LETTER LXXI.

A RIDE TO CONSTANTIA, AND AN EVENING AT PROTEA, THE COTTAGE OF SIR LOWRY COLE.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Table Bay, April 18th, 1830.

THE visit of the Vincennes has been received so kindly at the Cape, and all her officers so hospitably entertained by the inhabitants, both Dutch and English, that my time since our arrival has been fully occupied. A daily reciprocation of civility has taken place between the ship and town, to the seeming-gratification of all parties; and we shall have much reason to remember with pleasure the many circles of agreeable acquaintance formed at the Cape of Good Hope.

A principal object of curiosity in the vicinity is the estate of Constantia, so long celebrated for the peculiarity and excellence of the wine produced from its vineyards, and the Rev. Mr. Beck, a near relative of

the present hereditary proprietor of the estate, kindly proposed taking Lieutenants Stribling and Magruder and myself to it in his carriage, a few mornings since.

The road leads directly north from the town, and is a delightful turnpike, having an open common sprinkled here and there with a cluster of white cottages, a single hut, or a windmill, on either side. Seared, at this season of the year, by the winds of the autumn, its entire surface is sterile and dreary, like that of a heath in England. After three miles, however, the drive becomes beautiful, the road being completely embowered by groves of lofty oak and pine, and ornamented by handsome gateways, leading to mansions and cottages thickly scattered along the way, the summer retreats of "the powers that be," and of those "rich in this world's goods." The turnpike winds gradually around the bases of the Table Mountain and Devil's Peak, and at the end of six miles passes the small village of Wynberg. Two miles further brought us to the end of our excursion. The approach to the gate is through a grove of the silver tree, *protea argentea*, affording us full proof of the appropriateness of their name. The long-pointed leaves are thickly set on the branches, and being of a bluish-green colour, covered with a fine white furze or down, have the appearance, as the rays of the sun fall upon them, of being edged and tipped with silver.

Constantia was originally a Dutch government estate, and is beautifully located under the mountains of the range of Table Land, commanding fine views of the surrounding country, and of the Indian Ocean on the eastern side of the Cape. It derives its name from the grape of Constantia in France, which was that introduced into its vineyards, and by which it has attained its celebrity. It was sold by the government to a gentleman of the name of Cletoè, an ancestor of the present occupant, and entailed in his

family, subject to certain imposts on the proceeds of the vintage.

Since that period, the original estate has been divided into Upper, or Great, and Lower Constantia, from their relative position to the mountains. A new estate has also since been laid out, and planted on ground still more elevated; and, from that fact, called High Constantia. This we did not visit, but had a full view of its vineyards, stretching over the sides of a hill at the base of the mountains.

The entrance to Upper, or Great Constantia, is by an avenue of majestic oaks, a quarter of a mile or more in length, descending gradually to the house, a respectable-looking old mansion, in the Dutch style a century ago. Mr. Cloetè received us with much politeness, and, after a conversation of half an hour in a drawing-room, conducted us through the gardens, shrubbery, and fruit-yard in the rear of the mansion. The colony of the Cape of Good Hope may be correctly styled the land of fruit and flowers, and the grounds are filled with a handsome variety of both. The walks are lined with hedges of myrtle, and their intersections overspread with arbours beautifully arched and ornamented by the training of the living oak. In speaking of the value of this noble tree, we were informed, by the proprietor, of its importance here in a respect which I do not recollect to have before seen noticed—in the sustenance it affords, not only to swine, but to horses and cattle. The acorn is a principal food on the estate of these animals, furnished to them in the manner in which Indian corn is in the United States. After being gathered, they are preserved without difficulty, by keeping them covered with fresh water, in which manner they retain all their juices without being subject to decay.

A next visit was to the wine-house, a long range of building filled with tiers of immense tanks of

**Constantia.** From these a superintendent began at once to serve us with samples of the different kinds made on the estate. All the varieties, white and red, Frontignac, Muscadine, and Pontac, are sweet; too luscious to be drank, except as a cordial, with cake, or after coffee at dinner.

We then passed through a vineyard of forty acres, inclining handsomely on one side of the house. The vines are kept very low, about three feet from the ground, without stake or trellis, and some of them were pointed out to us as more than seventy years old. The vintage of the season is just past, and the grapes all gathered; but a cluster here and there, fully ripe, afforded a luxurious *bonne bouche* in our walk.

An elegant collation awaited our return to the mansion; after partaking of which, we visited Lower Constantia, the possession of a Mr. Colyn. We were received in the same hospitable and kind manner by this gentleman, and conducted over an establishment equally rich and beautiful; and left, on our return to Wynberg, (where we were to dine with the Honourable Mr. Wheatley, a judge of the bench of Bengal,) much gratified with the observations of the morning.

The next evening I was engaged to dine at the cottage of Governor Cole, ten miles in the country, with Captain Finch, Dr. Malone, and Captain Bance: and at half-past six we took our seats in a landau and four, to meet the appointment. Just before night, a south-east wind, the sirocco of the Cape, had suddenly risen, and was sweeping around and over every thing, almost with the power of a hurricane, driving and whirling the dust before it like the snow of a winter's storm in Otsego; and, had not the accompanying temperature been sufficiently cool to admit of having the carriage closed, the ride would have been exceedingly unpleasant. With

this advantage, however, and a knowledge of the excellence of the road, (it being the same, excepting two miles, that we had travelled to Constantia,) we suffered no inconvenience, notwithstanding the darkness and the storm; and, in little more than an hour, found ourselves whirling through the gates of Protea, the name given by Sir Lowry to the estate, from the abundance of the silver-tree surrounding it.

The former country-seat of the governor of the colony, the Newlands, in the same vicinity, was a splendid establishment, costing the British government, it is said, during the administration of Lord Charles Somerset, the predecessor of General Cole, £80,000 sterling; but this has been sold, and Protea is the private property of the governor; upon which improvements are but just commencing, it having been in his possession only a short time. It seemed an unpretending establishment for a captain-general, though the opportunity of judging of its appearance was very imperfect, from the darkness of the night, the range of lights at the portico, with those of three or four chariots in waiting, throwing only a limited and flickering glare around.

We had been apprised that it was but a family party we were to join; and, on entering the drawing-room, found just the circle that those long cut off from the enjoyment of refined and polished society would wish to meet, divested of every thing like the formality and etiquette of an entertainment of state. Lady Frances, with two or three female companions, and four lovely daughters, from five to twelve years of age; the governor and his aids, military and civil; the attorney-general, and lady; the surgeon of the household; and one or two young officers in the uniform of the Scotch regiments, constituting the number. The general, in the full uniform of his rank, scarlet, with epaulets and cordons of gold, received us in the centre of the room, and, after an

interchange of salutations, presented each of our company in order to his lady, and then to the party in general.

Nothing in a family circle has a greater charm for me than a group of intelligent, well-managed, and lovely children ; and the daughters of the household attracted my first attention. The younger two quickly threw off the reserve imposed by the entrance of strangers, and, by their vivacity and playfulness, presented a delightful picture of the happiness of childhood in the bosom of those it loves ; and it was with sincere regret that I perceived the whole number, when dinner was announced, kissing good-night to Lady Frances, as she gave her hand to Captain Finch to be led to the *Salle à manger*.

The general and his family take possession of the government-house in town, in a few days, for the winter ; and, on the 23d instant, a grand fête, in honour of the birth-day of his Britannic Majesty, is to be given by them. Invitations were early issued to the officers of the Vincennes ; and both the governor and his lady expressed a cordial wish, before taking our leave, that we might remain to the entertainment.

## LETTER LXXII.

### ARRIVAL AT ST. HELENA, AND INTERVIEW WITH GOVERNOR DALLAS.

U. S. ship Vincennes, Bay of James Town,  
May 3, 1830.

WE left our anchorage in Table Bay on the nineteenth ult., and, on the morning of the first inst. descried St. Helena, at a distance of fifty miles, seeming only a small jagged-topped cloud of deep blue, on the verge of the horizon.

The night closed round us, while yet twenty-five or thirty miles distant. The evening was tranquil, and beautifully clear ; but strong and irresistible

associations on the fate of the man, whose name and end have stamped eternal celebrity on the island before us, shrouded it in our eyes, with a gloom that rendered doubly sombre the deep neutral tint spread in an unvarying shade over its precipitous coast. Every other emotion was lost in the feeling, that we were gazing on a mausoleum, in the midst of the mighty deep, appropriate in its features of dreariness and gloom to the latter destinies of the genius whose remains repose within it; and, with the pall and the bier, and all the saddening appendages of the grave, floating in my imagination, I could compare the outline of the island, as seen against the sky in its bearings at the time, to nothing more descriptive of its general form, than a gigantic coffin, to which, in reality, the perpendicular headlands on either end, the proportionate length and height, and an unvaried sable hue, gave it no slight resemblance.

The light of the following morning converted the blackness of the bare walls of rock bounding the whole island, as seen in the preceding evening, into a reddish brown, but without diminishing the general aspect of dreariness and desolation. Nothing like freshness or verdure was to be seen, except a few pointed hills, rising in the centre, above the general mass of sterility, and belted beneath by a narrow strip of cultivated country, sprinkled with a cottage and plantation here and there; beautiful, indeed, but only, like the oasis of the desert, from a strength of contrast with every thing around.

Every headland and craggy peak is surmounted by its flag-staff and signal-station; from one to another of which, communications were constantly making as we approached. In doubling the north end, we neared the shore so closely, that the monstrous cliffs composing it, becoming more and more lofty and precipitous in the vicinity of Jamestown, on the north-west, towered hundreds of feet perpen-

dicularly above our mast-heads. The first view of Buttermilk Point, on passing which the anchorage comes in sight, is singularly striking, from the batteries planted high on its very face, and occupying every nook and crevice in which a gun can be secured, presenting in one spot a projecting rock, and in another a wide-mouthed port, with a heavy piece of artillery pointed towards you; here a short stretch of artificial wall, and there a breast-work of the original cliff, without any plan or order, other than that of the natural formation. The mouths of cannon project, at irregular intervals and distances, from the top to the bottom; among which, the heads of half a dozen guards were seen peering over the parapets upon us.

This aspect is, in a greater or less degree, characteristic of the cliffs the remaining distance of a mile to Jamestown; in front of which, we were soon moored, within a quarter of a mile of the shore. The glen, in the narrow mouth of which it stands, is wedged in between two almost perpendicular walls of brown lava, near a thousand feet in height, approaching each other as they run inland, till, at the distance of a couple of miles, they shut out all farther view. An esplanade in front, of a few hundred yards extent, formed by a massive wall, ten or twelve feet high, running across the glen, to guard the beach from the encroachment of a heavy surf, is planted with a battery, and ornamented with a double row of trees of the banian tribe, skirting the walls of the town. The first buildings above the tops of these, that catch the eye, are, a neat church of light yellow, with a square tower on the sight side of the gate in the centre of the wall, and the government-house, or castle, a large heavy-looking mansion, surrounded by trees and gardens, on the other. Between these, from the rapid ascent of the ground, a full view is presented of an open, unplanted square, surrounded



by residences of good size and comfortable appearance ; beyond which, the roofs of numerous habitations interspersed with a few trees, a lofty building or two, a barrack, and hospitals, are seen, stretching up the narrow defile for a mile or more, till they terminate in a view of some neat cottages and gardens, overlooking the whole, at the extreme point in sight.

This morning, at eleven o'clock, Captain Finch, accompanied by Dr. Malone and myself, went on shore, to wait upon the governor, the Hon. Brigadier-General Dallas ; as many others of the officers as could be spared from the ship, having already started for Longwood.

The only landing is close beneath a projection of the cliff, on the left of the anchorage, under the bastions of a fort planted on the face of the rock, some eighty or a hundred feet above the water. Though more sheltered from the swell of the sea than any other spot, still caution is requisite in getting from a boat on the abutment and steps of massive stone with which it is furnished, as the water is of great depth, and its rise and fall in the eddy and whirl of the surf at all times several feet, and often so great as altogether to interrupt the communication between the shipping and town. A causeway, hewn from the rock, leads along the base of the hill ; from the perpendicular surface of which, on the one hand, enormous masses, projecting in frowning deformity, threaten momentarily to crush you beneath their tremendous weight ; while, on the other, are the roar, and lashing against the parapet, of a deadly surf. An irresistible query, as we trod this fearful way, was—what must have been the thoughts and the feelings of the imperial captive, when, for the first and the last time, he paced this same ground, and gazed above and around him on the horrid features of his appointed prison ? For the moment, at least,

I suspect the firmness of the philosopher must have been shaken, and the nerve of the hero unmanned.

On passing the gate, an air of comfort, of quietness, and of leisure, is visible in every thing: there is nothing of the stir and bustle of business; but, on every side, evidence of indolence and inactivity; soldiers, in handsome uniform, lounging around; officers in rich undress; and clusters of gentlemen, in citizens' garb, seated in the shade beside the houses, or in verandas in front.

Mr. Solomon, a merchant of wealth, kindly threw open his house to the officers of the ship, immediately on our arrival; and we availed ourselves of his hospitality, till the governor should arrive from Plantation-house, the governmental country-seat, three miles inland, where his family exclusively reside. He visits the castle in town, however, almost daily, on business; and when informed of his presence there, under the guidance of Mr. Solomon, we paid our respects to him.

Our reception by the general, and his son, a captain in the Hon. East India Company's service, and by Captain Knipe, civil aid, or secretary, was most cordial; and immediately followed by an invitation to dine with himself and family, this evening, at six o'clock; but being already engaged to Mr. Solomon, the invitation was renewed for to-morrow, after we should have accomplished a visit to Longwood. Knowing that the council of the island was convening, and the governor consequently occupied, after a short and agreeable interview, we took leave, for a more extensive survey of the town.

## LETTER LXXIII.

## THE TOMB OF NAPOLEON, LONGWOOD, AND PLANTATION HOUSE.

U. S. Ship Vincennes, Bay of Jamestown,  
May 5th, 1830.

YESTERDAY morning, Captain Finch, Dr. Malone, and myself, took breakfast with Dr. Price, the health officer of the port, and soon afterwards became mounted for an excursion to Longwood, and the residence of General Dallas.

After the ride of an hour, up the zig-zag roads cut in the surface of the hill—by which alone, on the one side of the glen or the other, the ascent to the mountainous country in the central parts of the island can be made—we found ourselves beyond the highest point of land between Jamestown and Longwood, on the edge of a tremendous gulf of an oval form, called the “Devil’s Punch Bowl.” The precipices surrounding it are deeply furrowed by the washing of heavy rains, and are every where tinged with hues of the most delicate shade; a light purple, dashed with pink and pale yellow, predominating; the whole caused by the coloured earth, of which the soil is here constituted. At the head of this chasm, a narrow and secluded glen—contrasting strongly, in the verdure and freshness of its trees, shrubbery, and grassy sides, with the colouring and nakedness of the wider and deeper parts below—lies cradled in green hills, and is the nook in which repose the bones of the greatest man of his age, and one of the master-spirits of his race :

“ High is his couch: the ocean flood  
Far—far below, by storms is curl’d  
As round him heav’d, while high he stood,  
A stormy and unstable world.  
Alone he sleeps! the mountain-cloud  
That night hangs round him, and the breath  
Of morning scatters, is the shroud  
That wraps the Conqueror’s clay in death.

Hark '—comes there from the Pyramids,  
 And from Siberian wastes of snow,  
 And Europe's hills, a voice that bids  
 'The world he w'd to mourn him '—No '  
 His only—his perpetual dirge  
 Is the wild sea-bird's piercing cry—  
 The mournful murmur of the surge—  
 The cloud's deep voice—the wind's loud sigh!"

The tufted tops of the willows that droop around his grave, and the cottage and garden of the keeper, are seen in the depths of the glen; while, on the height of the banks above, appears the white front of Huts' Gate, the farm-house occupied by Montholon, and from which the captive was accustomed to descend on foot to the spring, near which he chose for himself a resting-place. Directly across the gulf, and within a mile in direct line, lies the plantation of Longwood, spread over an extensive plain, with the old and new houses on the gentle swelling of the highest point, with a few trees clustering around them.

The road to the plantation leads around the chasin by Huts' Gate, and the ride to it is at least two miles from the point of this first distant view.

A few moments' ride brought us to a gate on the principal road, opening into that cut in the side of the hill for the funeral procession. This we descended; and, on reaching a second gate, at the end of half a mile, committed our horses to a person in waiting; and, passing round a bank tufted with shrubbery, and gay with the scarlet blossoms of a geranium, found ourselves at the tomb of Napoleon, and on the brink of the pure fountain, the sweetness and refreshing coolness of whose waters in such a climate, led to the eventual consecration of the spot.

The grave is surrounded by a double enclosure; the first, of wooden pales, in a dark paint, is a widely sweeping circle, enclosing the four willows overhanging it; and the other, a square of about twelve feet of

plain iron railing, marking the immediate dimensions of the tomb itself. This consists of three large flag stones of granite, taken for the purpose from the hearth of the kitchen in New Longwood; laid, without any inscription, in substantial masonry, at an elevation of a few inches only above the ground: a monument rude and unadorned, and in good keeping with the end of the ill-fated exile on whose bosom it presses.

After examining every point of interest, drinking of the water of the spring, securing slips from the willows, inscribing our names in an album in care of the keeper, and musing on the career and fate of the conqueror, over the little space of earth that alone of all his kingdoms is retained in his possession, we remounted our horses; and, returning to the public road, proceeded round the head of the ravine by Huts' Gate to Longwood.

The general aspect of the establishment is that of an ordinary shabby farm-house of stone, meanly stuccoed, and irregularly built—the whole being in bad repair. Long ranges of sheds for cattle, painted of a dismal colour, line two sides of a large square cow-yard in which it is situated; while a third is formed by the kitchens and offices of the principal house. The approach through this dirty enclosure, as a lawn, did not promise much for the interior; but I must confess, that when—on being ushered from it through a door opening on the ground; with the announcement, "This was the bed-room and dressing-room of the emperor," I found myself in a small, dark, and filthy stable, occupied by half a dozen horses, swarming with flies, and teeming with impurity—I could scarce suppress a flush of indignant feeling at the contempt and degradation which appeared thus, unnecessarily, to be cast upon the illustrious, though perhaps justly unfortunate and unhappy, dead.

I never was a warm admirer of the character of Bonaparte; while yet, in my early infancy, he had exchanged the greenness of his consular laurels for the glitter of the diadem; and in the days of my boyish politics, when his sceptre was extending widely over Europe, I regarded him principally as the proud usurper, whose ambition it was to triumph over the kingdoms of the earth, till he should become the dictator of the world. But, who has not admired the power of genius, that raised him to his glory? Who did not feel some sympathy, at least, in the depth of his fall? Who did not commiserate him in the distance and desolateness of his exile? And who, with the vivid impressions of the wretchedness and discomfort of his captivity, forced upon them by the scene in the midst of which we now were, would not be disposed to believe every charge of unkindness and oppression that has been preferred against his keepers? However different the state of the establishment might have been when inhabited by Napoleon, all the associations of a visiter, with his situation during the time, take their colour from what is seen; and the rooms should have been preserved in the condition in which they were left, or the whole should have been razed to the ground.

The next apartment we entered, is that in which he died. It had been used as a writing-room and library; and he was removed to it, after becoming seriously ill, for the benefit of a more free circulation of air. It is small, with two windows on one side, between which the bed on which he expired was placed. A threshing-machine, festooned with cobwebs, is now its only furniture; and not only the paper in which it was once hung, but the plaster, and even parts of the wall itself, have been carried away by the numerous visiters since his death.

On one side of this is the dining room, a low, dark, and uncomfortable corner of the building;

and in front of it, the new wooden part put up after his arrival at St. Helena; consisting of two rooms connected by folding doors, one for billiards, and the other dignified by the name of a drawing-room, but neither equal in size or style to a parlour in most common farm-houses in the United States.

The review of the whole, in their present condition, tends irresistibly to produce feelings of sadness, and such was the prevalence of these in my own bosom, that, on stepping into the open air in front, every thing in sight seemed gloomy and desolate; and I could readily conceive, that even a great mind, suddenly cut off, not only from the splendour of an imperial station in one of the most refined nations of the world, but from all the enjoyments of private and domestic life, might speedily sink under the oppressive influence of the unvarying sameness and desolation of such a prison.

The plantation of Longwood is the property of the East India Company; and the management of it, at present, under a superintendent of the name of Brokie. Himself and family occupy the house built for Count Bertrand, a few hundred yards distant, on a line with New Longwood House, the edifice erected for Napoleon, but to which he refused to remove. Mr. Brokie, having heard of our arrival, came up, and went through the rooms again with us; showed us a decayed shrubbery, which had been planted under the direction of Bonaparte, a small fishpond, a young oak of his own planting, &c. all in the dimensions and style of those of a child's play-house in the precincts of a nursery. We then accompanied him to his residence, a pretty cottage-like house, surrounded by trees and shrubbery. During the life of Napoleon, there was a covered walk between it and Longwood, enabling him to visit his friends unseen by others. We were here served, by Mr. Brokie, with fruit and other refreshments, in a neat saloon com-

manding views of the most highly cultivated parts of the plantation, of the rising ground near a mile distant, at Deadwood, where the troops were encamped, and of the ocean. In the Venetian shutters, holes were shown us, cut by Napoleon himself, for a spy-glass, by which, without exposing himself to view, he could observe the evolutions of the troops, and the movements in camp.

The next object of curiosity was the New House, as it is called; a spacious, well-planned, and handsomely finished mansion, calculated in all respects to secure the comfort of him for whom it was designed. It is a quadrangle of stone, stuccoed and painted yellow, with a roof of slate. The suite of rooms for Bonaparte himself—consisting of a dining, a drawing, and a billiard room, of a breakfast-parlour, library, bed-chamber, dressing apartments, and bath—is noble and airy; as also are the parts intended for Count Montholon and family. The whole stands unoccupied and unfurnished; and the government of the island are utterly at a loss to what purpose it can be best appropriated.

Having thus completed our visit, after thanking Mr. Brokie for his politeness, we remounted; and, with a boy for our guide, set off for Plantation House, several miles distant, on the opposite side of the island.

The central parts of St. Helena are singularly romantic and beautiful by nature and as highly enriched by cultivation and art, as the exterior is forbidding and desolate; and, after repassing Huts' Gate, our ride, of two and a half hours, through the bosom of a lovely little vale, adorned by several handsome mansions and neat cottages, and by a zig-zag road, cut in the sides of a succession of verdant hills, till we reached Diana's Peak, the highest point of the island, and then descended again to the residence of General Dallas, was interesting and delight-



ful, beyond any anticipation we could have indulged from every thing previously seen. Diana's Peak can be ascended on horseback till within a few rods of its summit. This consists of a platform of rock, mantled with vines and shrubbery, and overhung by a few low trees, from which the whole island is seen in bird's-eye view with the ocean on every side; its farthest verge, at a distance of fifty or sixty miles, being scarce distinguishable from the sky.

It was near four o'clock when we entered the grounds of Plantation House, the Eden of the island; embracing within its enclosures the growth and the beauty, in fruit and flower, of every region,

"From Nova Zembla's frosts to Ind's remotest clime;"

and where every impression is at once lost, but that of being in the rich enjoyment of all in nature and art, that refinement, taste, and elegance need desire. The house fronts an extensive circular lawn, descending gradually for half a mile or more towards the sea, and terminating in an open terrace, beyond and beneath which the ocean only is to be seen; while on either side it is flanked by luxuriant groves of every growth, sweeping widely down a gentle declivity, embowering a carriage-drive of several miles, extent, and securing entirely from view, without obstructing a sight of the ocean, all the nakedness and deformity of the coast two or three miles distant. The mansion itself is a spacious and substantial edifice, stuccoed and painted in imitation of stone; reminding me, in its general aspect, of the seat of the honourable E. P. Livingston, at Clermont, on the Hudson.

We were received into a fine hall, furnished with a billiard table, by an aid-de-camp of the general; Captain Dallas, his son, and an aid, conducted us to the drawing-room; where, on being presented to Mrs. Dallas and three daughters, to Miss Young, an intimate friend of the young ladies, to the honourable

Mr. Brooke, senior member of the council of St. Helena, the Rev. Mr. Vernon, colonial chaplain, and to the gentlemen of the governor's family, we met one of those circles of refinement, elegance, and accomplishments, which, after the intercourse even of an hour, are parted from with sincere regret.

We had been invited, with the greatest kindness and cordiality, to remain over the night; and were not expected by the family to return to the ship till the following day. It was therefore with no little chagrin, at nine o'clock, after a cup of tea, in an elegantly furnished library, from which the attractive display of an adjoining music-room was seen, that I perceived Captain Finch making a bow, *pour prendre congé*, to Mrs. Dallas, just as I had entered into a conversation of much interest with one of the most accomplished of the circle.

## POSTSCRIPT.

THE Vincennes sailed from St. Helena on the evening of the 5th of May, the date of the preceding letter; and, after a prosperous voyage of thirty-two days, made the Jersey shore, some thirty miles south of Sandy Hook, on the afternoon of the 7th of June. We were obliged to lie-to during the night; but, early next morning, received a pilot on board, and entered the lower bay. The wind did not allow the ship to come immediately to the city; but a fine breeze springing up at midday, by four o'clock we were at the quarantine, and, no cause of detention existing, soon after filled our topsails to drop anchor, within the hour, at the close of a prosperous voyage of the world.

Those only who, after an absence of nearly four years (the case with most of the ship's company) from all they hold most dear—who have sailed from clime to clime, visiting three of the four quarters of the world, holding intercourse with almost every variety of its inhabitants, and finding

"No place like home!"—

can alone estimate the emotions throbbing within each bosom, as our noble ship, with full-spread sails, rushed over the beautiful bay towards the queen of the western world, resting brightly on her waters, in the evening lustre of a summer's sun. The green hills already behind us, the emerald islets studding the bosom of the harbour, the richly cultivated heights of Long Island and the Jersey shore, with the Hudson and her basaltic cliffs in the blue distance, never before looked half so lovely. And when, as we rapidly approached our destination, with the light sail of the news-collector and fisherman clustering round, and two noble steam-boats, crowded with our fellow-citizens, if not with personal friends, who appeared from their looks to be participating with us in the exultation and thankfulness of our joy, passing by, the band, in appropriate and heart-felt strains, saluted our country and our home, with "Hail Columbia! happy land!"—the power of association overcame the manliness of every other feeling; and I doubt whether, from the quarter-deck to the fore-castle, a tearless eye was to be seen.

An anchor had scarcely been dropped, before Captain Finch, with his accustomed kindness, ordered his gig to be lowered, to carry me to the city. Like my companions, I had been without tidings from any of my friends for more than a twelvemonth; and I shall be pardoned, at least by some of my readers, for adding one word upon the dispensations that awaited my landing.

The intelligence of the first few minutes confirmed the forebodings of ill, which had sometimes, while at sea, given a cast of melancholy to a meditative hour. The object of attachment, to whom all I had written during my absence had been addressed, was then lying far from the city, at the point of death; and it was doubtful whether, even by travelling express, I should have the privilege of meeting her alive. This, in mercy, was granted me; and a hope, for a time, was afterwards indulged, that she might still be rescued from the grave, and restored to health, to her family, and to society: but it proved illusive; and, on the 6th of September following, she died “the death of the righteous,” and entered upon that “**REST THAT REMAINETH FOR THE PEOPLE OF GOD.**”

## APPENDIX.

MANUSCRIPT LEFT AT NUKUHIWA BY CAPTAIN  
FINCH.

"THE United States' ship Vincennes having visited the ports of Taiohae and Oomi,\* both in the island of Nukuhiva, having spent fifteen days thereat, and now being about to depart, I take occasion to state, for the information of subsequent visitors, that on my arrival I was strongly importuned for muskets, powder, flints, and other warlike weapons and munitions; but that I abstained from giving any thing of the kind, as I soon discovered that a war was raging among the different clans.

"I have found the chiefs and natives obliging to us, but a little troublesome, from the number that desired to come on board; and in this respect both our patience and forbearance have been tested. All persons, however, were excluded at night.

"I have seen the principal chiefs of four settlements; have had conferences with them; recommended peace to them; pointed out their individual, general, and local interests; charged them to be correct and honest in their deportment towards all foreigners, particularly trading vessels which may visit them; and they have faithfully promised a compliance with my injunctions.

"We have wooded and watered here, as has also a French merchant ship, called the *Duchess of Berri*, the master of which vessel adopted the same regula-

\*The bay of Oomi is very narrow, and rather hazardous, difficult of ingress and egress. Myself and officers visited the bays of Hakapaa and Hakahaa in boats.

tions, and followed the same course of treatment towards the chiefs and all other natives, that I pursued.\* He arrived a day or two after us, and sailed again some days ago.

"In return for wood, water, hogs, cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, &c., we have given cotton cloths, both plain and coloured, axes, knives, chissels, files, and other useful tools; also combs, tobacco, and old clothes.

"I am aware of only a few instances of dishonesty or theft, and these occurred principally among the Taipiis.

"Although our reception and treatment have been apparently most cordial, yet I recommend vigilance and circumspection, and not too ready a confidence in the natives.\*

"A very decent, well-behaved, man, called William Morrison, who is thoroughly acquainted with the language of the Island, has been of very essential service in my intercourse. He is here collecting sandal-wood.

"Haapè is the principal proprietor and chief of the bay of Taiohae; he is also regent, and the guardian of the orphan-boy Moana, who is by inheritance the rightful king or high chief of the whole island; and will be so acknowledged, I presume, when he attains manhood.

"W. C. B. FINCH

"Nukuhira, August 11th, 1829."

## SUMMARY OF THE CRUISE.

BY CAPTAIN FINCH.

"In the fulfilment of my orders, I pursued the route most familiar to commerce since the days of the earliest navigators: of course, nothing original has been elicited by it, in a geographical point. I was not on a voyage of discovery; my instructions were specific; and the unlooked-for extension of an already long

\* As a precautionary measure of security, I required the presence of a high chief on board ship while free intercourse was taking place with the shore.

cruise forbade delays at any place where I might touch, or any deviation in attaining the respective goals appointed at the quickest period, both in regard to the apposite season for the respective passages, and good faith and observance of the renewed terms of engagement with the ship's company. Yet, professionally, the result is, a confirmation in part of the remarks and information communicated by Captain Jones, of the *Pearock*, in so much that our tracks were similar; and the independent ascertainment (almost to a certainty) of the non-existence of Caroline Island,\* (northward of the society cluster,) in the situation assigned to it upon Arrowsmith's chart of 1798; and of two other nameless ones, in east longitude, (supposed recent discoveries,) immediately to the westward of the Sandwich group, which are important facts. Had they existed as described, the *Vincennes* must have met them, for she literally passed over the space which is allotted to their occupancy. So, further onward, in the Indian Ocean, she ran for, and passed within a short distance of a supposed shoal, mentioned as having been seen from the ship *Suffolk*, in 1827.

"These islands and shoals, (it is to be remarked,) are stated as being in the way in which a vessel has unavoidably to go, in performing the circuit which the *Vincennes* has accomplished; and alone furnish, (separate from other considerations,) an almost sufficient inducement for our government to fit out an expedition for the exclusive determination of doubtful islands, in the routes pursued by our numerous and enterprising merchants and traders. If islands exist, there may be also reefs, shoals, and breakers. The removal of uncertainty on these heads would relieve navigators from some solicitude which, under the most favouring circumstances, is already suffi-

\* It is not meant to be implied, that there is no such island as the *Caroline*. I believe that the United States' schooner *Dolphin* touched at it. The conclusion only is, that it is laid down erroneously on the charts.

ently great ; and would also facilitate the voyages in which they might be engaged. The presumed existence of a spot of land in one's route, produces a perplexing circumspection, which often causes a deviation from a direct path, reduction of canvass, rate of sailing, loss of favourable winds, exhaustion of supplies, discontent, and probable disappointment in a market, &c.

“The Vincennes voyage will serve to correct a very general and common error, that it is an easy one to a vessel, and of a duration to be computed with precision. Neither is the fact. None is more trying to a ship's hull, qualities, rigging, and spars ; and only such vessel as is most perfect ought to undertake it. The winds are not to be relied upon with any confidence, either as to the actual points whence they may blow, when or where to be met with, or as to their strength and continuance. In this opinion my diary bears me out fully. We may have been unfortunate in the season, (however, old sailors at Oahu said it was the best,) for truly I never saw rougher seas or stronger blows, any where, than we frequently met to the westward of the Ladrone Islands, in the northern part of the Chinese Sea, to the westward of Java-Head, and near the banks of Agulhas. If the weather had been of freezing temperature, the ship could scarcely have been managed.

“The opportunity which has been enjoyed by the officers, of personal acquaintance with places, inspection of coasts and ports, and the knowledge acquired as to the stores, supplies, and refreshments to be obtained, are considerations of weight, and, in the event of war, or other enterprises, may avail the nation greatly. Another result is, the demonstration of the practicability of preserving, for a very long period of confinement at sea, a crowded crew, in an accustomed state of health.

“If another vessel should return home from the western coast of America, by the way of the Islands



in the Pacific\* ocean, (a frigate ought not to be ordered; because the islands, except Oahu, do not afford proper harbours and shelter; and there the water is too shoal for a frigate,) it will be useful to allow her more time, and to start sooner, say in April than the Vincennes. It might prove beneficial also to give her a latitude for observation, so as to pass over those routes of trade which are adopted, when the regular season by the established channels has been forfeited; I mean what is termed the Eastern passage to and from China and India, and the various straits conducting to these countries. For this purpose, however, a ship ought to be more especially found and furnished in all particulars than the Vincennes was; which vessel was adapted for the purposes of a stationary cruiser only; that is, her operations were originally expected to be confined to a limited extent of a well-known coast. That the Vincennes has seen nothing remarkable, is to be attributed to the fact, that there now remains in her route nothing wonderful to be seen; but the field is yet open for the confirmation or refutation of what has already been declared to have been seen or met with. The good effects of the tour, in other respects, can be best deduced, and will at once exhibit themselves, from the various reports which I have made, and the communications of other persons which accompany my statements and remarks.

“Respectfully submitted.

“W. C. B. FINCH.

“The Hon. the Secretary of the Navy.”

“*At Sea, May 20, 1839.*”

\* Pacific is certainly a misnomer.

THE END.



















